9004 h 25

A VIEW OF UNIVERSAL *MODERN* HISTORY.

BRITISH MUSEUM

A

VIEW

OF

UNIVERSAL

MODERN

HISTORY,

FROM THE FALL

OF THE

ROMAN EMPIRE.

IN THREE VOLUMES.

VOL. I.

Tranſlated from the laſt Edition of the celebrated

CHEVALIER MEHEGAN,

By H. FOX.

Rerum cognoſcere cauſas. VIRGIL.

LONDON:

Printed for HOOPER and DAVIS, No. 25, Ludgate-Hill,
and G. ROBINSON, Pater-Noſter Row.

M DCC LXXVIII.

BRITISH MUSEUM

ADVERTISEMENT.

A View of Modern Hiſtory is here preſented to the Reader, from the French of the late celebrated Chevalier de Mehegan. The original is univerſally admired. Men of the moſt diſtinguiſhed reputation for taſte and erudition in France, have united with the public voice in extolling it as a judicious performance, replete with inſtruction and entertainment.

A tribute ſo honourable to the merits of the Author is the beſt reaſon that can be aſſigned for introducing him in an Engliſh dreſs. I hope I have been happy enough to tranfuſe all his ſpirit and excellencies into our language, and therefore flatter myſelf that he will be received with equal reſpect by my countrymen: I have ſtudied him with careful attention and exerted my beſt efforts in order to do all the juſtice poſſible to his reputation. With what ſucceſs my labour has been employed it is not my province to determine. This muſt be left to the deciſion of the Public, to whom it properly belongs. I believe, however, I may venture to pronouce, without any

danger

danger of being taxed with vanity, that I have no where miſtaken the meaning of the Author; and from the advantages derived from the ſuperior energy of our language over the French, I am alſo encouraged to think that the beauties of his narrative, and thoſe juſt and maſterly ſtrokes he has diſplayed in delineating characters, are not loſt or disfigured in the tranſlation.

In fine, the rich variety of important matters compriſed within the narrow compaſs of thoſe volumes, though of itſelf ſufficient to have leſſened my apprehenſions for their fate with the Public, yet this, I aſſure my Readers, has not betrayed me into any negligence in the proſecution of the work; on the contrary, my utmoſt care has not been wanting to make it an object every way worthy of their approbation.

BRITISH MUSEUM 7 DEC 85

PRE-

PREFACE.

HISTORY is a faithful narrative of facts, the knowledge of which is beneficial to mankind. I conſider, as beneficial to mankind, every event that contributes to make known true religion, helps to expoſe what is falſe, lays open the ſprings of governments, and affords the beſt information relative to their peace and glory; that, by expounding the laws, influences the happineſs of ſociety, furniſhes models of exemplary conduct, promotes the cauſe of virtue, tends to the advancement of arts and ſciences, and, by enlarging our ideas and knowledge, increaſes our happineſs. It is unneceſſary to enter into the merits of this ſcience, it is an inexhauſtible fund to which the human mind goes in ſearch of knowledge and its ſeveral duties. One of the moſt diſtinctive characters is, that let us turn to any part and we ſhall find a rich ſource of pleaſure and inſtruction. But if particular hiſtories afford ſuch precious fruits, what muſt be the advantages accruing from general hiſtories? The former give us the picture of one century, one nation, or one illuſtrious individual; the latter paints all ages, all nations, all mankind. What an intereſting object muſt it be, to behold men in their firſt ſolitary and

divided ſtate, thence gradually approaching to familiar intercourſe by the mutual ties of pleaſure and neceſſity! To ſee ſocieties extend and grow up into conſiderable ſtates, empires riſe, flouriſh, deſtroy the neighbouring governments; and, after having reached the ſummit of power and greatneſs, and threatened deſtruction to one half of the world, ſink into ruin, in order to riſe again in a variety of ſtates, which, in their turn, blaze a while and then are extinguiſhed! Through thoſe numberleſs revolutions and perpetual convulſions which ſtrike the ſpectator's eyes, the ſtateſman examines the ſeveral ſprings of governments, their imperfections and advantages, their powers and weakneſs; he inveſtigates the progreſs of empires, the principles by which they were raiſed, and the remote cauſes of their declenſion and fall. The legiſlator conſiders the infinite variety of laws which are preſented to his view, the motives that introduced them, and the advantages and misfortunes which they produced; the good man cheriſhes and ſtrengthens his mind by the bright examples ſet before him; he ſees virtue rewarded in the glory and honour with which poſterity crowns the innocent who had languiſhed in miſery, and ſuffered the puniſhment due only to vice; he ſees vice puniſhed in the infamy with which the name of every tyrant is branded. The ſcholar and artiſt follow the footſteps of genius, trace her efforts and diſcoveries, her errors and progreſs, the reaſon why arts flouriſhed in one country and deſerted others. But the philoſopher in this proſpect finds an advantage ſtill more eſtimable and univerſal,

univerſal. In whatſoever ſphere of life we are placed, nothing is more neceſſary than a happy judgment: it is this ineſtimable bleſſing which alone enables us to diſcern the genuine face of truth among the many deluſive images of fiction. The citizen, who reads only the hiſtory of his own times or nation, is too apt to imagine that the ſentiments which he ſees adopted there, are alone juſt and rational: he is blind to the cauſes that conſpire to ſtrengthen this illuſion; ſelf-love, prejudice in favour of his country and the age he lives in, the numberleſs teſtimonies which flatter and approve public opinions, habit, and cuſtom, all, in ſhort, perſuade him that the manners and notions of the corner of the world where he reſides, muſt prevail every where, and have been reſpectable in all ages. General hiſtory, by laying open a view of every age and country, ſhews objects in a very different light; it unfolds a multitude of fictions, which time has at length expoſed; it exhibits the moſt abſurd fables that had been reſpected as truths by the wiſeſt nations; it ſhews him ſentiments more rational and ſublime, more worthy of faith and credit, which, after long flouriſhing in one part of the world, at length are buried in contempt and ſilence; it diſplays the human mind plunging from one error into another; and, by ſhewing illuſion ever marching cloſe to the ſide of reaſon, it teaches us to miſtruſt our own faculties: hence ariſes a modeſt diffidence, which directs us to a ſtrict enquiry into the prejudices we received at our birth. It is by this clear light that a rational being diſcovers the vanity of thoſe

abſurd fictions of which he has been the dupe; and, by ſhaking off thoſe falſe acquiſitions, he attaches himſelf to a ſmall number of truths, which he ſees floating on the wide ocean of error and illuſion.

In order to conſtitute a hiſtory truly univerſal, it is not ſufficient to include all ages and nations; the views and deſign ſhould be alſo general: it becomes a particular hiſtory, when the writer directs the events to any favourite object, and endeavours to employ them in ſupport of ſome particular ſyſtem. The abridgment of Monſ. Boſſuet is a maſter-piece for genius and ſtyle; the power and majeſty by which eloquence is diſtinguiſhed, were never more forcibly diſplayed. It is the brighteſt monument that the hand of man has raiſed to the honour of religion, and it is in this particular point of view we are to conſider that immortal work. To this object that illuſtrious writer refers and directs all his views. Every thing diſcovers this to have been his deſign; the nature of the plan, the arrangement and order of facts, and the choice of epochas that relate to the ſublime myſteries, extracted out of ſacred writ. Moſt of our hiſtorians, from a blind admiration of this great man, have thought it a duty to become the ſervile followers of the path he had traced out. Hence this purſuit, which was excellent in the original, proved defective in the copies; and hence thoſe epochas, ſo much admired in the writings of the biſhop of Meaux, are imperfect in thoſe who followed him, becauſe

becauſe they are not ſufficiently connected with univerſal hiſtory, which thoſe authors attempted. The vocation of Abraham, the retreat out of Egypt, and Solomon's temple, are the groundwork of the annals of the Jews; that is, of a people the moſt inconſiderable and leaſt known of any upon earth. But what relation had thoſe facts, in their days, to univerſal hiſtory? Of what influence were they at the time on the reſt of the world? When general hiſtory is really our object, we ſhould adduce epochas that properly relate to it; we ſhould direct our reſearches to thoſe particular events that are eminently connected with cotemporary tranſactions, and which have been the origin of many others. Such is the foundation of an empire that afterwards riſes to ſuperior power and dominion; ſuch the ſubvertion and fall of a throne, out of the ruins of which many other ſtates are produced; ſuch likewiſe is an important change in the manners and improvements of a conſiderable part of the globe, or the life of an extraordinary man, who, by his genius and talents, may have enlightened or altered the ſyſtem of one half of the world.

This is the plan we propoſe to follow in our curſory view of modern hiſtory. We date the commencement from the fall of the empire in the weſt: modern hiſtory ſhould in fact commence with the foundation of thoſe thrones which now give laws to the world, and conſequently at the deſtruction of an empire out of the ruins of which thoſe very thrones have been raiſed. This event happened in the year 476 of the vulgar era; from

that time to the peace of Weſtphalia is nearly twelve centuries; and this is the extent of our views and enquiries.

It muſt appear obvious at firſt ſight, that it would be more eaſy to follow the beaten track of ſo many writers who have paſſed on from century to century in regular progreſſion. But from this method an inconveniency would ariſe, to leſſen the advantages that this ſtudy might otherwiſe produce. One of the moſt eſſential of theſe is, to form to ourſelves a clear and diſtinct idea of the ſeveral periods, by means of which we may perceive, without confuſion, the different viciſſitudes of empires, of governments and human knowlege. The cauſes however of theſe viciſſitudes, are far from beginning with the centuries: it appears preferable therefore to form epochas of thoſe great events which have changed a part of the world, and have been the ſources of almoſt all the other changes that immediately followed them. The epochas, as we preſent them to the reader, form as it were ſo many pictures diſtinct from each other. We diſtinguiſh each epocha with the name of ſome celebrated perſon who appeared at the time, and the principal events that happened in the courſe of the ſame epocha.

In exhibiting a long ſucceſſion of ages to our readers, we mean to purſue the following method.

First, At the beginning of each epocha, we ſhall give a picture of the ſtate of the world; that is, we ſhall deſcribe the ſituation of the ſeveral great powers that then appeared, the extent of their territories, in what degree of conſideration they

they were held, and the parts they then acted on the theatre of the univerſe. Nothing can be more uſeful than ſuch pictures when accurately drawn; they are a ſort of preface and explanation, which enable us to form a better idea of the ſcenes that are to be repreſented to our view; beſides, by connecting them, we have the pleaſure to ſee, at one glance, the great changes which ambition has produced in the world.

SECONDLY, We ſhall take a ſlight view of the intereſting events that have happened in the courſe of the epocha, and of the characters of thoſe princes who have been the moſt diſtinguiſhed during the ſame period. Our remarks upon nations will be more or leſs extenſive, in proportion as the objects we meet with ſeem to merit attention. We ſhall take little notice of thoſe powers, however conſiderable, that preſent us with no events but what are common: but the weakeſt ſtate, when it affords objects that are intereſting and important, ſhall be minutely conſidered. The deſign of this work being to exhibit the moſt ſtriking paſſages of hiſtory, we ſhall ſelect them indifferently, without any partial regard to perſons or countries.

IN the order we mean to follow, we ſhall be guided by the degree of power and elevation which the empires may have attained, and by their mutual connections. Thus we ſhall always begin with that which happens to be the ruling power in the firſt years of the epocha; and ſhall then proceed with the other powers, in proportion to their connections with the firſt.

When two nations are ſo cloſely connected as to make their hiſtory in a manner common, we ſhall not heſitate to blend the events of both together; but where they appear to have no ſuch connection, we ſhall give them ſeparately, taking care at the ſame time to avoid any repetition. It would have been eaſy to have confounded all the annals of the ſame century, to have introduced the heroes of different nations together, to have hurried the reader in a moment from the Jordain to the Tybre, and from the Tagus to the banks of the Indus. This was the method purſued by the celebrated Boſſuet. It is capable of affording much pleaſure and entertainment, from the variety which it diſplays; but the inevitable confuſion that ariſes from ſuch a method, ſufficiently evinces how injurious it muſt be to inſtruction.

As the hiſtory of Europe is the principal object of this work, we ſhall take no farther notice of the other parts of the world, but as we find their affairs connected with the former. China, Japan, Great Tartary and India, whoſe hiſtory is entirely ſecluded from that of the Weſt, ſhall appear only in the back-ground of our piece.

We ſhall but ſlightly touch on the two firſt epochas, as they have been traced out by the biſhop of Meaux. The origin of Mahometiſm however, to which that great man has paid too little attention, ſhall be more fully conſidered. The epochas of Charlemagne and Otho, which offer nothing but barbarous times, we ſhall not dwell upon. When we come to the cruſades, or holy wars, we ſhall enter into a more extenſive detail;

detail; gradually enlarging the narrative as we approach nearer to our own times, and as the revival of learning ſhall make the ſubject more intereſting to the reader.

After a relation of facts, we ſhall, in ſome ſort, turn our eyes back and reſume the ſubject. We ſhall examine the religions that may have reigned, the ſects by which they were divided, the doctrines they taught, and the good or evil they have produced.

We ſhall recapitulate the revolutions that have ſubverted empires, enquire into the cauſes of ſuch calamities, and endeavour to inveſtigate thoſe hidden principles which, operating inſenſibly but continually in ſtates, at length produce ſuch dreadful revolutions.

We ſhall purſue thoſe changes that have happened in governments; that is, the different forms which the conſtitution of a people may have aſſumed; and point out the ſecret ſprings by which a nation ſhall have paſſed from anarchy to oppreſſion, from oppreſſion to freedom, and from liberty to ſlavery again.

Legislation, ſo eſſential to the happineſs of ſociety, ſhall be one of the principal ſubjects of our reflections. The morals of mankind, which depend ſo much on the laws, ſhall be conſidered with equal attention; to thoſe we ſhall add the cuſtoms which are cloſely connected with them; but we ſhall confine our remarks to thoſe that may lead to the knowlege of the human mind. Objects of faſhion, or caprice, ſuch as ceremonies,

dreſs and manners, are not directly included in the plan of our work.

We ſhall deſcribe the progreſs of commerce, that evident and important reſource for the proſperity of ſtates; we ſhall mention thoſe people with whom it was moſt extenſive, the countries in which it was carried on, and the products that were the objects of their traffic; at the ſame time we ſhall obſerve the ſucceſs of navigation which commerce never fails to produce.

We ſhall take little notice of the great number of annaliſts, who have tranſmitted the events of their times in barbarous terms; but our utmoſt efforts ſhall be exerted to catch the ſtyle and manner of thoſe hiſtorians, who have found means to engage us by the double ties of intereſt and pleaſure: we ſhall not neglect to point out the circumſtances in which they have lived, and conſequently to obſerve, what degree of confidence may be due to their writings.

In purſuing the courſe of events, we ſhall regularly follow the line of human knowlege with rigorous exactneſs. When any traces of the ſciences appear in ages of ignorance, we ſhall deſcribe them as clearly as the obſcurity of the times will allow; we ſhall obſerve the moment of their return in happier times, and carefully mark the gradations by which they have riſen to their preſent flouriſhing ſtate.

It would be inexcuſable to omit the fine arts: thoſe arts, ſo uſeful in giving a poliſh, a delicacy and ſoftneſs to our manners, and ſo happily calculated to procure us innocent pleaſures. We

cannot

cannot forget eloquence, the brighteſt of all; that adorns truth with thoſe graces of imagination which ſo often ſecures her triumphs; poetry, that ſooths the mind under the afflictions of this world by creating an imaginary one; ſculpture, which retraces the image and form of heroes; painting, that makes the canvas, in a manner, breath their ſentiments and greatneſs of ſoul; or architecture, that aſtoniſhes and captivates the eye by the boldneſs or regularity of her works: all the arts therefore ſhall be conſidered as to the cauſes of their decline and revival, followed in the ſources of their progreſs, and inveſtigated with reſpect to the principles of their glory.

THUS we ſhall endeavour to form a ſucceſſion of views of ſmall extent, but where every thing ſhall be animated, either by intereſting facts or uſeful reflections.

PLAN OF THE WORK.

MODERN Hiſtory cannot have a more proper origin than that of almoſt all modern kingdoms: it ſhould therefore commence at the fall of the empire of the weſt, out of the ruins of which they have been formed. We divide it into ten epochas:

1. Clovis: the foundation of the modern kingdoms of the weſt	Begins Anno 476 of Chriſt.
2. Mahomet: origin of the empires of the eaſt	622

3. Char-

3. Charlemagne: empire of the weſt revived by the French. Age of ignorance and ſuperſtition	Begins Anno 800 of Chriſt.
4. Otho the Great. The empire paſſes into the hands of the Germans. Extinction of all learning in the weſt	936
5. Godfrey of Bouillon, or the Holy Wars: the revival of laws	1095
6. Rodolph of Hapsbourg: the revival of the fine arts in Italy	1273
7. Chriſtopher Columbus: the revival of all learning in the weſt	1492
8. The peace of Weſtphalia. The glory France under Lewis the Great	1648
9. The treaty of Ritſwick. The elevation of Ruſſia under Peter the Great	1697
10. The death of Charles VI. The empire paſſing into the houſe of Loraine by the extinction of the houſe of Auſtria	1740
Concluſion. The affairs of Europe to	1774

The firſt epocha comprehends one hundred and fifty-ſix years. It exhibits the eſtabliſhments of the greater part of modern ſtates, which ſtill preſerve to our times the names of thoſe who founded them. Thus we ſee, in the courſe of this epocha, the Anglo-Saxons wreſting Great Britain out of the hands of the Romans, and her ancient poſſeſſors,

poſſeſſors, and forming that heptarchy which, being united, compoſed the Engliſh monarchy. In Spain, the Viſigoths erected that throne which, for many ages, performed ſo conſiderable a part in Europe; and, after being cruſhed by a foreign power, was again re-eſtabliſhed by efforts of the moſt heroic valour. The Oſtrogoths in Italy, gave birth to that dominion which was ſo ſplendid, and of ſuch ſhort duration: in Germany, the Alains or Germans, were diſtinguiſhed and began to give their name to a part of that extenſive country. In Gaul, the Burgundians eſtabliſhed a power that was formidable; and, even after their fall, ſtill preſerved the honour of giving a new appellation to the provinces ſituate between the Seine and the Rhone. The Franks, in fine, founded that powerful monarchy which ſtill continues one of the moſt conſiderable in the world. We have diſtinguiſhed this epocha by the name of Clovis, in preference to others; becauſe, independent of the great qualities of that prince, the kingdom which he founded has conſtantly performed the moſt conſiderable part; and the Franks, whoſe chief he was, were the only people, among thoſe who deſtroyed the empire, that have preſerved their throne, without interruption, to the preſent times.

The ſecond epocha contains the ſpace of one hundred and ſixty-eight years. It preſents one of the moſt celebrated events that we meet with in the annals of the world. A people till then in obſcurity, the inhabitants of a dry and barren ſoil, without diſcipline or art, ſuddenly abandon their deſerts, conquer in a few years one half of

Aſia,

Aſia, the coaſts of Africa, a part of Europe, threaten to attack the whole world, and, by a double conqueſt, ſubject the minds of men to a new religion and laws, while they made ſtates bow their necks to a new yoke. If the empire founded by this people met with irreparable ſhocks; from her ruins, however, the greater part of the monarchies of the eaſt take their riſe; her doctrine, ſtill unſhaken by ſo many changes, triumphs over the conquerors, and is eſtabliſhed on the thrones of new maſters. This event, which changed the face of one half of the globe, was neceſſarily conſpicuous; and thoſe times could not be more properly diſtinguiſhed than by the name of the aſtoniſhing man, by whoſe genius alone thoſe great revolutions were effected.

The third epocha includes one hundred and thirty-ſix years. It ſhews Europe nearly in the ſame ſituation it was under the laſt Roman emperors; that is to ſay, almoſt entirely united under one man; and the name of empire renewed by one of the deſcendants of its moſt formidable deſtroyers. Charlemagne, the author of this revolution, the greateſt prince, the moſt powerful and moſt enlightened then known in the weſt, merited the honour of having his name prefixed to this period.

The fourth epocha deſcribes the ſpace of one hundred and ſixty-four years. The empire of Germany enjoyed a pre-eminence ſo exalted, and had ſuch an important influence over all the powers of Europe, that the period of her elevation deſerved a place in the liſt of epochas. The conſpicuous

ſpicuous characters of this as well as the next preceding epocha, are the moſt barbarous ignorance, and the triumphs of ſuperſtition, triumphs derived from the night of darkneſs, with which the neglect and extinction of all ſcience overſpread the minds of mankind. Otho the Great was then the hero of Europe, and deſerved the firſt place in his days.

The fifth epocha comprehends the ſpace of two hundred and ſeventy-three years. The cruſades, thoſe holy wars excited by religion, are the events that diſtinguiſh this period. Laws were then revived in the very midſt of ignorance and barbarity, by the recovery of the Roman code, and inſpired Europe with the hopes of happier times. Godfrey of Bouillon was not the greateſt man that then appeared; but we have made choice of his name, becauſe he has been always conſidered as the leader in the firſt of thoſe holy expeditions.

The ſixth epocha comprehends two hundred and nineteen years. It exhibits a moſt important event to the eyes of mankind, in the revival of all the fine arts, which, after having ſuffered ſo long an eclipſe in the weſt, beamed forth again under the auſpices of the family of the Medicis, and the protection of the popes. Italy had therefore the honour of firſt diſplaying them to Europe, and thence they ſpread their light over all the neighbouring kingdoms. We have diſtinguiſhed this glorious period with the name of Rodolph, becauſe the election of that prince was immediately followed by a decreaſe of the exorbitant

power

power of the popes, and that his wiſdom procured ſome tranquility to Germany, after three entire centuries of confuſion and ſlaughter; and finally becauſe he was the firſt who raiſed the houſe of Auſtria to any conſiderable degree, the power of which continually increaſing, at length became ſo formidable as to make Europe tremble for her liberties.

THE ſeventh epocha contains the ſpace of one hundred and fifty-ſix years; it is perhaps the moſt ſplendid of all. It was at this period every part of Europe appeared embelliſhed with the works of the fine arts, all the ſciences were explored, the moſt ſublime diſcoveries made and furniſhed mankind with lights till then unknown; ſuperſtition was ſeen flying before the bright rays of philoſophy; a new world was opened to the eyes of navigators, and greatly extended the circle of our poſſeſſions and knowlege. No age was ever more fertile in great men, great kings, able miniſters, intrepid commanders, and ſublime artiſts appeared, at the ſame time, in thoſe happy days. We have preferred Chriſtopher Columbus to them all, becauſe the diſcovery of a new hemiſphere, that had remained ſo long unknown, appeared to us the moſt glorious that ever had been made: beſides, this event produced the greateſt revolutions in both the politic and learned world; and a man, who by the mere efforts of genius, diſcovered a ſecond world, appeared preferable to thoſe who had governed or adorned ſome parts of the firſt,

THE

THE eighth epocha includes the term of forty-nine years. France ſhining at this time by the double glory of arts and arms; triumphant by land, formidable by ſea, enriched by commerce, manufactures, and talents; her dominions increaſed one third, giving laws to Europe, and reſpected throughout the world; is doubtleſs the moſt ſtriking object that appeared at this period. Lewis *the Great*, who was the ſoul of this ſuperiority by his profound knowlege of men, by his ſagacity in properly employing their talents, by his paſſion for glory and greatneſs of ſoul, deſerved the honour of having his name placed at the beginning of this epocha. We date the commencement from the peace of Weſtphalia, becauſe that famous treaty produced the greateſt changes in Europe by fixing the ſtate of the Germanic body, leſſening the power of the houſe of Auſtria, and agrandiſing France, which began then to be the ruling power.

THE ninth epocha contains forty-three years. Among a variety of celebrated events which it exhibits, the moſt remarkable is the happy revolution effected in Ruſſia; that, from an obſcure ſtate, it ſuddenly became one of the moſt improved and powerful empires in the world. This was the work of Peter I, one of the greateſt ſovereigns that ever reigned. This prince, ſenſible of his own ignorance, had the greatneſs of ſoul to avow it, and reſolution to leave his throne and travel over Europe in ſearch of manners and inſtruction. At his return to his country he gave it a new exiſtence; he created armies, fleets, cities, arts, commerce and laws; he learned, from his very

defeats,

defeats, to overcome the moſt experienced captain in Europe; like another Brutus, he ſacrificed his own ſon to the glory of the empire; he obtained, in fine, the title of emperor from the world, and compelled Germany to ſhare with him the honour of the Roman eagles. It will be readily allowed that the name of this aſtoniſhing man was worthy to be fixed at the head of the age in which he lived. We have ſelected the time of the treaty of Ritzwick, becauſe that treaty gave almoſt a general peace to Europe, terminated the proſperity of Lewis, and was the ſame year in which Ruſſia ſaw her hero, without a rival, poſſeſs the reins of empire.

The tenth epocha continued twenty-four years. It is diſtinguiſhed by an important event, the extinction of an auguſt family, which, after having performed a moſt ſplendid part in the world, held ſo many ſcepters, and threatened univerſal monarchy, expired in Germany, forty years after it had been extinguiſhed in Spain. This event was ſucceeded by the moſt bloody and general wars in Europe, became the ſource of a total change in the power of ſtates and their political ſyſtem; the influence of which change ſtill obviouſly prevails in all our preſent affairs of ſtate.

BRITISH MUSEUM 7 DR 85

VIEW
OF
Modern Univerſal Hiſtory.

FIRST EPOCHA.

CLOVIS.

The Foundation of the Empire in the Weſt.

From the Year 476 to 622 of J. C.

THE Roman empire had been lately deſtroyed in the weſt: obſcure nations ruſhing from the extremities of the north had at length thrown down that coloſſus, and ſhared in its ruins. Africa had ſubmitted to the yoke of the Vandals, who were laden with the recent ſpoils of the capital of the univerſe. Spain was enſlaved by the Viſigoths; Great Britain was ravaged on the north by the Scots and Picts, while the Saxons and Britons contended for and laid waſte the ſouthern diſtricts. State of the weſt.

THE Gauls were become a prey to five different nations: Siagrius was ſettled in the northern extremities, where he endeavoured to ſupport a vain image of the majeſty of Rome. The people of Britanny, who poſſeſſed all the country that lay between the Seine, the Loire, and the ocean, attempted to maintain an independent ſovereignty.

The Burgundians had formed a powerful kingdom extending from the ſource of the Saone, to the mouth of the Rhone. The Viſigoths, who had lately ſubjected the countries, ſituate between the Pyrenean mountains and the Loire, were preparing for new acquiſitions. The Franks were maſters of the courſe of the Scheld, and, under the command of their king Childeric, had puſhed their conqueſts as far as the Somme, whence they threatened to invade the rich provinces that lay contiguous. Rome was fallen under the yoke of the Heruli, a people from the neighbourhood of the Palus Mæotis, ſcarce known even among the Barbarians, and Odoacer their king, who, according to Ennodius, was meanly born, and only a private man in the guards of the Emperor Auguſtulus, diſdained to wear the purple of which he had ſtripped the Cæſars. The reſt of Italy, enſlaved by twenty different nations, was the victim of their rage, or the ſport of their caprice.

The iſlands of the Mediterranean, all Greece, Egypt, and the weſtern provinces of Aſia, compoſed the empire of the eaſt. It groaned under the tyranny of Zeno, who, after uſurping the ſcepter of his ſon, being driven out for his crimes, and reſtored by a faction, aſcended the throne again with all the littleneſs of ſuperſtition, and all the ſcandal of debauchery. The Arabs on the ſouth, the Perſians towards the eaſt, and a ſwarm of Tartars under different appellations, attacked and rent that vaſt but feeble body.

Perſia, notwithſtanding her agitation and diſcord, ſtill preſented a formidable monarchy that extended

extended from the Euphrates to the Indus, and from mount Caucaſus to the Aſiatic ſeas. Her princes, who were eternal enemies to the Greeks, continually laid waſte the frontiers of the empire, while they were obliged to defend themſelves againſt the northern parts of the continent, whence ſwarms of warriors ruſhed forth, and ſubverted the univerſe. Zeno, a prince of Iſauria, who was a moſt lewd and debauched man, married Ariadne, daughter of the Emperor Leo: he beheld with indifference the empire of the weſt ſinking into ruins on every ſide; though entirely taken up with avenging his own particular wrongs, or regulating the moſt obſcure points of religion; he was however fortunate enough, notwithſtanding his vices, to maintain himſelf on the throne which ſeveral virtuous princes had dyed with their blood. Anaſtaſius, whom the criminal paſſion of the empreſs had raiſed to the crown, knew no other way to attack the Perſians, but by opening the treaſures of the ſtate to them; or to ſtop the impetuoſity of the Barbarians, than by confirming their conqueſts, and flattering them with vain honours: but more happy in the internal adminiſtration of affairs, he corrected abuſes, made wiſe laws, aboliſhed the venality of offices and places, and diſplayed ſome virtues which all the efforts of ſacerdotal enmity could not entirely darken. Juſtin I. who was born in the loweſt ſtation, and raiſed to the firſt dignities by his merit, ſhewed he was worthy of the ſcepter confered on him by the voice of the public. By the mere efforts of his natural abilities, he repaired the

Empire of Greece

faults into which ignorance ſometimes betrayed him; but the empire aſſumed a new face under his nephew and ſucceſſor Juſtinian. The Perſians were driven beyond the Tigris, the Scythians confined to the borders of the Wolga; Africa was forced out of the hands of the Vandals, and reſtored to her ancient maſters; Gilimer, their King, led in chains behind the chariot of the victor, renewed the image of the triumphs of Paulus Emilius and the Scipios. The Barbarians were ſeen flying before the Roman eagles in Italy, and that cradle of the empire was again reſtored to them. In the mean while the laws were reformed, and juriſprudence ſettled by that excellent code, which ſtill governs a part of the world. Literature flouriſhed among the Greeks; the fine arts returned to adorn the capital; and the Church of Saint Sophia erected in the midſt of the victories of that reign, eſtabliſhed to the moſt diſtant ages the taſte and magnificence of the founder. Unhappily, however, his blind complaiſance made him often lend his authority to ſupport the capricious meaſures of an unjuſt conſort: this, and the reproach of having oppreſſed his people with heavy taxes, darken the luſtre of his, otherwiſe, glorious reign. He was ſucceeded by the weak and obſcure Juſtin II, under whom Italy was a ſecond time rent from the empire. Tiberius II, who was reſpectable on account of his valour, and beloved for his juſtice, was ſcarce able to defend his people, who adored him, againſt the many enemies that attacked them. Mauritius, whom he appointed his ſucceſſor, made his reign illuſtrious by

Juſtinian's inſtitutes.

by his virtues, and odious by his avarice. He triumphed over the Perſians, but miſcarried againſt the Avari, a barbarous people that came from the banks of the Danube: his refuſal to redeem the priſoners, who were afterwards ſacrificed to the fury of the victor, having provoked the reſentment of his ſubjects, he and his children were butchered by Phocas. Phocas, after diſgracing by his baſeneſs, the throne, which his crimes had acquired, loſt it by his exceſſes and debaucheries. Heraclius, ſon of Heraclius governor of Afric, who puniſhed him, found the provinces of Aſia ravaged by the victorious Perſians: this people, the only one that had not ſubmitted to the Romans in the time of their ſplendor, was now continually inſulting them in their decline. Coſrhoes II, who reigned over them, was an hero, if valour and military talents deſerve that title. His arms had penetrated into Paleſtine; he had carried away the true croſs from Jeruſalem, with which he adorned his throne. The Greeks in vain offered him a tribute; the conqueror inſiſted on their adopting his religion. Heraclius was fired with indignation at the propoſal, reſumed all his courage and pride, and having inſpired his ſoldiers with the ſame ardour and ſpirit, advanced againſt the enemy, and obliterated the ſhame of his former ill ſucceſs by the moſt glorious victories. Coſrhoes, deſpiſed becauſe he was unfortunate, was put to death by his ſon; Perſia was made tributary, and the true croſs reſtored, which Heraclius carried back in triumph to Jeruſalem.

Italy. Italy, formerly the queen of nations, was become ſucceſſively a ſlave to each. The Heruli, who had lately annihilated her empire, made but a ſhort appearance on the ſcene; the Oſtrogoths * drove them out, and by new battles, victories, and havock, exhauſted that miſerable country. It began to recover a little under Theodoric, the king of thoſe Oſtrogoths, who being maſters of Dalmatia, Illyria, and all Italy, founded the moſt powerful kingdom of the age. Theodoric, the moſt reſpectable of all conquerors that appeared in thoſe days, ſeemed to ſtudy to make his new ſubjects forget the ſtorms and miſeries they had ſuffered. Juſt, humane, and a friend to the arts and ſciences; under the habit of a barbarian, he ſhewed the capacity of Auguſtus, and the virtues of Antoninus. Amalaſuntha, the worthy daughter of ſo illuſtrious a father, the heireſs of his power, and who, with ſimilar talents and virtues, poſſeſſed the moſt profound learning, fell by the hands of an ungrateful traitor, whom ſhe had raiſed to the throne. Hence begun the diviſions amongſt the Oſtrogoths, their bloody civil wars and weakneſs, the neceſſary conſequence of diſcord, which brought on the ruin of that victorious people. The face of affairs then changed entirely. Juſtinian ſeated on the throne of Conſtantinople, demanded a reſtoration of the rights of the empire. At this period the exploits of Beliſarius appeared; his prudence, his valour, and the Greeks triumphant every where under that great general, the dominion

* There were various nations of the Goths, diſtinguiſhed by different appellations, according to the ſituation of their country; they were all conſidered as barbarians by the Romans.

of

of the Oſtrogoths was entirely overthrown; and Vitiges, their laſt prince, who was worthy of a better fate, ſerved as an ornament to a ſecond triumph. Beliſarius. On the diſgrace of Beliſarius, whom court intrigues had removed from the command of the armies, the Goths recovered their former ſucceſſes. Totila, their chief, ravaged once more unhappy Rome; but after conquering the Romans, he was in his turn ſubdued by the eunuch Narſes, who was a great man, as well as a great warrior, and the rival of Beliſarius; and, like him too, the ſupport of the empire. Happy would it have been, if the inſult offered him by the ungrateful empreſs had not inflamed his reſentment too far, and plunged Italy again into new misfortunes! The Lombards, a people from the extremities of Germany, being called in by Narſes, expoſed the unfortunate country to calamities it never had felt before. After marking their ſteps by flames and ſlaughter, they fixed themſelves on the borders of the Po, where Alboin, their leader, founded a new kingdom, of which Milan was made the capital, and he left Ravenna alone to the Greeks, where the * exarchate was introduced.

CHILDERIC died while he was reſolving on the moſt daring projects; and Clovis his ſon, who was more ambitious ſtill, carried his deſigns and reſolutions higher. This prince, who was the real founder of the French monarchy, marched rapidly to the conqueſt of all the country belonging

France.

Clovis I, founder of the French monarchy.

* Exarchate was the authority and juriſdiction of a governor, who preſided over many provinces.

to the Gauls. He defeated the Romans near Soiſſons, the Germans at Tolbiac, the people of Britanny on the Loire, the Viſigoths at Poitiers: he murdered his relations on the Rhine, and his allies on the Maaze; he continually blended perfidy, cruelty, and every crime that could anſwer his views, with the moſt heroic valour. He ſubjected to his throne all thoſe countries which lay between the Mediterranean and the Channel, the Rhine and the ocean. To the Franks, who were the companions of his victories, he gave the title or lordſhip of the lands, but left the property or poſſeſſion to the ancient owners, and by that means he conciliated alike, the conquerors and the conquered. He entirely won the hearts of the latter, and ſomewhat ſoftened the barbarous manners of the former by his converſion to Chriſtianity. Having been overcome by Theodoric, king of Italy, he loſt ſome of his ſouthern provinces, and died, like moſt founders, admired but deteſted.

His four ſons inherited his valour, ferocity, and conqueſts. Auſtraſia, that is to ſay eaſtern gaul, of which Metz was the capital, fell to the ſhare of Thierry. Normandy, or weſtern France, was divided into three kingdoms. Clodomir had that of Orleans, Childerbert reigned at Paris, and Clotaire ſettled at Soiſſons. Thierry marched to the conqueſt of Thuringia, and having ſeduced the king of that country to a conference, under the pretext of an accommodation, ordered him to be thrown from the top of the walls of Tolbiac; and ſupporting his treachery by force of arms, ſeized upon the whole kingdom. Theodebert,

his

his ſon, was leſs cruel, but equally ambitious; he made a treaty with the Imperialiſts againſt the Lombards; with the Lombards againſt the Imperialiſts, and ſtripped both. Childebert, ſtimulated by motives of revenge on account of his ſiſter, entered the provinces belonging to the Viſigoths, ravaged the country, butchered the inhabitants, and returned back laden with an immenſe booty. Clodomir penetrated into Burgundy, marked his way by fire and ſlaughter, made the ſovereign and his ſon priſoners, kept them ſome time in ſevere captivity, concluded at length with maſſacring them, and had their bodies thrown into a well. He was afterwards killed in a ſecond expedition, and left three ſons in the moſt tender years, under the guardianſhip of Clotilda. Clotaire having forced them out of the arms of their grandmother, ſtabbed two with his own hand; the third, who with difficulty eſcaped the ſame bloody fate, ſought for ſafety in the habit of an hermit in the woods contiguous to Paris, where, under the name of St. Cloud, his memory is ſtill revered. The three brothers then quarrelled about their ſpoils, inſulted and endeavoured to circumvent each other; threw France into confuſion, and ſhocked even nature itſelf by their mutual barbarity. The extinction of the poſterity of Thierry, and the death of the king of Paris, at length left Clotaire, the youngeſt and moſt cruel of the ſons of Clovis, in poſſeſſion of that extenſive monarchy, which being encreaſed by Burgundy and Thuringia, extended from the borders of the Elbe to the ſea that waſhes Aquitaine, and

from

from the mouth of the Scheld to the ſource of the Loire. The ſtate was divided a ſecond time between the four ſons of that tyrant. Gontrand, king of Orleans, one of the weakeſt of men, is known only in our Book of Martyrs, in which he obtained a place by his liberality to the church. Charibert, of Paris, was ſunk in the moſt ſhameful debauchery. Chilperic, of Soiſſons, had all the ferocity of his father, without his courage. Sigebert, of Auſtraſia, and Thierry his ſon, made the French name reſpectable in Germany and Italy.

At this time appeared the rage and exceſſes of two women who were a ſcandal to their ſex and to all France. Fredegunda, whom the paſſion of Chilperic had raiſed from an obſcure and mean condition to the throne, aſcended it with every crime. Brunehaut, the conſort of Sigibert, diſgraced the royal blood of the Goths which flowed in her veins, by every ſpecies of enormity. The former, who diſplayed more vigour and boldneſs in her crimes, ſhewed a courage in her undertakings that would do honour to the greateſt men. In a battle ſhe was ſeen with her ſon in her arms, moving from rank to rank, to animate the troops, and by her activity and reſolution, gained the victory over an army much ſuperior to her own. The ſecond concealed her vices under the ſofteſt charms of her ſex; made herſelf immortal by uſeful works; conciliated the affections of the clergy by pious foundations, and had many panegyriſts among that body.—Poiſon, aſſaſſinations, and parricides, were the weapons with which thoſe

two

two women, or rather furies, attacked each other. Fredegunda having made herſelf miſtreſs of Normandy by the murder of her conſort, and Brunehaut become regent of Auſtraſia by the death of her grandſon, of which ſhe was ſuſpected, only increaſed the flames of diſcord. All France was in a blaze through their animoſity, and did not recover till after their death. Fredegunda died quietly after a life of continual enormities: Brunehaut expiated her crimes by a death and torments ſhocking to humanity. Clotaire II, the worthy ſon of Fredegunda, ſecured his uſurpation in Auſtraſia by the murder of all the princes of his family, and thus united that vaſt monarchy, as his grandfather had done before. The calm which appeared during his reign, was the effect of the exhauſted condition of the ſtate, and not of the ſtrength of the hand that governed it.

THIS prince was cruel and avaricious; but the favours he heaped on the church, concealed the weakneſs of his adminiſtration, in renouncing the glorious tribute which the Lombards paid to his anceſtors, and his inhuman and wanton revenge in a part of Saxony, where he butchered all the inhabitants whoſe height exceeded the length of his ſword. In this reign began the great power of the governors of the palace, who ſoon after played a moſt ſhining part.

SPAIN enjoyed ſome tranquillity under the Viſigoths. Atalphus had raiſed the throne on a ſolid foundation; he had obtained from the Cæſars the lands that lay contiguous to the Pyrenean mountains; Spain.

tains; and by ſtill appearing outwardly the friend of the emperor, whom he ſtripped, he gradually extended the limits of his dominions, by pretending to fight for the empire: being murdered by his ſubjects, in the midſt of his victories, he was ſucceeded by Sigeric, who met with a ſimilar fate. Vallia, taking advantage of the convulſed ſituation of the Gauls, advanced towards the ſouthern provinces: after getting poſſeſſion of Toulouſe, and the fertile country round that city, he made it the capital of his dominions; and more fortunate than his predeceſſors, tranſmitted his ſceptre to his ſons. His poſterity was in amity with the Romans, and equally profited by their gifts and misfortunes. At the ſame time the arms of thoſe princes penetrated into the moſt remote provinces of Spain, and their dominion, at the commencement of this epocha, extended from the pillars of Hercules to the banks of the Loire. Young Alaric, who was ſeated on this brilliant throne, ſaw the triumph of Clovis with a jealous eye. Clovis, on the other hand, more ambitious ſtill, was devouring in his mind the large poſſeſſions of Alaric. Thus the love of glory and the deſire of booty, inflaming the two rivals, they met at Poitiers, followed by all the forces of their empires. On this occaſion was fought that celebrated battle, in which the two nations diſplayed the moſt heroic valour, where the king of the Viſigoths fell by the hand of the French monarch, and a ſplendid victory opened the frontiers of the enemy to Clovis. The conqueror entered them with rapidity,

Alaric.

pidity, made every thing give way before his arms, and threatened the entire ruin of the kingdom that was now ſinking on all ſides: but Theodoric, king of Italy, ſtopped the victor, ſaved the Goths, re-eſtabliſhed the throne, on which he ſupported the family of the ancient princes. Different families afterwards alternately obtained the crown from the ſuffrages of the nation. Among thoſe monarchs, the greater part of whom were too inſignificant to merit attention, Leuvigild appeared with luſtre; he was a great conqueror as well as a great prince; he not only enlarged his dominions, but poliſhed the manners of his people, and made them happy; as a father he was unfortunate; he tarniſhed his glory, in putting Hermenegild to death, becauſe that young prince, gained over by ſome catholic prieſts, and perſecuted by the Arian miniſters, took up arms in defence of the religion which he had embraced. A great revolution afterwards enſued; Recared, brother to the unfortunate Hermenegild, inheriting his ſentiments, abjured Arianiſm, and had the good fortune to eſcape the dangers of ſuch an innovation through the glory of his reign. The throne was then taken from his family by an uſurper, and afterwards reſtored to Suintila the youngeſt of his ſons; but that prince became odious, by endeavouring to make the ſceptre hereditary, and was treacherouſly deprived of it by Siſenand: a council, gained over by the flatteries of the new king, ſolemnly depoſed the legitimate maſter, and crowned the tyrant.

England

Great Britain.

England was continually haraſſed by the wars between the Britons who defended their ancient poſſeſſions, and the Saxons who endeavoured to ſtrip them. In the preceding century, ſhe was a prey to the Picts and Scots, and in vain implored the aſſiſtance of the Romans. Obliged herſelf to avenge the havock made by the Barbarians, ſhe created kings, whoſe feeble hands ſtruggled againſt multitudes that continually roſe againſt her. Vortigern, in the midſt of the moſt preſſing dangers, being informed that an Anglo-Saxon veſſel was arrived on the coaſt, called in thoſe adventurers to his aſſiſtance; their courage anſwered his expectations. Hengiſt the Saxon, Iſt king of Kent, at their head revived the ſpirit of the Britons, drove out the Picts and Scots, ſecured the throne of Vortigern, and re-eſtabliſhed the whole ſtate: but being ſoon after reinforced by his countrymen, whom the fame of his ſucceſs had drawn over to England, he conceived the deſign of enſlaving the country he had before deſivered. He made uſe of art as well as valour, and gave a mortal ſtab to the power of the Britons. That wretched people exerted the moſt powerful efforts without effect; two heroes, whom they ſucceſſively crowned, in vain diſplayed a courage that immortaliſed their names; the obſtinate reſolution of the foreigners triumphed, and, after many battles, victory at length gave the Engliſh all the lands ſituate between Scotland and the channel. Wales alone, to which the Britons retreated, was inacceſſible to the arms of the victors, the reſt was divided into ſeven ſmall kingdoms.

Vortigern a Britiſh prince.

Hengiſt.

kingdoms. Chriſtianity was aboliſhed, and idolatry again appeared on thoſe thrones. The ſouthern part of the iſland, which took the name of the conquerors, was afterwards known by the name of England: but the heptarchy being compoſed of too feeble parts, made no figure in Europe. Germany was divided into twenty different nations. The banks of the Rhine, and the ſources of the Danube were in ſubjection to France. The Saxons governed the mouth of the Elbe. A remnant of the Vandals and Germans occupied the mouths of the Oder. The Suevi and Germans ravaged Suabia and Franconia. Auſtria and Hungary became a prey to the Huns, who inhabited that part of Aſiatic Sarmatia, which bordered on the Palus Mæotis and the Tanais, while the center, covered with immenſe foreſts, was filled with colonies of people little known, whom neceſſity drove out of their ſavage retreat from time to time. Scandinavia, the preſent Sweden, Norway, Lapland, and Finmark; and the Cherſoneſus, or Cimbrian Iſlands, now Jutland, were the nurſeries of theſe conquerors, who rent the empire. Thence iſſued thoſe ſwarms of Goths, that deſtroyed and ſubjected our Hemiſphere. But notwithſtanding thoſe adventurers, whom Sweden and Denmark armed againſt the univerſe, are ſo well known in our annals, we are however entirely in the dark, with regard to the hiſtory of thoſe nations at that remote period.

Germany.

Sweden and Denmark.

While force raiſed and overturned ſo many thrones, and made Europe a horrid theater of violence and ſlaughter, in a corner of Italy wiſdom inſenſibly laid the foundation of a republic

that

that became afterwards one of the ornaments of the world. Some unfortunate people, who inhabited the fertile banks of the Po, terrified at the ſhocking confuſion of their country, ſought a retreat againſt rage and injuſtice, in a cluſter of ſmall iſlands, ſituate at the extremity of the Adriatic ſea. There freed from every chain, returned to a ſtate of nature, without maſter, and without ſlaves, attentive alone to their real wants; they, on the ineſtimable plan of equality and humanity, founded a government, the laws of which were dictated by public utility. The Chiefs whom they freely elected, were but the truſtees of an authority, for which they were liable every moment to be called to a ſtrict account. Without pomp or pride, under the title of tribunes, they exerciſed the right of inforcing the execution of thoſe compacts, which were the bans of general felicity. Thus in the very midſt of liberty and poverty, Venice laid the foundation of that government, which has been ſo long the admiration of the world; and without deſiring or foreſeeing it, prepared that greatneſs and ſplendor which ſhe was one day to attain.

REFLECTIONS.

Origin of the people who deſtroyed the Roman empire, and the cauſe of their emigration.

In the courſe of this Epocha, we are preſented with a ſpectacle that highly merits our curioſity. A multitude of barbarians, who ruſhed forth from the north, attacked the ſouth, laid waſte and enſlaved it, overturned an empire that had ſubſiſted

ſiſted above twelve hundred years, divided its ruins among themſelves, and out of them formed powerful kingdoms, many of which actually exiſt at this hour. It is natural to enquire, whence came thoſe people, and what were the hidden cauſes that enabled the north to produce ſuch numerous and frequent emigrations.

The origin of the people is ſufficiently known: it appears evident, that they came from the northern extremities of Europe and Aſia. Scythia, at preſent known by the name of Tartary, Sarmatia now Ruſſia, Scandinavia, otherwiſe called Denmark and Sweden, and the north of Germany, comprehending Pomerania; Mecklenburg and lower Saxony, were the places that ſent forth thoſe ſavage conquerors. But how came it, that thoſe countries at preſent ſo thinly peopled, and far from attempting to ſend out the leaſt colony, were then able to furniſh ſuch powerful and frequent emigrations? This is attributed to population that is ſuppoſed to have been much greater; it muſt however have been much leſs. It has been demonſtrated, that a country where agriculture, commerce, and arts flouriſh, muſt naturally have a greater number of inhabitants; becauſe mankind increaſes in proportion to the reſources there are for their preſervation: the example of the ſavages proves this beyond contradiction: there are ſcarce a few thouſands of them to be found in immenſe and fertile countries, where millions of Europeans would live, with eaſe and comfort. The reaſon is, that hunting and fiſhing, which

are the only reſources of thoſe who are deſtitute of the advantages of commerce and agriculture, are quickly exhauſted in any country; beſides, thoſe exerciſes demand a vigour and ſtrength of conſtitution, of which many men are incapable, on account of age and infirmities, and therefore periſh for want. The people who deſtroyed the empire, were abſolutely ignorant of moſt arts; commerce was diſgraceful among them; they were ſtrangers to the method of improving lands: they revolted againſt Valens in the fourth century, for having grounds aſſigned them to cultivate. We have reaſon therefore to conclude, that the Goths, the Huns, the Alans, and almoſt all the reſt of thoſe barbarians, reſembled the preſent Tartars, who are ſtrangers to every thing but hunting, fiſhing, the care of their cattle, and war; who, having occaſion for much greater tracts of ground than people employed in tillage, continually ſhift their quarters to new countries that have not been exhauſted by flocks and cattle. But if population was leſs conſiderable, which there is ſcarce room to doubt, after thoſe reflections, how was it poſſible for thoſe countries to furniſh ſuch aſtoniſhing emigrations, which are the ſubject of our enquiries? A ſingle view of thoſe very Tartars, clears up the queſtion. Notwithſtanding their tribes are ſcattered over immenſe countries, we ſee them in ſuch neceſſity, from time to time, as to be obliged to ſend out ſwarms of young ſoldiers, who with fire and ſword enter Ruſſia, Turkey, and Perſia, in ſearch of prey to ſatisfy their wants. Their manner of life

makes

makes thoſe emigrations neceſſary; for however extenſive thoſe countries may be, and however ſmall the number of the Tartars, compared with the immenſe extent of their country, they ſtill prove too confined, becauſe they are unacquainted with agriculture and commerce, which ſupport a great number of men in a ſmall territory: they have no reſources but in the two conditions of ſhepherds and ſportſmen, and thoſe conditions require prodigious tracts, which become inſufficient as ſoon as population increaſes. Theſe were the cauſes that forced the deſtroyers of the empire to arm thoſe colonies of adventurers, who, ſtimulated by neceſſity, ſpread terror through the reſt of the world. Ever ſince thoſe countries, whence they iſſued, have known the advantage of the arts, the inhabitants, though far more numerous, finding reſources more than ſufficient for all their wants, are no longer obliged to ſeek thoſe objects in a foreign clime.

Religion. At the fall of the weſtern empire, two religions governed the world then known, Chriſtianity and Idolatry.

Chriſtianity reigned over all the provinces ſubject to the Roman Empire, and it might be conſidered as divided into two branches, that is, the Nicean faith and Arianiſm. The followers of the Nicean doctrine, looked upon J. C. as a perfect God, abſolutely equal to his father, and of the ſame divine nature, which they expreſſed by the word *conſubſtantial*; this became the term or mark of orthodoxy. Arianiſm maintained an inequality between the perſons of the Trinity; but thoſe

ſectaries did not agree. Some of them declared the *word* to be eternal, others pretended he had been created, and ſome again were ſo daring, as to pronounce that J. C. was no more than man miraculouſly conceived, endowed with every ſupernatural perfection, and given to the earth as a model of virtue and patience; this doctrine, which faith undoubtedly condemned, but the pride of human reaſon ſupported, had eloquent Apoſtles, intrepid advocates, powerful protectors, and even emperors in ſubjection. The Nicean faith had prevailed in the weſt, and there met with little contradiction; it likewiſe was eſtabliſhed in the eaſt, but found many formidable enemies. Arianiſm there aſſumed a diſguiſe, and was the more dangerous: it frequently appeared under different forms, while the ſubſtance of the doctrine was the ſame. Thus the patriarch Neſtorias, Biſhop of Conſtantinople in the Vth century, had attempted to preach openly, that J. C. was compoſed of two diſtinct perſons, the one human, and the other divine; that the latter being eternal and impaſſible, could neither be born or ſuffer; that the former alone had been formed in the womb of Mary, and exhibited that mixture of virtues and ſufferings which raiſe our admiration. This opinion had ſucceeded, numbers who admired the patriarch, gained over proſelytes to his ſentiments; ſome perſons, even belonging to the court of the emperor, were drawn over. In order to ſuppreſs this doctrine, it was thought neceſſary to employ the authority of a general council, which the prince had aſſembled at Epheſus.

But

But this remedy gave riſe to a new evil; Eutichiſm the moſt ſtupid of ſects, and the evident conſequence of the condemnation of the former, made ſome progreſs under the ſeductive appearance of auſterity. A Monk of reſpectable morals, led aſtray by a weak and ridiculous imagination, drew arguments from the deciſions of Epheſus, to confound the two natures which the church acknowledged in J. C. According to his opinion, the divinity itſelf had in ſome ſort abſorbed the humanity, became fleſh, ſuffered, and the whole Trinity together had ſhared in thoſe ſufferings. Reaſon, as well as faith, equally rejected a ſyſtem ſo abſurd; and thoſe errors having been condemned in a fifth general council, ſeemed to expire at Chalcedoine; but the deſtruction of one ſect, was quickly ſucceeded by another. Conſtantinople, ever fond of novelty, ſaw new diſputes ariſe every day among her inhabitants. The rage of dogmatiſing, was the paſſion of the times. The Emperors themſelves, who ſhould have checked this diſpoſition, by ſhewing a philoſophic contempt for thoſe diſputes, were the firſt to cheriſh and foment them. We cannot help bluſhing for Juſtinian, when we ſee that reſtorer of the empire ambitious of becoming the leader of a ſect. He invented the ſyſtem of incorruptibles, which maintained, that J. C. in becoming man, had taken only what is good and happy in our ſpecies, but that he did not ſubject himſelf to thoſe diſguſting infirmities and perpetual wants which nature impoſes.—What is very ſingular, this hereſy of an abſolute prince, met with no ſuc-

ceſs; and after making himſelf ridiculous, by being the author of it, he had the mortification to abandon it in ſpite of all his efforts.

He was more fortunate in the affair of the *three chapters*; this was the name given to three writings of Theodorus Mopmeſte, Theodoret and Ibas, Biſhops, who were venerable on account of their learning and virtues. Thoſe works treated of the opinions of Neſtorius, and contained very ſevere reflections on Cyrill, the ſworn enemy of that patriarch. They had met with the approbation of the fathers of Chalcedoine; the authors were revered by the church, and moreover they had been dead many years. Some enthuſiaſts pretended to find arguments in them that favoured two perſons in J. C. The emperor put himſelf at the head of thoſe zealots, and ſolicited the condemnation of the chapters. The prudent Vigilius, who then occupied the ſee of Rome, in vain repreſented that it would be ſcandalous to diſgrace writings that had been acknowledged by a general council; beſides, the arguments that were cenſured in them were more obſcure than reprehenſible: that the moſt diſcreet meaſure was to bury thoſe inſignificant works in ſilence and oblivion; that there would be alſo ſome indecency in condemning perſons deceaſed, who had been dear to their people while they lived, and whom the eaſt had honoured with tears and regret. The emperor was inflexible, and this trifling diſpute ſeemed to merit the trouble of aſſembling a ſixth general council, where the three chapters were condemned, and the authors ſuffered eccleſiaſtic cenſure. 'Twas

'Twas in the courſe of this epocha that the authority of the clergy was ſeen to increaſe and overleap the bounds preſcribed them. The ſhades of ignorance, which then ſpread and darkened all the weſt, aſſiſted them to confound inſenſibly the limits of both powers. Beſides, the converſion of the Barbarians had been followed by conſiderable donations, the clergy grew immenſely rich, and power and authority were the natural concomitants of opulence. Moſt of the leaders of thoſe adventurers were contaminated by criminal exceſſes, and enriched by violence and rapine; they thought themſelves happy therefore in giving part of their unjuſt ſpoils to the clergy, whom they imagined to have the power of abſolving them from their crimes. Hence aroſe that profound veneration which princes conceived for biſhops, by means of which the latter by degrees aſſumed an authority which ſoon proved fatal to their maſters. Chilperic then, barbarian as he was, and all abſolute as he affected to be, did not dare himſelf to puniſh a biſhop of Rohan who had inſulted him; he went to a council to implore the prelates againſt the criminal, and was not aſhamed to humble himſelf at their feet on this occaſion.

Eccleſiaſtics, popes, and biſhops of Conſtantinople.

The church, even in this very century, might be conſidered as divided into two monarchies, each of whom had its head. The biſhop of Rome governed the weſt: the popes had not then acquired that deſpotic influence in ſpiritual matters which they afterwards aſſumed, but their ſentence however had conſiderable weight. As the Roman clergy were the moſt learned of all the weſt, the

opinions of their head were revered as oracles. The popes, moreover, were careful to ſend miſſioners into foreign parts, who founded new churches. It was by their order that Auguſtine the monk went to preach the faith to the Anglo-Saxons; under their authority the virtuous Patrick travelled into Ireland, and there eſtabliſhed a church that afterwards became famous. It is eaſy to conceive, that thoſe apoſtles who had their miſſion from Rome, did not neglect to extol the privileges of that ſee, and to impreſs the minds of their proſelytes, with the higheſt veneration for them.

The temporal power of the popes was then far from attaining that height to which their policy afterwards raiſed it. They ſtill acknowledged themſelves ſubjects to the emperor; they even paid obedience to the exarchs, and their election required the ratification and conſent of the prince. They had, however, great influence in affairs, immenſe riches, a numerous body of eccleſiaſtics devoted to their orders, the auguſt title of ſupreme head of religion, their capacity and learning made them in ſome ſort maſters of the populace. They ſometimes diſputed the moſt abſolute will of ſovereigns, and baffled the authority of their edicts when they happened to contradict the intereſts of the people, or the privileges of their ſee. Pelagus II. made his power be felt even in Conſtantinople, and obliged that church to efface from their regiſters the names of two patriarchs whom his predeceſſors had excommunicated. The biſhop of Conſtantinople enjoyed in the eaſt

an

an authority almoſt equal in all that related to ſpiritual matters. Though this ſee was the lateſt of all the patriarchſhips, the honour however of being paſtor of the imperial city gained it the preference over all the reſt, with the privilege of being placed next the biſhop of Rome. But ambition, already diſſatisfied with the ſecond rank, aſpired to the firſt. The Greek church looked upon the precedence given to the Pope, not ſo much as a right annexed to the chair of St. Peter, as a privilege granted to the church from the capital of the empire. Rome, deſerted by the Cæſars, ravaged by barbarians, and often ſubject to their power, no longer appeared to the people of the eaſt as worthy of the ſame honour. Conſtantinople then became the queen of thoſe cities that were ſubject to the Roman eagles, and according to their ſyſtem had at leaſt an equal title to that dignity. Several patriarchs had been long endeavouring, by a variety of ſchemes, to reach that ſummit of eccleſiaſtical honours. John, the faſter, was more reſolute; he ventured to ſhew his deſigns more openly, being ſupported by princes whoſe veneration he had conciliated by a pious exterior; beloved by the monks, who were very powerful with the Greeks, on account of his continual mortifications, and adored by a people whoſe wants were relieved by his unbounded charity, he no longer heſitated, and in a council, where every thing gave way to his authority, he aſſumed the title of univerſal biſhop, which was confirmed by the unanimous approbation of the fathers. Rome in vain let looſe her thunders; John preſerved

Patriachs of Conſtantinople.

that

that mark of ſuperiority, carried it with him to the tomb, and tranſmitted it to his ſucceſſor. The authority of the patriarchs was not much leſs conſiderable in affairs of ſtate. The emperors who appointed them, frequently trembled before thoſe men who were in a manner their own creatures. Thoſe pontiffs had always a great ſhare in revolutions; the election of princes required the ſanction of their name and ſeal; and the ceremony of coronation, that was conſidered as eſſential, and which could not be performed without them, often gave them an opportunity of impoſing laws on their maſter. Macedonius refuſed to crown Anaſtaſius, until he had given him a written promiſe that he would ſupport the doctrine of the council of Chalcedoine.

Idolatry. Three kinds of idolatry ſtill exiſted; the doctrine of the Magi, the idolatry of the Perſians, and the moſt ancient of all, that had been raiſed to the throne by Zoroaſter, ſtill reigned among that people; the ſun an emblem of the Deity, and fire an emanation from the ſun, were the principal objects of veneration in that worſhip.

The idolatry of Rome, that is to ſay the mithology, had ſtill ſome followers in Italy, but they were obſcure, weak, and perſecuted: this ſyſtem had no authority in any country.

The idolatry of the Barbarians was that followed by the Germans and Goths, who conquered the weſtern empire. It is no eaſy matter to determine preciſely in what it conſiſted. A confuſed notion of the divinity made them in general adore a Supreme Being; but as ignorant men

men conceive him under forms which paſſions or wants convey, thoſe people repreſented the deity under various emblems. The Oſtiaquw of Siberia will give us ſome idea of the manner in which the Goths, who inhabited nearly the ſame countries, honoured the Author of Nature. Thoſe barbarians went to hunt, killed ſome wild beaſts, hung them round their huts, and proſtrated themſelves before them. If, after this adoration, their hunting proved ſucceſsful, they continued their worſhip; if not, they eat their deity. The different people of Germany, Saxons, Germans, and all thoſe nations included under the name of Franks, who breathed nothing but war, and made it their principal occupation, repreſented the Supreme Being under emblems that had ſome reference to the object of their inclination. Thus, over all Germany, temples were erected to Irmenſul, whom they painted under different forms, but always with the enſigns of battle. A religion ſo groſs and whimſical had but feeble ties to bind its followers. As long as thoſe people remained in their own country, they preſerved their worſhip; but when they advanced into the ſouthern parts of Europe, they ſaw civilized nations living quietly under the protection of a venerable religion; and having properly no religion of their own, being indifferent alike to all, they readily adopted that which firſt offered. Policy alſo united with conviction; the ſubjects of the empire being ſtrongly attached to chriſtianity, they would not have eaſily ſubmitted to conquerors that ſhould be enemies to their faith.

faith. Thus the religion of the weſt in leſs than a century became that of its victors.

Chriſtianity embraced by the Barbarians aſſumed two different forms: the Franks followed the doctrine of Niceus; the people of Burgundy and the Goths adhered to the opinions of Arius. The Viſigoths changed afterwards, but the Oſtrogoths perſiſted in their notions until they were deſtroyed.

Governments. Deſpotiſm reigned over Perſia, and that empire was ſhaken with all the convulſions which naturally attend that horrid ſpecies of government equally fatal to the prince and ſubject. The conſtitution of Conſtantinople, which was entirely military in its origin, was now viſibly changed. There was no appearance of thoſe triumphant armies, who, under a Probus, a Decius, or a Conſtantine, imagined they had by their victories purchaſed the right of appointing the heads of the ſtate. Humbled and oppreſſed by many misfortunes, they ſuffered the clergy, the nobles, and the people, to ſhare with themſelves the privilege of nominating the ſovereigns. The ſceptre was not however elective; it gave a right in ſome ſort hereditary; but this right was continually diſputed, and made the ſport of ſuperſtition and ambition.

Arbitrary power was abſolutely unknown among the Barbarians. Thoſe people on all occaſions appeared proud of their liberty, and preſerved to themſelves the glorious privilege of appointing, or at leaſt confirming, their maſters, whom they ſubjected to conditions that they thought beneficial

ficial to the nation, and deprived tyrants of the ſceptre which they would commit only to the hands of kings. In Spain the aſſemblies or councils depoſed or raiſed ſovereigns; thus they ſtriped Suintila of the purple, and conferred it on Siſenand. In Italy the Oſtrogoths exerciſed the right of reforming the ill effects reſulting from family ſucceſſion, or rectifying the errors of capricious elections: Amalaſuntha did not call her favourite to the throne, but with the conſent of the nobles. Kings, in fact, ſeemed hereditary in France, but it was with certain reſtrictions. It was neceſſary to raiſe them on a ſhield, or at leaſt to preſent them to the people, in order to have their conſent. As ſoon as they were ſeated on the throne, they were obliged to ſummon the Campus Martius, in order to decide upon the important affairs of ſtate. The terrible Clovis himſelf was forced to divide the ſpoils taken from the enemy with the companions of his victories; a ſoldier laid claim to a cup which the prince had intended for the biſhop Remi, and had the boldneſs to cleave it in two with his ſabre. In Auſtraſia the people deliberated about depriving Thierry of the crown, thinking, as he had not been with his brothers at the conqueſt of Burgundy, he had no right to partake in the ruins of that throne. Fredegunda being perſecuted by Childebert and thoſe victims who had groaned under her tyrannical exceſſes, found it neceſſary to have recourſe to the protections of the great; Brunehaut met with an obſtacle to her ambition in them, which all her abilities were unable to ſurmount.

We

We are to conceive the governments of thoſe barbarians, and eſpecially that of the French, to have been ariſtocratically directed by a chief to whom they gave the title of king. The body of the people conſiſting of Gauls and Romans were enſlaved, had no ſhare in the adminiſtration, and loſt the title to their lands. The victorious Franks had taken them, but deſpiſing and not underſtanding agriculture, they left them with the ancient proprietors, on condition that they would give a part of the products to the lords of the manors. Thoſe lords were all of French extraction, and conſtituted the nobility; they had a chief or head who was to execute the public decrees: thoſe decrees were formed in the aſſembly of the nation, which being held in a field at firſt in March, afterwards in May, derived its name from thoſe months, and became the ſupreme council.

Legiſlation ſhone forth with ſplendor in the eaſt; all the world is acquainted with the reformation of the code made under Juſtinian; it was a maſter-piece that would have raiſed the prince to the higheſt pitch of glory, had it not been obſcured by little views of intereſt and ſuperſtition. In the weſt were two ſorts of legiſlature; the Roman form continued to govern the ancient people, but it was daily diſfigured by ſuperſtition; holy water, the croſs, and relics, thoſe objects of veneration in ſpiritual government, were made the arbiters of temporal cauſes; and prieſts became the judges. The abſurdity of the ſyſtem of the Franks is not eaſily comprehended: all

crimes

crimes with them might be effaced by pecuniary compenſation, or juſtified by duels. An arm cut off was intitled to a certain ſum, two arms required twice as much, and death itſelf had its tax. Thus a price was ſet on the members and lives of the nobles, or elſe it was neceſſary to fight, and victory determined the guiltleſs. An article in this collection of laws and traditions, called Salic, deſerves our attention; it is that which excluded females from the ſupreme authority among the French. Many people frequently ſpend much time in tracing the origin of this law: our hiſtorians generally aſcribe it to Pharamond, but neither Pharamond introduced, nor any other prince eſtabliſhed it; it naturally aroſe from the primitive condition in which thoſe barbarians lived. Soldiers who endeavoured to obtain by the ſword an eſtabliſhment, which they could not find in their own country, and continually obliged to encamp, to plunder, and fight, wanted only a general, and could not undoubtedly have a woman at their head.—This regulation, which flowed from neceſſity, was, by time, cuſtom, and the welfare of the country, eſtabliſhed as a law, and became one of the fundamentals of the French monarchy. Legiſlation.

A ſingle view of the barbarians of thoſe times ſhews us what their manners were; ſimple, but rude and ſanguinary. Chriſtianity did but little humanize them. Clovis was ſtill more barbarous after his converſion. His ſons and grandſons, though nurtured in the very boſom of chriſtianity, were monſters, at which nature itſelf recoiled with horror. Manners.

horror. Even Theodoric himſelf, whoſe reign in general carried evident marks of true greatneſs, betrayed on ſome occaſions ſymptoms of barbarity. He put Odoacer to death, after he had given a ſolemn promiſe to that prince that he ſhould live honourably; he ſacrificed, on very trifling ſuſpicions, Symmachus and Boetius; the former had rendered important ſervices to his prince, and both were an honour to the age by their talents and virtues. The religion embraced by thoſe conquerors was revered by them in thoſe articles only that did not reſtrain their diſpoſitions. Polygamy continued after chriſtianity itſelf had been adopted. Some few prelates barely ventured to raiſe their voice againſt the multiplicity of concubines, but children proceeding from thoſe connections were no leſs heirs than the offſpring of legitimate wives.

Every thing had degenerated at Conſtantinople. The forces of the empire, that before amounted to eight hundred thouſand men, were now reduced to one hundred and fifty thouſand. The valour, which had made the name of a Roman terrible to the reſt of the world, was now vaniſhed, moſt of the leaders and generals were choſen from among the Barbarians. Merit had formerly crowned the emperors, reſolution afterwards appointed them; in the times we are ſpeaking of, they held the ſceptre by intrigue, cunning, and perfidy. The council was filled with eccleſiaſtics, eunuchs governed the courts, and treaſurers devoured the provinces. Thoſe people

people who boaſted their deſcent from the Romans, ſhewed neither greatneſs of ſoul or courage; the few ſparks of genius, that ſtill ſhone among them, ſerved only to cover treachery with the veil of art and hypocriſy.

Sciences.

Arts and ſciences and all human knowledge, were now eclipſed in the weſt. The Viſigoths, who ſeemed to have the moſt lights, had the leaſt, becauſe what they had were falſe. The abuſe of religion and ſuperſtition fixed the ſtandard of human capacity among them. The Greeks, who were in fact more enlightened, made a more fatal uſe of their learning. Philoſophy was fled; theological diſputes were ſubſtituted in its place; thoſe were continually revived, and as often diſturbed the empire, and ſubverted the throne.

Hiſtory.

Procopius of Cæſarea diſplayed ſome traces of true hiſtory; in his works we are to gather the moſt certain ideas with regard to the revolutions of thoſe times; I can not, however, coincide with the celebrated Monteſquieu in prefering the ſecret hiſtory of that author. Either the ſatire in queſtion was not the work of Procopius, as every thing conſpires to make us believe, or that writer does not deſerve the leaſt credit. A man who ſhould publicly proſtitute his pen to flattery, and in private make it the venal inſtrument of enmity and hatred, would be unworthy of any credit whatſoever. Jornandes and Gregory of Tours may be alſo conſulted occaſionally, not as real hiſtorians, but as frigid annaliſts, who relate facts without knowing how to make reflections, or

draw characters. We are not, however, alway, implicitly to believe them; Jornandes, the Goth, ſaw things in a light too favourable to his countrymen, and the credulous Gregory diſcovered oracles and prodigies every where.

Fine arts. The Latin tongue, the only one in which religion, law, and the muſes converſed, was daily diſfigured by a mixture of numberleſs barbarous expreſſions, and by the falſe taſte of the conquerors. Eloquence was deſtroyed; four men only ſtill preſerved a ſmall ſpark of it. Caſſiodorus, the miniſter of Theodoric, has left us a precious monument in his political inſtitutes. He was wiſe enough, in the midſt of the ſplendor and pleaſures of a court, to be ſenſible that ſuch vain pomp was but the phantom of happineſs; and had the courage to break from it, and ſeek more ſubſtantial felicity in obſcurity and retirement. The work of Boetius on conſolation is well known; it is an eſtimable book; but having been written in the midſt of all the horrors of the moſt unjuſt captivity, it partakes of the melancholy circumſtances which produced it. Salvian, that learned and virtuous prieſt of Marſeilles, who was called the Cicero and Jeremiah of the age, has left us lively and affecting pictures of the miſeries of his times. To thoſe we may add the famous Tribonian, who, by the encouragement of Juſtinian, wrote the laws in a ſtyle that would not have diſcredited the glorious days of Auguſtus.

Caſſiodorus.

Tribonian.

There was no longer any true poetry; Fortunatus the Italian, the only poetic writer that merited

merited any conſideration in the age we are ſpeaking of, often diſplayed ſome wit and delicacy, but he rarely ever ſpoke the language of ſentiment and nature. It would be in vain to look for the fine arts in the weſt in thoſe days; the ſword of barbarians had deſtroyed them; they continued to flouriſh in Conſtantinople. Architecture, painting, and ſculpture, directed by antique models, found able hands, whom the throne protected; and taſte ſtill diſplayed itſelf in that magnificent city, in the midſt of all the horrors of ſedition and enthuſiaſm.

END OF THE FIRST EPOCHA.

SECOND EPOCHA.

MAHOMET.

The Origin of the Eaſtern Empire.

Empire of the Saracens.

ARABIA is a great peninſula, divided by the Tropics. It is bounded on the north by Syria and Paleſtine; the mouth of the Euphrates and the gulph of Ormus terminate it to the eaſt; the ocean waſhes it on the ſouth; on the weſt it is ſeparated by the Red Sea from Ethiophia and Egypt. The climate is very hot, the ſky ſerene, and the ſoil in general dry: fine flocks and cattle, horſes of uncommon ſwiftneſs, dates, coffee, frankincenſe, and all ſorts of perfumes, conſtitue its peculiar and diſtinctive products.

ARABIA is divided into three parts. Arabia Petrea, that joins Egypt, is a heap of barren rocks; religion takes notice of Mount Sinai. The deſarts of Arabia near the Euphrates derive their name from the extenſive baron tracts and burning ſands in that country. Arabia Fœlix, the ſouthern part of the peninſula, is almoſt entirely ſurrounded by the ſea. Here are produced in abundance delicious dates, with the moſt delicate coffee and the pureſt frankincenſe is diſtilled from the trees. Here are raiſed ſhady and odoriferous bowers, and ſtreams, flowing under

under thoſe ſhades, preſerve an eternal verdure in the plains. Here the happy Arab finds an eaſy life in the flocks which coſt him only the trouble of defending them, and in thoſe fruits which nature ſpontaneouſly preſents in abundance.

Before this century the Arabs were but very little known to other nations; families entirely ſeparated from each other, formed, by the name of Tribes, ſo many independent ſocieties. If they ſometimes united, it was merely to concur in common robberies, the only reſource of the people who inhabited the frontiers. Thoſe who lived in the interior parts of the country, had no other occupation but that of attending ther flocks; their houſes conſiſted of tents, which being dragged along on waggons, formed a ſpecies of towns as unſettled as the inhabitants. Some parts contiguous to the ſea, or the Roman provinces, had permanent and fixed towns, but we muſt conſider them in the light of extenſive villages, calculated to preſerve their fruits, their cattle and plunder. Excepting a few feeble regulations, that were ſome little check upon the inhabitants, there were no fixed laws, no certain principles, and no lawful ſubordination; the authority of a few rich was the only obſtacle to deſtructive confuſion and diſorder. The manners of the people were entirely licentious, they had neither candour, humanity, or modeſty; their hearts were inſenſible to every tender feeling and ſentiment; and nature itſelf was abuſed in the ſweeteſt of all her pleaſures. Religion among them was groſs idolatry, with a mixture of all the ſects in which Aſia abounded. They had ſome

notion of Abraham, an obſcure tradition ſuppoſed them deſcended from that patriarch; they had even retained circumciſion, ablution, and a horror for certain animals, which ſuperſtition conſidered as unclean; but the true character of the Divinity was entirely disfigured, and his unity, the firſt of his attributes, totally effaced. Three goddeſſes, eternal daughters of the Supreme Being, were made equal to him in power, and inferior idols ſhared their incenſe and adoration.

THE principal of thoſe idols was kept at Mecca. That city was then reputed holy. Caaba, a famous temple, held in veneration throughout all Arabia, was to be ſeen there: it was a little ſquare building, the entrance into which was very narrow and cloſed by a ſilver door; there was nothing to be ſeen within but an altar covered with ſilk. In this temple was preſerved the famous ſtone Baathra, which came down from heaven when men were in a ſtate of innocence; its whiteneſs was then of a dazzling luſtre; but ſin had inſenſibly obſcured the colour of it, and, the wickedneſs of mankind ſtill increaſing it, had, ſaid they, turned quite black.

PEOPLE flocked from all parts of Arabia to this temple; it is eaſy to conceive thoſe pilgrimages muſt have greatly enriched the city. Mecca was at that time reputed the moſt conſiderable city of thoſe extenſive regions, and her tribes were the moſt diſtinguiſhed in Arabia.

AMONG thoſe tribes the Corrahites held the firſt rank, but, as it ever happens, while the heads of that family had the principal authority, which

their

their riches procured, one branch was languiſhing in indigence, and ſunk into contempt: from this branch ſprung Mahomet.

MAHOMET was born in the year 571, of the chriſtian era; his mother died bringing him into the world, and his father ſurvived her but a very little time. He fell into the hands of guardians, who robbed him of the poor inheritance left him by his family; thus he felt all the miſeries of poverty at his firſt entrance into the world. An uncle leſs inhuman than the reſt of his relations, took him into his houſe, and educated him; if we can ſay he had any education, who was not taught even to read. The young Mahomet was thrown into the ſhop of a tradeſman, where he diſtinguiſhed himſelf ſo as to merit eſteem, and gain the entire confidence of his maſter: but fortune had not yet perſecuted him ſufficiently; ſhe ſeemed to repent of having conferred ſo many favours on him. His maſter became a bankrupt. Aboutaleb was a ſecond time burthened with the care of his nephew, and ſaw no other means of ſupport for him than to ſell him as a ſlave. A rich merchant, an Iſmaelite, purchaſed him, and, perceiving he had merit, employed him in the capacity of a ſupercargo. The young ſlave by his good behaviour obtained his liberty; he was ſent afterwards to traffic for the Iſmaelite on the coaſt of Syria, where his fidelity and care met with the greateſt ſucceſs. While Mahomet was thus diſcharging aſſiduouſly thoſe humble duties, he began to feel that he was born to move in a higher ſphere. Being removed into a civilized country, he

plainly perceived that he was nothing but a mere barbarian; he was ſenſible of the advantages the people round him had over him, by their learning and education. That noble pride which ſecretly inſpires great and exalted ſouls, made him bluſh for his own ignorance; he aſked queſtions, he reflected and meditated. He was ſtruck with the way of life and conduct of the Romans; their laws and goverment made a lively impreſſion on his mind, nor did their manners eſcape obſervation, but religion above all engroſſed his reflections. Judaiſm and chriſtianity were ſcattered through the country, and gave him an opportunity of comparing thoſe two modes of worſhip: he viewed them merely as an ambitious man, and conſequently he was emulous of the glory which the authors had acquired. Inſtead of conſidering them in the light of divine men really ſent from heaven to teach mankind the will of their creator, he had the misfortune to think them nothing more than men venerable on account of their wiſdom, or able politicians, who had invented thoſe pious fables in order to reform the morals of the world, and immortalize their own fame.

FILLED with thoſe ideas, he conſidered the barbarous, ſuperſtitious, and ignoble ſtate of Arabia, and what a pleaſure and glory he ſhould acquire, if he could, after the example of thoſe great men, raiſe his country from her obſcurity, and become the inſtrument of her elevation and greatneſs; ſurely, ſaid he, the wretched Arabs who are ſunk in poverty and obſcurity would cheerfully give into illuſions, that ſhould promote their happineſs,

pineſs, and raiſe them into conſequence. His imagination was ſo ſtrongly impreſſed with this notion, that he began already to form the whole plan in his mind; he thought it neceſſary to adopt the chriſtian morality, that pure and ſocial morality, ſo happily calculated to conciliate every virtuous mind; the terrors of judaiſm he conſidered as uſeful to intimidate and reſtrain the wicked; and leaving the grounds of the ancient worſhip as they were, in ceremonies of no conſequence, ſuch as circumciſion, and the pilgrimage of the Caaba, he ſhould by that means pleaſe the people who are ever attached to their ſuperſtitious cuſtoms. The great point would be to adapt the whole to the manners of the Arabs, to unite this doctrine with the licentious pleaſures which had ſuch powerful charms for himſelf and his countrymen. This ſyſtem was as yet no more than a vague idea, or an agreeable dream, of which the author was far from expecting the accompliſhment. Sunk in the moſt wretched poverty, ſtill marked with the chains of ſlavery, without protection or aſſiſtance, he had not the preſumption to flatter himſelf with the hopes of effecting ſuch happy changes.

In the mean time a new turn of fortune ſeparated him from his old maſter; he paſſed into the ſervice of Cadiſgha, a widow, who was a wealthy merchant, and ſtill in the bloom of life.

The pleaſing manners of youth, a form well proportioned, a happy countenance, eyes full of fire, natural eloquence and engaging ſweetneſs captivated the widow, and the agent ſoon became the huſband.

MAHOMET was now riſen from poverty to opulence, and in this ſituation his former ideas returned: this gave him one reſource more, with which he ventured to form the deſign of becoming the head of a new religion; from a perſuaſion that religion would procure him great conſideration and reſpect, and introduce him into ſome power and authority. The crafty impoſtor affected a life of ſolitude and ſilence; he was more profuſe in his charities, he ſometimes retired into the deſart, and thence returned with looks of wonder and aſtoniſhment. Having gained admirers by thoſe methods, he went ſtill farther, he dropped hints of his revelations, but in a modeſt manner at firſt, and with great caution in his own houſe; he ſpoke myſteriouſly, extorting a promiſe of inviolable ſecrecy. The epilepſy to which he became ſubject, was an infirmity that might make him contemptible; he reported it was an extaſy, which was making himſelf a divine man. Cadiſgha who was a woman of good ſenſe had violent ſcruples, but love removed them; to her he firſt imparted the apparitions he had of the angle Gabriel; ſhe ſoon circulated the ſtory among all her neighbours. Mahomet became the general ſubject of converſation in Mecca: the ignorant were aſtoniſhed, the ſuperſtitious believed, and men of ſenſe laughed, but the number of dupes augmented daily. The people already ran in crowds to hear the new prophet; curioſity, ſuperſtition, hatred and favour drew people to his harangues from all the neighbouring towns and villages. Exalted genius, a bold delivery, purity of language, bright and lively images, pathe-

tic

tic action, and a certain air of dignity captivated his hearers, and continually increaſed the number of his diſciples. How was it poſſible, for thoſe at leaſt who had any underſtanding, to reſiſt the perſuaſive charms of a doctrine ſo ſublime, in compariſon to the ſtupid errors of their country?

To acknowledge one only God without diviſion of ſubſtance or of perſons; to believe him eternal, immenſe and beneficient; the creator of the world, the author and friend of mankind, were the grounds of the doctrine propoſed; he farther obſerved, that our Divine Maker, from his great love and deſire for our happineſs, had, in his infinite wiſdom and goodneſs thought proper to eſtabliſh order in ſociety, and thence aroſe the neceſſity of giving us laws; and ſuch was the ſalutary mildneſs of thoſe laws, as to make us happy in proportion as we contributed to the happineſs of our fellow creatures.

To love God, to pray to him ſeven times each day, to have him continually in our thoughts, to honour him by ceremonies that ſhould remind us of his favours, to reſpect him as a maſter, to revere and love him as a father, to embrace all mankind with univerſal affection as brothers belonging to one great family; to aſſiſt and protect every individual of the ſpecies; to cheriſh and feed the poor in particular; and defend the weak from the oppreſſion of the powerful, and to extend our benevolence and compaſſion to every living creature, withouteven excepting any animals that areuſeful to us: ſuch was the doctrine Mahomet then preached; to this he added a morality indulgent to the ſenſes; love appeared a duty to him, to which

nature

nature had united pleaſure. His followers were permitted to have four wives, and as many female ſlaves as they deſired; and he himſelf, as a privilege belonging to the greateſt of all prophets, had fifteen conſorts; but he condemned with horror thoſe ſhocking paſſions at which nature recoils; his ſanguinary principles, his barbarous and intolerant ſentiments, he carefully concealed at the beginning of his omiſſion, leaſt that inhumanity ſhould expoſe him to hatred and deteſtation.

God, purſued the prophet, had imprinted thoſe laws on our hearts, but prejudices and paſſions ſo far corrupted and effaced them, that they would have been loſt for ever, if he had not ſent men of exalted virtue and merit, in order to ſet them before the eyes of mankind again in their writings and examples. The moſt eminent among thoſe prophets were Abraham, Moſes, and Jeſus. He taught that the two firſt were appointed for the jews alone, and had dictated laws to that people that related to them only; but that Jeſus who was infinitely greater and wiſer, and more favoured by God, embracing the whole earth in his miſſion, had diſplayed thoſe bright rays of truth and wiſdom, which enlightened all mankind: that the prefidious jews had endeavoured to ſacrifice him, but God had removed him out of the reach of their malice and fury; he looked upon it as impious to believe that he ſuffered death, as ſome ſuppoſed. That time had unhappily corrupted the chriſtians themſelves, and the doctrine of that religion being as much diſguiſed as the laws had left man more than ever a prey to illuſion and error;

error; but that God in fine had recently elected Mahomet out of his goodneſs, and raiſed him above Jeſus himſelf, in order to reſtore truth and virtue to the earth.

But as the hearts of men always inclined to ſenſible objects, and had occaſion for external ſigns to remind them of their duties, God therefore judged it neceſſary to oblige the faithful to particular ceremonies: ſuch as circumciſion, the pilgrimage of Mecca, and frequent ablutions.

That the Supreme Being had not immediately by himſelf communicated his deſigns to a vile mortal. The angel, Gabriel, had been the interpretor of his divine will, and delivered to Mahomet thoſe laws from the heavenly throne, as well as the book which contained them; he obſerved that the book itſelf was a proof of its divine origin. How was it poſſible, he ſaid, for an ignorant man as he was to write with ſuch ſtrength, learning, and eloquence?

Such were the doctrine and opinions of Mahomet; ſuch the real foundation of the Alcoran that has been ſo much talked of and ſo little known; all the reſt was nothing but additional circumſtances. We find confuſed notions, declamation, abſurdities, contradictions, and numberleſs blunders in it, with reſpect to policy, hiſtory, and chronology: but all thoſe things were unknown to the Arabs; they ſaw nothing but the morality and ſtyle, and their poetry had never produced any work of greater force and beauty. All nature ſeemed to ſmile under the imagination of the author, and furniſh him with her moſt pleaſing images:

images: every part abounded with ſplendid deſcriptions, beautiful pictures, and a purity of expreſſion, which made that work the maſter-piece and ſtandard of their language. Can we doubt that a people born under ſuch a climate as Arabia, would have required other prodigies from Mahomet? The Alcoran appeared the greateſt of all miracles; and in fact the ſword never ſubdued empires more rapidly than the poetic eloquence of Mahomet triumphed over the minds of men. They were perſuaded that ſo elevated a genius muſt neceſſarily approach the Deity, and deſerved to be the interpreter of his will. Thus the people of Greece had thought of Homer; the Egyptians fancied the like of Mercury, and the Chineſe had the ſame ideas of Cenfucius.

ABUBEKER the wiſeſt of the Arabs was convinced, and Ali, the moſt powerful man in Mecca, thought it an honour to bend the knee to Mahomet.

A formidable party however attacked him: he was ridiculed and inſulted; they began with inſults, and concluded with exerting the authority of government againſt him. The magiſtrates intereſted themſelves in the matter, and were for puniſhing the prophet as a ſeditious impoſtor. He fled, but his reputation travelled before him, ſo that when he reached Medina he found friends there he had no idea of before. The number of his followers increaſed every hour. The whole city quickly joined him declared him their chief, and were reſolved to obey no other maſter. His friends, who had been proſcribed, then arrived from Mecca,

and

and among others came Omar, the moſt valiant of the Arabs; they all preſſed him to put himſelf at their head, and lead them immediately to avenge their mutual wrongs. Mahomet ſaw the object of his hopes approaching, he flattered the zeal of his followers, and being ſenſible of the advantages of the firſt heat of enthuſiaſm, ſuddenly marched towards Mecca. A ſuperior body of forces oppoſed his march, he ventured to give battle and was defeated; his people murmured, lamented thoſe that were ſlain, expreſſed their wonder at the defeat of a prophet, and were ripe for a revolt. Informed of this he flew to the camp, and appeared in the midſt of the rebels. "Unbelieving wretches, he "exclaimed, with that air and voice of majeſty "which awes the vulgar, did you hope to conquer "with ſo little faith? What! you bewail the loſs of "your brothers and comrades; rather envy their "good fortune. Enroled in heaven for ever, I "now ſee them enjoying eternal felicity. En-"deavour to merit the ſame glorious reward, "march in that hope and confidence, and I will "inſure you victory." The bandage of illuſion immediately overſpread their eyes again, they proſtrated themſelves at the feet of the prophet, and demanded battle. Mahomet led them to it inſtantly, the victory was complete; he continued his march, and not yet having ſufficient ſtrength to attack Mecca, he made a truce with the city which lulled her into ſecurity; in the mean while he made the moſt of his time: his army was augmented, diſciplined, and prepared for war. In this ſituation he ſuddenly returned towards

wards Mecca, having ſpread a report that the enemy had broken the truce, and by forced marches appeared before the walls of the place. The city in conſternation opened her gates to him, trembling for her fate; but inſtead of ſhedding blood, he ſhewed nothing but acts of clemency, which compleated the ſubjection of the inhabitants.

MAHOMET hitherto had no other conſideration but what aroſe from his perſonal merit: he now added to the titles of prophet and pontiff, that of a temporal prince, and Mecca conferred the diadem on him. His ambition was not content with the ſmall territory under his obedience: at the head of no very conſiderable body of troops, but all determined to ſhed the laſt drop of their blood in the cauſe of their maſter, he overran independant Arabia, and ſubjected it entirely to his ſcepter and laws. Full of confidence in his people, he turned his arms againſt the Romans, and drove them out of thoſe parts which they poſſeſſed after Pompey. After humbling Heraclius, he made an alliance with him againſt Coſrhoes, out of policy and apprehenſion, aſſiſted and raiſed that emperor, and by that means made himſelf the arbiter of both empires. He died at Medina, in the very meridian of his glory and triumphs, leaving his country united by his doctrine, civilized by his laws, formidable to the neighbouring powers, and reſpected by all the reſt of the world. Mahomet, though the huſband of fifteen wifes, left no ſon to inherit his power; he had by Cadiſgha a daughter named Fatima, whoſe beauty, and the memory of a mother that had been the foundation of his greatneſs,

greatneſs, made her ſtill dearer to him; he gave this daughter in marriage to Ali, one of his four captains, whom he called the ſwords of God; at his death he had appointed his ſon-in-law to be his ſucceſſor. The honour of the alliance, the will of the teſtator, and the perſonal merit of Ali ſeemed to be indiſputable claims, and to ſecure for ever the ſcepter of the prophet to the conſort and children of Fatima. But Abbas, ſon of Aboutaleb, the uncle, who had educated Mahomet, maintained that the titles of pontiff and general were united in the dignity of califf, and could not fall to the ſhare of a woman, therefore Fatima could give no title to her conſort. The will of the prophet was in vain urged againſt thoſe arguments; he inſiſted that the reſpect even due to his memory ſhould perſuade them to oppoſe ſuch an erroneous regulation; that the glory of the prophet was intereſted in perpetuating his ſcepter in the houſe of the Abaſſides, to which he belonged, rather than let it be transferred to a ſtrange family.

Abubeker.

In the mean while, Abubeker and Omar, the two other favourites of the prophet, aſſembled the troops in a tumultuous manner, to whom they repreſented that the relations of Mahomet were, in vain, diſputing about the ſucceſſion, as if it was a common patrimony; that the right of commanding the true believers could not be an inheritance; that it would be equal injuſtice and folly to ſuffer a throne, that was founded in religion and war, to depend on the caprice of birth and accident; that it ſhould be the portion of merit, and therefore it belonged only to ſo many valiant ſoldiers

to determine who ſhould have the honour of leading them to glory. Omar, the braveſt of the Saracens, was in hopes, that if he could get the crown declared elective, it ſhould be the reward of valour. Abubeker, on the other hand, flattered himſelf that it would become the prize of that wiſdom which made him the oracle of his country. Another circumſtance was of great advantage to the latter. Ayeſha his daughter, the widow of Mahomet, and an enemy to Ali, was a bold intriguing and artful woman; ſhe found the way to inflame the minds of the people againſt the ſon-in-law; and by her preſents, intreaties and promiſes, to intereſt the camp in favour of her father. A confuſed number of voices proclaimed him before the end of the day. Omar himſelf ſeeing the greater part of the ſoldiery was inclined for the venerable old man, threw himſelf at his feet, and fixed the ſword of the prophet on him. Ali and Abbas attempted to ſet aſide this choice; but being ſurrounded at the ſame inſtant by Omar and his friends, and terrified by his menaces, they were forced to acknowlege Abubeker by the title which he aſſumed of califf and vicar.

In the mean time enthuſiaſm already began to raiſe diſputes. A conſiderable party pretended that Mahomet was not mortal, and maintained that his body ſtill had life under the appearance of death, and that he would immediately open his eyes again to the light. The ſage Abubeker confuted the impoſture; and in order to fix the attention of the people on religion, he collected the ſcattered leaves of the Alcoran: he afterwards marched

marched to the remoter parts of Arabia, where he ſuppreſſed a growing rebellion. He then entered Paleſtine, firſt defeated the troops of Heraclius; and afterwards Heraclius in perſon, made himſelf maſter of Jeruſalem, advanced as far as Damaſcus, ſubjected all the country between Mount Lebanus and the ſea, and at length died after being admired for his wiſdom and goodneſs.

Omar.

THE unanimous voice of the army raiſed Omar to the throne, who immediately proceeded to new conqueſts. In one campaign he ſtripped the Romans of Syria, Phenicia, Meſopotamia, and Chaldea. He then turned his arms againſt Perſia, and in two years, the extenſive provinces of that empire, till then invincible, were entered; its numerous caſtles and forts reduced; that ancient and auguſt throne deſtroyed for ever; the religion of the country, which had ſubſiſted ſo many ages, was aboliſhed, and the Alcoran eſtabliſhed on the ruins of its altars. The generals of the conqueror at the ſame time ſubjected Egypt, Lybia, and Numidia, and puſhed their conqueſts to the very foot of mount Atlas. But thoſe numerous victories, and all his virtues, which were many, could not ſecure Omar from the blows of fanatics. He died by the hands of aſſaſſins, who pretended that he deſpiſed the Alcoran, while his valour made it triumphant in every quarter.

Othman.

OTHMAN, who ſucceeded him, followed the footſteps of his predeceſſors. He completed the conqueſt of Perſia, Bactriana, and a part of Tartary; while Moavia his relation and friend, who was the

hero of his time, ſubjected the weſtern coaſts of Africa to the califf; ravaged the iſlands of the Archiepelago, and made himſelf maſter of Rhodes, where he deſtroyed the famous Coloſſus; entered Sicily, and ſtruck a terror into the very heart of Italy. Notwithſtanding all thoſe ſucceſſes, conſpiracies were formed on every ſide againſt this prince; the factions of Abbas and Ali united, ſpread detraction and calumny, gained over the provinces, and raiſed an inſurrection in Medina. The populace in a rage ſurrounded the palace, the unfortunate califf was butchered by the rebels, his blood ſtained the book of the Alcoran, with which he endeavoured to defend himſelf againſt the murderous ſteel.

Ali. Ali immediately ſeized on the throne, and the firſt uſe he made of his power was to attack his predeceſſors; he ſtigmatized their memory by anathemas; and he was in hopes of terrifying the people by diſcharging the thunders of religion. On the other hand, he endeavoured to conciliate their affections, by relaxing the rigour of the law; with this view he ſuppreſſed ſome articles of the Alcoran that were incommodious, which he aſſured them had been invented by Abubeker. In the mean time he learned, that a formidable enemy was advancing to deprive him of the fruits of the death of Othman. Moavia, abandoning his conqueſts, returned haſtily back from the extremity of Sicily, followed by troops whom his abilities and courage had attached to his fortune; he marched in appearance to avenge his friend, but in fact to ſupply his place. A battle that was doubtful

doubtful rent the empire to no purpoſe. All the provinces were divided and rioting in the blood of muſſulmen, when three fanatics devoted themſelves for the ſtate, and made vows to deſtroy the authors of this confuſion; Ali fell a victim to their poniards.

Hussain the ſon of Ali, and the chief of the family of Fatima, threw himſelf into Cuffa, where he aſſumed the title of califf. Being purſued in this retreat, he endeavoured to ſave himſelf by leading a life of obſcurity, but the confidence they had in his weakneſs gave way to uneaſy ſuſpicions, to which he was ſacrificed. After his death the family of Mahomet ſeemed to have vaniſhed from the empire. The family and faction of Fatima, without a head or friends, perſecuted and baniſhed, retired into the deſarts of Arabia, while the party of Abbas more oppreſſed ſtill, with difficulty found refuge in the provinces on the borders of Armenia.

Moavia, thus become peaceable poſſeſſor of a throne, to which he had no other title but his valour, transferred the ſeat of empire to Damaſcus, and made his authority more abſolute than ever. He was a great warrior as well as able politician; he added Armenia and Natolia to his dominions, and carried his arms to the very walls of Conſtantinople: he ſtained his glory, however, by ſuſpicions which prompted him to the effuſion of much blood; and the hiſtory of arts has recorded his rage againſt them, which deſtroyed many illuſtrious monuments. Yeſid his ſon, copied only his vices: he was a coward in the field, in governing a ty-

rant, a prodigy of avarice, and the public galant of his own ſiſter. He with difficulty eſcaped from the factions that were raiſed againſt him on all ſides; thoſe factions broke out under Moavia II, his ſon and ſucceſſor. This prince, who was beloved on account of his clemency, but contemptible for his incapacity, abdicated the throne, in order to eſcape the ſtorms that threatened him: Marvan, his brother-in-law, faced them, marched againſt the rebels, defeated them, and re-eſtabliſhed tranquility throughout his extenſive empire.

ABDALMELECK, being at firſt diſturbed by the adherents of Abbas, obliged them to hide themſelves in the mountains of Armenia, and, in order to extirpate rebellion entirely, was reſolved to exterminate the family of Ali and Abbas. The blood of the prophet flowed beneath the ſword of his general, and this perſecution darkened the glory of this califf, who was otherwiſe reſpectable on account of his virtues. The chriſtians refuſed him a church which he offered to purchaſe; inſtead of taking it from them or puniſhing their imprudence, "he was rejoiced, he ſaid, that his ſubjects "had ſo favourable an opinion of his moderation, "as to venture to diſpleaſe him."

Valid I. UNDER Valid I, the empire of the califfs was quiet, aroſe to the ſummit of glory, and menaced the reſt of the world. On one ſide his arms penetrated into ancient Sogdiana, Samarcan and Turboſtan: on the other they paſſed the Borphorus, and ſtruck terror into the cities of Greece, while his ſtandards, under the conduct of Muſa, ſubjected Spain, croſſed the Pyrences, and appeared in the heart of France. Soliman, who purſued the

the deſigns of his father, ordered one of his generals to lay ſiege to Conſtantinople, and another to march towards Paris; they were afterwards to join their forces at Rome. His ſhort reign prevented the execution of thoſe great projects. He was ſucceeded by Omar II, whom Soliman preferred to his brother, and who was aſſaſſinated at the time that his virtues began to complete the happineſs of the empire. Yeſid, his murderer, ſupported the throne by his talents, and diſgraced it by his exceſſes. It was in the reign of Heſchiam, that Charles Martel defeated the Saracens at Tours; they were then triumphant in every part of the world; that victory ſaved France and the reſt of Europe. Under the ſame prince the family and faction of Abbas, encouraged by his negligence, raiſed their heads in the empire, and ventured to revive their pretenſions. Valid II, by his cruelty, kindled new flames which he had not capacity to extinguiſh; they terminated in the loſs of his throne and life. Yeſid III was raiſed to the throne by one faction, and oppoſed by another, while Marvan, a prince of the ſame family, gathered ſo much ſtrength in Meſopotamia, as to threaten Damaſcus. The imprudent califf was weak enough to imagine that he could not avoid deſtruction, but by the dangerous policy of rewarding the authors of the rebellion. They renewed their projects under Ibrahim, and a victory, by which the ſovereign was made a captive, at length placed the fortunate Marvan on the throne.

The family of Abbas in the mean time made advantage of the late troubles: they gained over the provinces of Perſia to their intereſt, and in-

vaded Yerack. Marvan, who ſaw this party was formidable, imagined he had entirely cruſhed it, by a victory in which the head of that dangerous family became his priſoner, but he was quickly replaced by another. Abbas being now heir to the pretenſions of his unfortunate brother, retired to Cuffa, where he found many friends attached to his family; by their aſſiſtance he excited the ſouthern provinces to revolt, and at the head of a new army marched to attack the califf. The active Marvan flew to meet him. A battle was fought on the banks of the Euphrates, with all the rage and fury that hatred and ſuperſtition inſpire. The califf, after being defeated the firſt day, rallied his troops the next morning, made the moſt aſtoniſhing efforts, and was on the point of repairing his fortune, when his horſe, affrighted at the noiſe, carried him out of the ranks, and gave the victory to his rival. The intrepid Marvan having eſcaped from this new misfortune, ſtill preſerved his fortitude; he paſſed into Egypt, where he collected the few adherents he had left; but, being purſued in that retreat, died ſword in hand; his death put an end to the empire of the Ommiads.

The family of the ancient pontiffs was exterminated by the new. Abderamen, having eſcaped the maſſacre, croſſed over into Spain, where being acknowleged as a ſovereign by the Moors of that country, he formed an independent ſtate ſeparate from the empire of the Saracens.

Abbas in the mean time reſtored the family of Mahomet to the throne: he transferred the ſeat of the califfs to Cuffa, declared the Ommiads uſurpers, perſecuted their adherents, and butchered ſixty thouſand

thouſand of them in his empire. He re-eſtabliſhed the memory of Ali that had been ſtigmatized by his predeceſſors; but while he conferred vain honours on the father, he ſeverely perſecuted his deſcendents, in whom he dreaded pretenſions, at leaſt equal to his own. Almanſor his ſon, being obliged to diſpute the crown with his uncle, ſecured it by a victory; being inſulted afterwards in Cuffa, he built Bagdad on the banks of the Tigris, and removed his court to that city, which has ſince become ſo famous. He there indulged his taſte for learning, and on the throne of ignorance placed every art and ſcience. The Greek and Roman authors were tranſlated. Men of learning were invited from Conſtantinople; and philoſophy raiſed its head in the capital. Aſtronomy was cultivated, phyſic flouriſhed there, poetry was encouraged at court, and architecture embelliſhed all the cities of the empire. Thus while in Europe the ſciences periſhed under the blows of a religion that ſhould cheriſh and promote them, they flouriſhed in Aſia by the protection of a worſhip, that might be expected to diſcourage and abhor them. Mahadi continued thoſe happy beginnings, and Aaron Alraſchid carrying his affection for the fine arts ſtill farther, made them ſhare in the glory of a reign that was eternized in the annals of humanity, as well as in thoſe of victory.

Empire of Conſtantine.

WHILE the empire of the Saracens roſe to ſuch a height, that of Greece continued to decline. The people were for ever taken up with diſputes concerning religion. The monks diminiſhed population; ſuperſtition extinguiſhed valour and ſhook the throne. Heraclius terminated in misfortune

fortune a reign chequered with the moſt ſhining proſperity, and the ſtrangeſt diſtreſs. His ſon, Conſtantine III, made his appearance only to fall a ſacrifice to an intriguing mother-in-law. His ſon was placed upon the throne, but ſhortly dethroned. Conſtantine II, his brother, entirely taken up with his endeavours to make Monotheliſm triumphant, had ſeen, with eyes of indifference, his armies defeated by the Saracens, and abandoned the richeſt iſland of his empire to thoſe conquerors. Conſtantine, called Longbeard, after being ſucceſsful againſt the Arabs, had fled before the Bulgarians, a certain people who came originally from the mountains of Tartary, and had lately ſettled on the banks of the Danube. His cruelty to his brothers, whom he put to death, had involved the ſtate in freſh troubles: they grew violent under Juſtinian III, a barbarian, who ſeemed to thirſt after blood. He was twice expelled the throne, as often reſtored, and at length murdered. Philippick was ſcarce raiſed to the throne by one party of the rebels, when he was driven out by another. Theodoſius, to whom the ſceptre was given, ſhewed the virtues of a private man, the incapacity of a weak prince, and preſerved his life only by devoting it to a cloiſter. The licentiouſneſs of the troops conferred the crown on a clerk in the cuſtom-houſe, and this phantom of an emperor ſoon made way for Leo the Iſaurian. The empire was now on the very brink of deſtruction; the Saracens having triumphed over the legions, laid ſiege to Conſtantinople with 100,000 men and 300 ſhips, and reduced the city to the greateſt diſtreſs. The plague that made great

havock

havock in the camp of the enemy; the invention of a kind of wild fire, which burned in the midſt of water; the policy of Leo in gaining over the Bulgarians; his wiſdom that maintained admirable order in the city; and his courage which made head on every ſide, preſerved the empire. He was a great prince, and his talents would have been more admired, if the protection which he granted to the Iconoclaſts or image breakers, had not excited the reſentmenr of the catholics, and expoſed him to their miſrepreſentations. Conſtantine Copronymus, the imitator of this miſtaken zeal, who ſpent his time in endeavouring to humble the clergy, ſupported the throne however, though it tottered on every ſide. Leo IV, after being defeated by the Saracens, returned to the city but to ſee it a prey to factions, which Monotheliſm fomented; under his ſon Conſtantine Porphirogenetes, the ſcepter of the Romans was given, for the firſt time, to a woman: this was Irene, ſo odious an account of her ambition, to which ſhe did not ſcruple to ſacrifice her own ſon, and whoſe aſtoniſhing talents gave the empire ſome rays of her ancient glory.

Kings of Lombardy.

THE north of Italy continued in ſubjection to the Lombards; Milan and Paviara were the chief cities of that kingdom. This people had embraced chriſtanity, but ſtill ambitiouſly extended themſelves along the weſtern borders of Italy, while they diſputed the banks of the Adriatic ſea with the Greeks. Their ſovereigns were hereditary, but it was neceſſary to have their right confirmed by the nation; they followed the taſte of their ſubjects,

ſubjects, and there were few of them who did not diſtinguiſh themſelves in war. Among thoſe princes, Rotharis was remarkable for tarniſhing the luſtre of numberleſs virtues, by an act of ingratitude, in ſacrificing the widow of his predeceſſor, whoſe hand raiſed him to the throne. Pertharit, at firſt driven out, and afterwards formed in the ſchool of adverſity, carried back to the throne ſentiments of humanity that made him the father of his people. Luitprand, a great warrior as well as a great prince, put an end to the exarchate, and the dominion of the Greeks in that part of Italy. Aſtolphus, who attempted to extend his conqueſts farther, drew upon himſelf the arms of Pepin: all his art and ſtratagems proved ineffectual againſt ſuch unequal forces, and could not prevent the loſs of Ravenna and the places belonging to that diſtrict. The unfortunate Didier, in fine, born down by the power of Charlemagne, exchanged the throne for a priſon; and Lombardy, after having been a kingdom for two centuries, became a province to the empire of the conqueror.

The ſouth of Italy was a prey to three different nations. The Greeks poſſeſſed Apulia and Calabria: the Lombards held Beneventum, Capua, and Brunduſium, the Saracens were maſters of the reſt. Thoſe three nations were continually at war; and their perpetual devaſtations made a deſart, in a manner, of that beautiful part of Italy.

Popes. Rome, in the midſt of ſo many factions, the object of the ambition of each in particular, maintained, defended herſelf, and roſe to independence.

Her

Her biſhops with a wiſe and regular plan of policy, protected the people, relieved their wants, gained their affections, fomented uſeful diviſions among the neighbouring powers, made thoſe emperors odious who had any claims upon them, and powerful protectors for themſelves againſt the Lombards who had forces. Thus they found means to remove the Greeks, to occupy their place, and to unite the diadem with the mitre. Martin I, who was beloved on account of his liberality, was ill treated by the emperor: his ſucceſſor took occaſion, from this act of injuſtice, to cry down the faith of the Greeks. Another emperor went to Rome and plundered that city. This violence was repreſented in the ſtrongeſt colours by Vitalian, as the act of a tyrant. The exarch meditated to carry off Sergius I, whom he conſidered as a rebel: the pontiff informed the people of it by his friends; and the populace in a rage, obliged that prince to relinquiſh his deſign. A ſimilar attempt againſt John VI, met with ſtill worſe ſucceſs, and ſerved only to teach the people to deſpiſe their ancient maſters. Gregory III, ſeeing that Leo by breaking down the images attacked religion in the moſt tender part, and conſequently that to which the people was moſt attached, plainly perceived from the violent reſentment which thoſe proceedings excited, that there was an opportunity for ſtriking a deciſive blow. He excommunicated the emperor, ordered his name to be eraſed from the public prayers, and, by means of that anathema, invited the Romans to ſhake off all dependence. The people, ſtimulated at the ſame time

time by the favours of Gregory, and their attachments to the images, broke off all connection with Conſtantinople, and daſhed the ſtatues of their ſovereigns to pieces. Nothing now remained to be done, but to cruſh the Lombards, who were much more powerful than the emperors. Zachariah, like an artful politician, took advantage of the ſituation of France, and by a deciſion, which deprived the legitimate and weak poſſeſſor of the ſcepter, in order to confer it on a powerful uſurper, he gained over the latter to his intereſts, and made him a bulwark againſt his neighbours. Stephen III, made a journey to France, where, by his prayers, benedictions, and tears, he completed the work of his predeceſſor, and obtained from the French the rich patrimony which the popes poſſeſs. Adrian, in fine, by getting a confirmation of the grant from Charlemagne, raiſed the edifice of pontifical power and greatneſs on a ſolid and permanent foundation.

Venice. VENICE, in the mean time, in the midſt of ſo many ſtorms, found tranquility in her marſhes, grew rich by commerce, gathered ſtrength by a wiſe and prudent liberty, daily roſe to greatneſs and power, and began to excite attention.

England. ENGLAND divided among ſeveral princes, had but little connection with the affairs of the continent, and furniſhed no events of any importance.

Sweden. THE annals of Sweden, in thoſe times, preſent nothing but fables, in which even probability is not obſerved.

Denmark. DENMARK began to pour forth thoſe terrible emigrations, which ſhortly after diſturbed all Europe,

rope, and already over-ſpread all the iſlands of the north.

IRELAND, at that time famous for her ſchools and ſuperior learning, was interrupted in her peaceful exerciſes by the ferocity and rage of thoſe new barbarians. Ireland.

SPAIN exhibited the ſtrangeſt revolutions; the ſcepter was wreſted from the family of Alaric and declared elective. Among the princes nominated by the nation is to be remarked Viteric, who did not anſwer the expectations of his people: Chindaſuinta, who, in a manner, compelled the people to chuſe him, aſcended the throne like a tyrant, and ſupported it with the talents of a hero: Récéſuinta was the father of his ſubjects and the protector of merit: Vamba, who a long time refuſed the crown, being ſenſible of its deceitful ſplendor, and wore it with glory, abdicated afterwards imprudently, and ended his days in a cloiſter. Vitira was cruel and baſe, he exaſperated the people ſo far againſt him, that, after his death, they ſet his children aſide, and raiſed Roderigo to the throne. This prince, who was deſcended from another family of the kings, had great qualities, but he loſt all the fruits of them by a blind paſſion for pleaſure: he violated Florinda, the daughter of count Julian, who was an illuſtrious warrior, the ſupport of Spain, and her principal bulwark againſt the Saracens. Such was the indignation of Julian at this act of violence, that he vowed the deſtruction of his prince; and Oppas, the archbiſhop of Seville, and ſon of Vitiza, whom the misfortunes of his family had long Spain.

made

made an enemy to the ſovereign, united his reſentment with that of the count. They concealed their reſolutions at firſt, until they had carried off Florinda by a ſtratagem; and then, with the ſword and croſs, they kindled the flames of rebellion in all the provinces. Being defeated by Roderigo, they ſaw there was no poſſibility of ſubverting the throne, but by the ruin of their country, and this did not divert their reſolution a moment. Oppas remained in Spain, in order to keep ſedition alive. Julian croſſed into Africa, invited the Saracens to the deſtruction of his country; returned haſtily back at the head of thoſe barbarians, made a rapid conqueſt of Andaluſia, came up with his ſovereign, who advanced at the head of his ſubjects, in the plains of Xeres, where the battle was fought, which, by the death of Roderigo, and the total defeat of the Chriſtians, deſtroyed the firſt monarchy of the Goths, and ſubjected Spain to the yoke of the Alcoran.

The Saracens, under the command of Muſa and Tarif, conquered the reſt of the kingdom with eaſe and expedition, ſome mountains of the Aſturias alone eſcaped the dominion of the Alcoran. A glorious object is here preſented to our view. Pelagius, a deſcendant of the blood royal of the Goths, collected on thoſe rocks, a handful of fugitives who had eſcaped from the chains of the conqueror; being attacked in a cavern, he defended himſelf ſo gallantly in this deſperate ſituation with ſix hundred men, that he defeated the Saracens, encouraged the Chriſtians by this ſucceſs, took ſome towns, and was crowned king of Oviedo,

Oviedo, the center of his dominions, which extended no more than ten leagues. His ſucceſſors followed his example; and, by mere efforts of courage, enlarged the boundaries of their little kingdom. Tafila added ſome cities to it. Alphonſus I, ſecured the entire poſſeſſion of the mountains; Ordonio ventured to quit them, and try his fortune in the plain, his attempt proved fortunate. Vermondas who, from the condition of a deacon, aſcended the throne, governed with a feeble hand, and was near loſing the ſcepter. Mauregat, who uſurped the crown, preſerved it only by a diſgraceful treaty. He engaged to deliver one hundred young girls to the Saracens for the ſeraglio of their ſovereign.

France. FRANCE, exhibited very different ſcenes. At firſt, her princes were weak and mere ſlaves to their miniſters. The deſcendants of Dagobert, fatigued with the weight of the crown, and content with the pleaſures and indulgence which it procured, left all the burthen of affairs to their firſt miniſters, who were called mayors. Thoſe mayors made uſe of their authority in acquiring dependants and friends, and in every place fixed governors, whom intereſt as well as gratitude attached to their fortune. Hope and fear, thoſe chains which bind men to a throne, having no longer any objects in the hands of the prince, the eyes of the people were naturally turned to the mayors, who became in fact ſovereigns. Among thoſe mayors, the moſt remarkable were Pepin I, who ſtrengthened the authority of his place, becauſe he conſecrated it entirely to the glory of his maſter and the happineſs

of his country. Grimoald who, after the death of Sigebert, had the inſolence to crown his ſon, and the power to baniſh the legitimate ſucceſſor to Ireland. Ebroin who, by his abilities and courage, long maintained his poſt againſt many powerful enemies, whom his cruelty had excited.

Pepin II Heriſtel, who was in a manner adored in Auſtraſia, had the art to exclude the poſterity of Clovis from the throne; found means to have himſelf declared duke of that kingdom; obliged the kings of Normandy to appoint him mayor; carried his arms into Frieſland, and by his victories and wiſdom effaced the memory of his criminal uſurpations. After him came Charles Martel, the hero of the age, whoſe life was one continued ſeries of battles and triumphs. He had been ſhut up in a cloſe priſon after the death of his father, but young and inexperienced as he was, without protection or aſſiſtance, he found a way to gain his liberty, and marched into Auſtraſia, where he conciliated all hearts, was declared duke, drove out his mother-in-law, who perſecuted him, and made the rebels ſubmit to his mercy. He then marched againſt Chilperick II, who, being leſs weak than his predeceſſors, endeavoured to reſtore the ancient rights and authority of the crown, Charles defeated the monarch and his miniſter, whom he even drove before him into Paris; freſh troubles ſuddenly called him back to Auſtraſia; thence he returned into Normandy, where he forced the king to acknowlege him mayor; and after his death, he placed the ſhadow of a king on the throne, who held the ſcepter from him.

him. During theſe tranſactions, news was brought him, that a duke of Saxony had attacked the frontiers on the Rhine, while a duke of Aquitaine, a deſcendant of Clovis, was preparing to avenge the princes of his family. After defeating them both, he met with enemies ſtill more formidable. The Saracens, after triumphing over one half the world, had marched from Spain into Gaul, and threatened to enſlave it. Charles flew to the defence of his country, and, in the plains of Tours, diſplayed thoſe aſtoniſhing talents and valour which entirely cruſhed the army of the Saracens, and ſaved the nation. He died much regretted by France, of which he was ſole maſter. He was formidable to his enemies, over whom he triumphed; deteſted by the clergy, becauſe he had ſtripped them of their poſſeſſions, and adored by the ſoldiers, whom he enriched.

Pepin and Carloman divided his extenſive poſſeſſions between them, and exhibited a ſhadow of royalty in the perſon of Childeric III. The retreat of Carloman, who, out of caprice or devotion, retired into a monaſtery, left Pepin maſter of a power that had no equal in Europe: this prince, tired of wearing the name of mayor, took the reſolution of removing the ſtupid poſterity of Clovis from the throne which they diſgraced. His victories which gained him univerſal eſteem, the favours he conferred on the nobles, his reſtoring the poſſeſſions of the clergy, and in fine, the deciſion of the pope, who pretended that he who had the burthen of the ſcepter, ſhould likewiſe have the honour, ſilenced every ſcruple.

Crown passes from the family of Clovis to that of Pepin.

THE nation aſſembled, and having deprived Childeric, and all the deſcendants of Clovis of the crown, placed it on the head of Pepin, and made it hereditary in his family. While Childeric, ſhut up in a cloiſter, there terminated his misfortunes, Pepin endeavoured to merit his new dignity by freſh triumphs. He diſpoſſed the Lombards of Ravenna, gave the exarchate to the holy ſee, to which he added rich poſſeſſions: he died equally reſpected for his wiſdom and valour.

France,

FRANCE now roſe to the ſummit of power and greatneſs. Charles, the ſon and heir of Pepin, carried his glory to the moſt remote parts of the world. All Germany ſubmitted to his obedience. The kingdom of the Lombards being deſtroyed by his arms, made him maſter of one half of Italy. The Elb, the Ocean, the Pyrenees, and the Baltic, became the boundaries of his dominions. The Roman pontiffs acknowledged him for their ſovereign; the kings of England thought it an honour to have his protection; the emperors of Conſtantinople gloried in his friendſhip and alliance; and the wiſe califf Aaron ſent him teſtimonies of his admiration, from the extremities of Aſia. In the midſt of ſo many triumphs, this great man attracted the ſciences to his court, and exerted his efforts in order to diſperſe the clouds that darkened all the arts.

REFLEC-

REFLECTIONS.

Religions.

IDOLATRY ſtill maintained its ground in the northern parts of Europe. The arms of Pepin and Charles proving victorious in Germany, had ſubjected the people of that country to chriſtianity, who were ready however to ſhake off the yoke of a religion, which they had received with fetters.

ARIANISM fell to the ground with the throne of the Lombards, and the Nicean creed was triumphant in all the churches of the weſt.

THE eaſtern church, that prolific ſource of new ſects, produced two, that were famous in the courſe of this epocha. The Monothelites, who admitted two natures in J. C. and but one will: the author of this whimſical doctrine was a patriarch reſpectable for his learning, his opinion was ſupported by the protection of princes admired for their wiſdom and talents. It diſturbed the empire for ſome time; but was ſuppreſſed at Conſtantinople in the ſixth general council, where both churches united to condemn it.

Iconoclaſts or image breakers.

THE Iconoclaſts, or enemies of images, triumphed a long time. Leo the Iſaurian, having borrowed this doctrine from the Jews, or perhaps the Saracens, endeavoured to eſtabliſh it, with all the zeal of an enthuſiaſt, and the authority of an emperor. His ſon Copronymus, inheriting his opinions, purſued them with ſtill more ardour and violence. The whole empire was in flames, on account of this diſpute. One party was proſtrate before images, while others daſhed them to pieces

with enthuſiaſtic fury. Both ſides offered ſpecious arguments, quoted ſacred texts, and even the authority of the councils. Biſhops mutually excommunicated each other, and the ſeventh general council held at Nice, was not capable of putting a ſtop to thoſe commotions.

In Aſia, we have ſeen one of the moſt aſtoniſhing revolutions that the hiſtory of religions can produce. A man ſunk in obſcurity, poverty and ignorance, in the very loweſt condition of life, forms the plan of a religion, which entirely changes the manners of his country, and procures him the ſcepter. In ten years he ſubjects Arabia, lives and dies reverenced as the favourite and friend of God, and leaves behind him an immortal name, great dominions and ſtill greater expectations. The rapid ſucceſs of this legiſlator is generally attributed to the force of arms, and therefore is juſtly thought no way extraordinary. But thoſe who argue in this manner confound the times. His empire was indeed extended, but not founded by arms. In order to have made conqueſts, it was neceſſary to have a powerful army. To collect ſuch a conſiderable body of ſoldiers, we muſt previouſly ſuppoſe many families, and conſequently numberleſs ſubjects dependant on the will of their chief. But Mahomet, at the middle ſtage of life, had not a ſingle man under his command. He was therefore obliged to gain over all thoſe who obeyed his orders, when he firſt had recourſe to arms; it then follows that he had ſeduced great numbers. Properly ſpeaking, there was but one cauſe of the riſe and power of Mahomet, and

that

that was his aſtoniſhing genius. A man conceives an immenſe project, has the firmneſs to contemplate, without being terrified at the dangers that attend it, and to conſider it in all its greatneſs, without being dazzled by the ſplendor and glory of his deſign; he has the courage to enter into all the minute particulars, the patience to wait for the moment of execution, the prudence to declare himſelf at the proper time, and the art to make the moſt of every circumſtance. There is a pleaſure in admiring this great man, (if an impoſtor merits that appellation) there is, I ſay, a pleaſure in admiring him, while he ſtudied that which has the moſt ſtriking effect on the minds of men in general, and directed his views to that object, examining the particular temper, manners, and the various ſyſtems of religion of his country, and forming his ſyſtem agreeable to all thoſe different ſhades: he was pliant and humble, haughty and reſolute, as occaſion required, and continually employed force and cunning with equal ſucceſs. By his abilities he made himſelf ſo abſolute a ſovereign, without any other pretenſions to the throne, that there was not even a ſhadow of rebellion while he reigned.

It is an error to ſuppoſe it was by allowing a free indulgence to the paſſions that Mahomet gained ſo many followers: his doctrine, however abſurd and ſtupid it may ſeem when compared with chriſtianity, was ſevere and rigorous, in compariſon to the extravagant and licentious manners that prevailed in Arabia. Frequent prayers, charities, faſting, the prohibition of that crime which

defeats the views of nature, by deceiving her with reſpect to the object of her deſires, the denying the uſe of wine, and the forgiveneſs of injuries, were all ſo many yokes on a people, with whom the paſſions, inflamed by example, had obliterated every appearance of juſtice. 'Twas not therefore, as is generally aſſerted, by favouring licentiouſneſs, that Mahomet made ſo many proſelytes to his opinions, but by propoſing a more noble and virtuous ſyſtem than that which they before followed, which is the only method of perſuading any people whatever. Men love the practice of vice, but they are alſo fond of contemplating virtue. If we examine different ſects, we ſhall find that they have generally affected the appearance of auſterity, and if they at any time indulged licentious manners, they carefully concealed it; the reaſon is, virtue has ſuch a natural influence over our minds, that we cannot deſtroy it, but by aſſuming her venerable dreſs.

THE changes made in religion by Mahomet, produced the greateſt revolutions in ſtates and empires. Arabia, till then ſcarce known, became famous by her triumphs, and the ſucceſſors of the prophet, treading in his ſteps, ſwallowed up thoſe extenſive provinces of Perſia, that were inacceſſible to the arms of the Romans. The rich countries of Aſia Minor, of which they ſtripped the ſucceſſors of the Cæſars; Paleſtine, ſo dear to the Chriſtians on many accounts; Egypt, ſo fertile in reſources, Lybia, Mauritania, almoſt all Africa ſubmitted to the yoke; and Spain opening a road into Europe, they threatened to give laws to all our hemiſphere.

THE

THE Arabs were naturally a warlike people; they had been an object of uneaſineſs to the Roman ſenate under the firſt emperors; but their various tribes, not having united in one deſign, never had any remarkable ſucceſs. When Mahomet had made them one body, unanimous in opinion, conſpiring in the ſame deſign, marching under one head, and uniting diſcipline with ardour, it is eaſy to conceive that the Arabs muſt act a conſiderable part on the theatre of the world.

THE firſt ſucceſſors of Mahomet were all warlike princes, who had not only a paſſion, but capacity for war. This is nothing extraordinary in a nation, where there was no other court but the camp; where princes were in a manner born in the very midſt of arms, where the ſovereign was never diſtinguiſhed but as the commander in chief of the army, where the only method to conciliate eſteem, or even obedience, was to make conqueſts; and where the deſpot, drawing nothing from a barren country, and the labour of his ſubjects, who were ſtrangers to any other trade but that of war, was obliged to attack his neighbours in order to ſupport his expences.

THE califfs began with ſubjecting thoſe parts of Arabia that had been overlooked by the legiſlator, they flew to receive the yoke. Thoſe people readily ſubmitted to laws that originated in their own country, which raiſed it from obſcurity, to power and dominion. Beſides, we have obſerved that their former worſhip was ſhocking; they therefore cheerfully embraced a religion, which, without denying them any of thoſe delicate pleaſures

that

that reaſon allows, prohibited thoſe extravagant enjoyments alone, that it condemns. In a word, their paſſion for booty made them joyfully march under the banners of an army that was proceeding to ſhare in the ſpoils of the rich countries of Aſia.

When the Saracens entered Aſia, all that was then known of that country was ſubject to two famous people, the Romans and Perſians. The Euphrates ſeparated both powers.

The Perſians were the only nation that had not ſubmitted to the yoke of Rome. They frequently carried terror into the very heart of the country belonging to their rivals, even in the moſt flouriſhing times of the republic, they never treated with Auguſtus but as equals; and, under his ſucceſſors, the Parthians frequently interrupted their proſperity. In the ſecond century, Severus and Aurelian, and Diocletian in the third, penetrated a great way, it is true, into Perſia; but thoſe advantages were rapid and ſucceſsful incurſions, and not conqueſts. Under their ſucceſſors, the Parthians paſſed the frontiers in turn, and more than once planted their ſtandards in the provinces of the empire: under Conſtantius their boldneſs alarmed even the new capital. Julian was indeed entirely qualified to check thoſe formidable enemies, but the death of that hero made them victorious; and under Jovian, a ſhameful treaty diſgraced the majeſty of the empire. If Theodoſius reſtored part of its ſplendor, it vaniſhed under his weak progeny; the Parthians reſumed the aſcendant, and from that time preſerved a viſible ſuperiority. The Tigris no longer ſerved as a barrier;

rier; the Euphrates quickly flowed under their obedience, the victorious arms of their princes penetrated into Paleſtine, and the great Coſrhoes even entered Jeruſalem, and carried off the deareſt object of the devotion of Chriſtians, and the moſt precious monument of their faith. Perſia was then in the meridian of her greatneſs, when, all on a ſudden, the exceſſes of the conqueror, and his misfortunes ſhook the throne; his cruel family were divided, the members of that great body quarelled among themſelves, and deſtroyed each other. The Saracens appeared on this critical occaſion, and in three campaigns made a complete conqueſt of the moſt ancient and flouriſhing empire in the univerſe.

The Romans were now but the ſhadow of what they had been, they had pompous titles, without power or glory. They had loſt the weſt, and it is eaſy to conceive what a dreadful ſhock that fall muſt have produced in the eaſt. The very efforts made by the empire to preſerve the remains of Italy, had contributed to exhauſt the ſtate. Beſides, Aſia had been ſcarce leſs ravaged than Europe. The emperors of new Rome had been, in general, almoſt as weak, as the laſt Cæſars of the old; and revolutions, that were no leſs frequent, were become ſtill more bloody there. We are ſhocked when we reflect on the diſorders that ſhook the throne of Conſtantinople: the diadem was a fatal bandage, which ſeemed to mark out the victims that ambition was to ſtrike. The reſtleſs and uneaſy temper of the Greeks, was a new ſource of weakneſs. Great numbers led away by the deſire

of

of greater perfection, but ſeduced in fact, by the charms of indolence, ſo pleaſing in hot climates, crouded into cloiſters, became idle ſpectators, and of no uſe in the defence of the ſtate. The ſublime doctrines of chriſtianity into which reſtleſs men endeavoured to penetrate, ſerved only to miſlead them, and thoſe raſh people drew numberleſs followers into their errors. Hence diſputes aroſe, hatred and diviſions which ſhook the ſtate, and inſenſibly gave it the moſt dangerous wounds. The emperors, careleſs of the dangers that laid ſiege to their throne, ſpent their time in diſcuſſing theological queſtions, and ſaw, without emotion, the califfs at the head of armies, ſtripping the empire of the fineſt provinces of Aſia and Africa.

Every one is acquainted with the cauſes of the invaſion of Spain. The erroneous conſtitution of the ſtate; the troubles occaſioned by unjuſt elections; the ambition of thoſe families who had ſwayed the ſcepter, and could not behold it without regret in the poſſeſſion of another; the extravagant power of the clergy; and ſuperſtition, which had relaxed the courage of the people, were equally the cauſes of that revolution, as the crime of Roderigo, and the vengeance taken by a father who was no leſs unfortunate than criminal.

In ſuch fortunate circumſtances, a ſingle century was ſufficient for the ſucceſſors of Mahomet, to form the greateſt empire that has ſubſiſted on our globe. They ſaw the Ganges and Tagus under their dominion, and quietly ſeated in their palace at Damaſcus, gave orders to attack India and conquer France.

FRANCE exhibited objects equally intereſting. The kings who deſcended from the founder of the empire, at firſt appeared in the higheſt point of greatneſs. They as ſuddenly fell into obſcurity, in a manner that has no example. Without being dethroned, they were held in chains by their miniſters. A powerful family raiſed themſelves, and ſucceeded in governing the whole ſtate, in the name of phantoms whom they crowned, until at length, grown weary of acting the ſecond part, they wreſted the ſcepter out of the feeble hands of the monarch. Under thoſe new maſters, France knew no bounds to her power; one half of Europe ſubmitted to her yoke, and the Pepins held the ſame authority in that part of the world, that the califfs had in the other two. We muſt go back to the firſt founders in order to trace the ſources of thoſe events. The ſucceſſors of Clovis were all cruel, and conſequently could not but alienate the hearts of the people. They ſupported themſelves by fear, while they had courage, but as ſoon as they added effeminacy to cruelty, contempt uniting with hatred, it was eaſy for able miniſters to ſhake the authority of thoſe unfortunate maſters.

WITH the firſt race of kings, it was a conſtant cuſtom to divide the monarchy. Auſtraſia and Normandy formed two ſeparate kingdoms which though compoſed of the ſame nation, had nevertheleſs different intereſts. Brunehaut and Fredegunda ſowed the ſeeds of hatred between the two ſtates, which time ſerved only to increaſe. Clotaire II and Dagobert I were in hopes of removing thoſe evils, by uniting both kingdoms; but

the

the people of Auſtraſia having forced the latter to give them a king, the monarch conſented on ſuch conditions, as ruined the authority of thoſe princes. He nominated a mayor for his ſon, and whether it was that he dreaded his early youth and inexperience, or that he wiſhed to retain the principal power, he made Sigebert entirely dependant on the miniſter; who, thus made the diſpoſer of favours and puniſhments, accuſtomed the people to turn their eyes on him only, and to diſregard the favour of the prince. The weakneſs of Sigebert augmented the evil; the merit of the firſt Pepin, made a contraſt that was deciſive; the authority of the mayors grew boundleſs; and two years after the death of the monarch, one of thoſe imperious miniſters carried his inſolence ſo far, as to drive the heir from the throne, in order to make room for one of his own ſons. This uſurper, it is true, did not ſucceed, but the example ſhewed what might be attempted. Pepin II had more art in his deſigns, taking advantage of the want of iſſue in the branch of Auſtraſia, and properly fomenting the hatred of the nobles againſt the Norman line, he ſucceeded in depriving the royal family of one of their crowns, and this was a powerful means to ſtrip them of the other.

DAGOBERT, the benefactor of the church, ſo much extolled in her annals, and ſo greatly applauded by her miniſters, was a prince equally voluptuous, avaricious and cruel. He ſet no bounds to his lewd inclinations, he made his people groan under the burthen of taxes, he ſacrificed the moſt virtuous men to his ſuſpicions, and ſuch

was

was the idea people had formed of him, that they did not even ſcruple to aſcribe to him the death of his nephew, whom he envied for the poſſeſſion of Aquitaine. A government ſo ſevere and oppreſſive effectually contributed to fix an odium on the poſterity of Clovis; and as this reign was followed by a long minority, the nobles irritated by the vices of the father, took advantage of the troubles which a regency naturally produces. Clovis II, when he paſſed his minority, inſtead of repairing thoſe evils, did but increaſe them. Being too weak to govern the helm of ſtate, he ſaw no other way to avoid the ſtorms that were gathering, than to commit the reins of government to mayors, who took poſſeſſion of them for ever. The premature death of the king occaſioned a new minority: this was another circumſtance that aſſiſted the miniſter to eſtabliſh the power he had uſurped. The regent Bathilda, whom love had raiſed from captivity to the throne, had beauty and virtue, but no talents. The mayor Ebroin eaſily impoſed on that pious princeſs, and after making every advantage of her favour, in order to eſtabliſh the authority of his office, on a foundation that nothing could ſhake, confined the queen in a monaſtery, and became the tyrant of his ſovereign. Thus the two kingdoms were at the ſame time in ſubjection to the mayors, who poſſeſſed nearly the ſame degree of power and authority. Ebroin might have made himſelf a ſovereign in Normandy, as Pepin had done in Auſtraſia, if his talents, which raiſed admiration, had been ſupported by any virtues; but his cruelties deſtroyed him, and opened an ex-

tenſive

tenſive field to the ambition of Pepin. In the confuſion which the aſſaſſination of his rival occaſioned in Normandy, it was no difficult matter for one of the greateſt men of the age, ſeconded by all the forces of a powerful kingdom, to ſubdue a feeble monarch, who had been long accuſtomed to bow the ſcepter under the yoke of a miniſter. Thus Pepin Heriſtel became abſolute maſter of two extenſive monarchies, that enjoyed tranquility at home by his wiſdom, and were made formidable to other powers by his valour. The heroic qualities of Charles Martel, and the honour he had to ſave Europe from the chains of the Saracens, completed the fortune and greatneſs of that family. It was eaſy therefore for Pepin in ſhort to rid himſelf of a phantom of a king; his father and uncle had made the revolution; nor was it more difficult for Charlemagne to extend the limits of his dominions ſo far. He was a great man himſelf, and maſter beſides of an empire ſuperior to all others in the weſt.

The Lombards with inferior poſſeſſions, weakened by their diviſions, and undermined by the ſecret deſigns of the popes, were in no condition to reſiſt a prince who attacked them with all the forces of Germany and Gaul. The Greeks, trembling for their capital which the Saracens threatened, were far from being able to defend dominions that lay remote from Italy. The Saxons who appear with ſo much glory in the hiſtory of this hero, checked his progreſs a-while by their valour. But what could in the end reſult from all the efforts of an ignorant people, who had no reſource

ſource but their courage, and fought without harmony, order, or diſcipline, againſt the troops of a nation inured to war for a whole century, and accuſtomed to conqueſt and victory.

Popes. THE power of the Pepins was the ſource of the ſubſequent riſe and authority of the popes. Their policy had been long endeavouring to form a throne for themſelves, out of the ruins of that of Conſtantinople. We have lately ſeen them labour for the accompliſhment of this great object with a wiſdom, art, and perſeverance, that at length, in a manner, forced ſucceſs. They had already ruined the authority of the emperors, and enlarged their ſtate with a part of the exarchate. They now wanted nothing but a title to poſſeſſion, the war of the Lombards, which their policy kindled, furniſhed them with this. The Greeks in vain demanded a reſtitution of the lands of which Pepin and Charlemagne had ſtripped that nation; they were made the reward with which the conquerors diſcharged the obligations they owed to the pontiff: but thoſe lands and manors, and this ſovereignty, were not the only advantages that the popes reaped from the exaltation of the deſcendants of Martel; it was the occaſion alſo that gave birth to the extravagant pretenſions which thoſe pontiffs afterwards made to the temporal rights of princes. We have obſerved, that when Pepin reſolved to depoſe Childeric, he thought proper to be countenanced by the authority of the biſhops of Rome. This act of the uſurper was a ſort of acknowlegement on his part, that the heads of the church had at leaſt a right to be con-

ſulted when people were for changing their maſter. However falſe thoſe maxims were, they did not neglect to make the moſt of them at Rome. They were received with veneration throughout all the French territories; the new king was intereſted in ſupporting them, as they were his principal title. The French dominions, by the victories of the firſt kings of the ſecond line, comprehended almoſt all the weſt. Charlemagne ſhortly after received the name of emperor from the popes; this was a new favour which promoted the views of the pontiffs ſtill farther. Thus thoſe opinions, till then unheard of, gradually ſpread over all Europe; they were then weak and diſguiſed, but when time and ignorance had matured them, they were proclaimed openly.

The authority of the heads of the church was ſupported by the great credit which biſhops enjoyed. At the courts of princes they generally preſided in the great councils, were the contrivers of plots, the ſoul of intrigues, and bore a part in every revolution that happened. Arnoul and Cunibert in Auſtraſia, Ouen and Leger in Normandy, held the reigns of government with the mayors of the palace, and ſometimes counterbalanced the authority of thoſe miniſters. Their power was ſtill greater in Spain, where the councils determined the moſt important affairs of the kingdom, and impoſed the moſt humiliating penance on the monarch: the monks did not perform a leſs part on the ſtage of the world, which they boaſted to have relinquiſhed: monaſteries were erected for them in every part of Europe, in which

which princes diſplayed all their magnificence, and the great ſeemed to vie with emulation for the honour of endowing thoſe holy retreats with the richeſt poſſeſſions.

Manners.

Excess of devotion ſeems to have been the prevailing taſte of the times. The objects of religion were invoked to guaranty treaties and negociations; the greateſt quarrels were terminated by relics of ſaints; and every ſucceſs people had, was aſcribed to the merit of ſome particular vow. We read in the hiſtory of the Gothic princes, that Vamba was entirely indebted for a ſignal victory to his care in puniſhing, after an indecent manner, ſome ſoldiers who had been guilty of adultery. With thoſe ſentiments of blind devotion, were united all the extravagancy and exceſſes of ſuperſtition. The chronicles of thoſe times abound with nothing but inchantments, magic and witchcraft. The devils were accuſed of every misfortune, they were the authors of ſtorms and plagues, and hell was made reſponſible for all the calamities that afflicted the earth.

All this credulity was however far from contributing to a reformation of manners; they were ſhockingly depraved in thoſe times. The moſt pious princes thought it allowable to ſatisfy the moſt atrocious revenge, and to commit the moſt barefaced acts of perfidy. Dagobert, in going on a pilgrimage, murdered an innocent nobleman, after having invited him under the maſk of friendſhip and confidence. Charlemagne, whoſe virtues have been extolled, ordered four thouſand Saxons, whom he had demanded as victims, to be butchered;

chered; ſome time after he ſlaughtered thirty thouſand more. A biſhop, celebrated for his ſanctity, made uſe of the aſcendant he had over the mind of a rich widow in perſuading her to make a will in favour of his church, to the ruin of her family. The huſband of the lawful heireſs having petitioned for juſtice againſt the fraud, was aſſaſſinated ſome time after by the ſervants of the prelate; however well founded the ſuſpicions againſt this good biſhop were, it did not prevent his name from being conſecrated on the altar. Polygamy was publicly authoriſed. The princes of thoſe times had ſeveral wives, and it does not appear that the heads of the church paſſed the leaſt cenſure on them. Pepin Heriſtel lived in this manner, Charles Martel likewiſe, and even Charlemagne himſelf, whoſe name we find in many of the books of martyrs. How could the eccleſiaſtics attempt to condemn thoſe abuſes, when they themſelves ſet the example? Moſt of the canons of the church that were written in thoſe days, make mention of the wives and concubines of the clergy, and take notice of the weak and uſeleſs efforts that were made to prevent thoſe abuſes.

Arts and ſciences.

ALL ſcience and learning were extinguiſhed in the weſt. The efforts uſed by Charlemagne to revive them, the laws he dictated, his regulations that were admirable for the times, and his chapters of inſtitutes, which do ſo much honour to his heart, prove the extreme ignorance that prevailed in that extenſive empire. He was obliged to ſend for ſome learned men from Ireland. But in what did the learning and knowlege of thoſe men conſiſt?

ſiſt? Alcvien, the wonder of the age, had read ſome of the fathers of the church, he was acquainted with monaſtic conſtitutions, qualified to diſpute about the proper time of celebrating the feaſt of Eaſter, and could converſe in latin, that more reſembled the ſtyle of a barbarian, than the language of Cicero. We meet with general aſſemblies of the nation, where the ſtudies are pointed out that are neceſſary for thoſe who aſpire to the moſt eminent dignities in the church: the Gregorian chant, the compoſition of the church calendar, and the elements of grammar are mentioned. In fine, the biſhops themſelves had all the learning required, if they could but tranſlate the Lord's prayer. The arts were not better known; the ſtriking clock, ſent as a preſent from the califf of the Saracens to Charlemagne, was looked upon as a thing miraculous; and the organs, with which the pope Vitalian adorned ſome churches in Rome, were conſidered as prodigies.

History.

We find no traces of hiſtory in thoſe days but in ſome few chronicles compiled by monks, who judged of mankind according to the benefits or injuries they had received from them. If a great man deprived the clergy of a ſmall portion of their immenſe riches, in order to reward the valour of his ſoldiers, he was pronounced a reprobate, and holy biſhops pretended they ſaw the ſacrilegious ſinner burning in the flames of hell. Should a monaſtery, that was at variance with the convent of the hiſtorian, happen to be attacked by an epidemic diſeaſe, an angel was made to deſcend from heaven, and in one night, exterminate

the impious rivals of his brothers. On the other hand, a prince, who profuſely beſtowed the poſſeſſions of the ſtate on the altar, though guilty of the moſt enormous crimes, and plunged in the vileſt debauchery, was however declared a miracle of virtue, and his memory honoured as a divinity.—Thus ſuperſtition and intereſt governed the pen of the hiſtorian, and he introduced the aſſiſtance of miracles on every occaſion, according to his friendſhip or hatred.

Fine arts. THE fine arts ſtill flouriſhed at Conſtantinople. The maſter-pieces that enriched the capital, preſented models to inſtruct the artiſt, and in a manner force them to aim at true beauty. Moſt of the emperors protected them, even ſome of them thought it no diſgrace to the purple, to cultivate thoſe fruits of taſte and genius. The ſciences continued to decline among the Greeks. The ſecond council of Nice, which was compoſed of the moſt learned men of the empire, produced the moſt falſe and abſurd facts as authentic; they ſupported their venerable deciſions by fabulous relations, and made falſhood the baſis of the oracles of truth.

AMONG the muſſulmen the manners varied every age. Under the firſt califfs they were rough and barbarous; they breathed nothing but war and a zeal for religion, and were ſtrangers to every thing elſe. In the reign of the laſt Ommiades the manners were more civilized, and courage, equally intrepid, was leſs barbarous. Under the family of Abbas the manners were entirely refined. Delicacy was introduced at court and known to the principal cities, and the revival of letters produced

duced arts and ſciences. We muſt not however conclude, that the court of thoſe emperors reſembled that of Auguſtus and the Antonines. The Arabs, indeed, made efforts that merited a place in the hiſtory of the fine arts, but a falſe taſte continually disfigured their works. All their poetry and eloquence conſiſted of extravagant ſubjects, high flown thoughts, and a confuſed jumble of figures, that were generally forced and unnatural. They admired Homer, whom they had tranſlated, but they were far from imitating the ſimplicity of that great painter of nature. Their architecture, loaded with vain ornaments, ſhewed nothing but the paltry merit of ſurmounting difficulties. Chimerical ſympathies prevailed in their medical ſtudies, the philoſopher's ſtone was the object of their chymical reſearches; and aſtronomy, with them, was not ſo much conſidered as the reſpectable ſcience of knowing the heavenly bodies, as the abſurd art of determining by their motions the deſtiny of men, and the impenetrable depths of futurity. Bagdad daily became the center of politneſs and knowlege, and the heads of a religion that was founded on ignorance, were then the moſt powerful protectors of ſciences in the world.

END OF THE SECOND EPOCHA.

THIRD EPOCHA.

CHARLEMAGNE.

The Empire of the Weſt reſtored by the French.

From the Year 800 to 962 of Chriſt.

State of the earth.

AT the commencement of this epocha, three powers governed our hemiſphere.

CHARLEMAGNE was maſter of all France; the greater part of Germany; one half of Italy; a portion of Spain; and was beſides, the arbiter or terror of all other parts of the Weſt. Irene, ſmeared with the blood of her ſon, reigned at Conſtantinople, and gave laws from the Adriatic ſea to the Boſphorus. Tottering on a throne continually ſhaken by rebellion and enthuſiaſtic rage, diſtreſſed on the north by the Bulgarians, attacked on every other ſide by the Saracens, with illuſtrious talents and diſgraceful foibles exhibiting an extravagant mixture of great virtues, and ſtill greater crimes; this celebrated woman was ſcarce able to preſerve the ſhadow of ſo auguſt an empire. Aaron-al-Raſchid, in poſſeſſion of one half of Aſia, and all the northern coaſts of Africa, ſaw the Immaus and Atlas ſubject to his ſcepter, and throughout an empire of two thouſand leagues, heard his various and numerous ſubjects unite to bleſs his name.

The reſt of the earth preſented none but weak and obſcure ſtates, who followed the impreſſions of the ruling powers. Denmark, the moſt diſtinguiſhed among the former, oppoſed the ambition of Charles with ſucceſs; and while Godfrey, who then reigned, ſhut the entrance of the peninſula againſt the troops of the conqueror, he ſent forth thoſe ſwarms of adventurers from Norway, who already began to infeſt the coaſts of the empire. Sweden exhauſted by emigrations, made no appearance on the theatre of the world. Ruſſia had not yet raiſed her head. Poland became an elective ſtate, but equally ignorant of policy and manners, was far from attracting any notice. Bohemia was a prey to a barbarous people called Sclavonians. The deſire of plunder had drawn them into Germany; the fear of arms obliged them to retire; and avidity continually forced them to return. The Huns, ſucceſſors to thoſe barbarians, who had ravaged Europe, having at length ſettled in ancient Panonnia, diſturbed the empire of the weſt, and laid waſte the frontiers; while by the name of Avari, they carried terror to the very gates of the capital of the eaſt.

Spain was in flames from the Pyrenees to the ſtreights of Gibraltar. The kings of Corduva, who had the art to make that rich conqueſt independent of the power of the califfs, had purchaſed the ſubmiſſion of their accomplices by conceſſions, which made the latter too powerful, and planted the ſeeds of eternal diſcord between the ſubjects and the ſovereign. The Saracens, while in arms againſt each other, were at the ſame time obliged

to

to defend themſelves againſt the Chriſtians, who attacked them continually: the latter, though leſs numerous, leſs rich, and even intelligent than their enemies, were however inured to danger, inſtructed by misfortune, and united among themſelves, and therefore invincible: by courage and perſeverance they extended the limits of their little territory.

THE Saracens, Greeks, and various tyrants, contended for, and rent the ſouthern parts of Italy, and the adjacent iſlands. Rome, ſubject in appearance to Charles, groaned in fact under all the confuſion of anarchy; the inhabitants were inclined to favour the pope, who being ſovereign of the neighbouring territories, daily augmented his temporal authority; while his ſpiritual power was grown boundleſs, and held almoſt all churches under the yoke of his ſee.

VENICE already diſplayed that policy and wiſdom which has made her ſo illuſtrious. Situate between two empires, ſhe made a ſhew of acknowleging that for her ſovereign, whoſe weakneſs was no way formidable; and under the cloak of this empty title, ſhe avoided the yoke of that power from which ſhe had every thing to dread. This republic, the only one that then exiſted upon earth, already exhibited a government, laws, magiſtrates, and a doge; ſhe had troops and ſhips, and commerce was confined to her ports alone.

ENGLAND was now preparing to emerge from her obſcurity. Moſt of the petty ſtates into which ſhe was divided, were now united to the kingdom of the weſtern Saxons: Egbert laboured with no leſs

leſs wiſdom than valour, to accompliſh that great object, and laid the foundation of that glorious part, which his ſucceſſors were to perform on the theatre of the univerſe.

The empire of the weſt.

SUCH was the ſtate of the earth, when Leo III, united with the Roman people to acknowlege Charles emperor of the weſt; and revived that title which had been aboliſhed for three centuries, but was ſtill dear to the world, and reſpected even by thoſe who deſtroyed it. The pontiff placed the crown of the Cæſars on the head of the monarch, inveſted him with the purple, and then fell at his feet. The repeated ſhouts and acclamations in the church, where this ſcene was exhibited, were quickly ecchoed through the city, whoſe pride was flattered by that image of their ancient ſplendor. Charles, who in the habit of the Cæſars, appeared more venerable to his new ſubjects, exerciſed every privilege of a ſovereign in Rome: he ſat in judgement on the pope, preſerved to himſelf the right of confirming his ſucceſſors, and then quitted thoſe vain honours, in order to drive out the barbarians, or avenge his wrongs. He received intelligence that a colony of Normans had attacked the maritime provinces of France; he marched haſtily againſt them, and after obliging them to fly, erected forts at the mouths of the rivers, to defend the entrance of France. At the ſame time he diſpatched his ſons againſt thoſe people who infeſted the frontiers. Charles was ſent to attack the Hungarians; Pepin to oppoſe the Venetians and Greeks; and Lewis againſt the Saracens; while he himſelf entered Saxony; the inhabitants

habitants of which after repeated inſurrections and ſubmiſſions, had now ſhaken off the double yoke of religion and empire. Rivers of blood flowed beneath the ſword of the mercileſs conqueror, and a barbarous inquiſition, being eſtabliſhed againſt thoſe men, whoſe only crime was that of courage, ſpread death and horror on the banks of the Weſer. The emperor of Conſtantinople in the mean time, terrified by the arms of Charles, and now thinking himſelf happy to be treated as an equal by the man whom before he deſpiſed as a barbarian, not only acknowleged him as his colleague, but ceded one half of Italy to him. The obſtinate Godfrey was obliged to do him homage; the Saracens of the Pyrenees preſented him with a tribute; the Huns overpowered in thoſe places to which they had retreated, became his ſubjects; the califf in new preſents ſent him freſh pledges of his reſpect and admiration. At the ſame time this prince continued to eſtabliſh good order, redoubled his efforts for the reſtoration of learning, and ſtudied with careful attention the moſt minute objects of government. In the midſt of thoſe labours, he terminated one of the longeſt and moſt glorious reigns that is recorded in hiſtory. He was a great prince, and great man; and had he appeared in times leſs barbarous, would perhaps have been equal to Alexander or Antoninus. We cannot ſufficiently admire the extent and happy conſiſtency of his deſigns; his love of order, and taſte for the arts; his unſhaken firmneſs, that made every thing ſubmit to his authority; and eſpecially that aſtoniſhing activity which continually hurried

hurried him to the different extremities of his extenſive dominions. But prudence can never forgive his blind profuſion to men, who are always more reſpectable with the moderate gifts of fortune, than in the poſſeſſion of great riches. In this prodigality originiated the misfortunes experienced by his ſucceſſors. In fine, the blood of ſo many thouſand Saxons ſacrificed by enthuſiaſm and policy, has thrown a cloud over his glory, which will be ever preſent to the eye of humanity.

Lewis I, the only ſon who ſurvived this hero, ſucceeded to his dominions in France and Germany, while Bernard, the nephew of Lewis reigned, agreeable to the will of his Grandfather, over Italy and the adjacent iſlands. The debonair, began his reign with acts of cruelty. He puniſhed with imprudent ſeverity the exceſſes of his ſiſters, drove them out with indecency, and put their lovers to death with barbarous torments. After conquering his nephew, who, as the eldeſt of the children of Charlemagne, had at leaſt ſome plauſible pretenſions, he ordered his eyes to be put out when that young prince came to ſubmit and embrace him. The nephew died under that inhuman execution. He then ſacrificed to his revenge the nobles who had followed the unfortunate prince; and giving a looſe to all the unfeeling cruelty of a weak and ſuſpicious mind, impriſoned his relations, and diſpatched ſome who were criminal becauſe they had talents to excite his fears and miſtruſt. His affrighted imagination being ſtruck afterwards with the terrors which religion inſpired, he lamented his crimes, and thought to expiate them

them by acts of meanneſs. He gave himſelf up to the blind exceſſes of devotion, which contracted ſtill farther his narrow mind, and made him an object of contempt and miſery. The church extolled his piety, while the ſtate deplored his weakneſs. His family was a ſcene of confuſion, and the empire of tumult and rebellion. The Normans ravaged the coaſts of the ocean with impunity, the Saracens were maſters of all the iſlands of Italy, and carried fire and deſolation to the very gates of Rome. The people of Britanny made themſelves independent; Frioul ſhook of the yoke and choſe new maſters; the Gaſcons founded and erected a throne, at the foot of the Pyrenees; the popes uſurped his authority in Rome, and made a jeſt of his moſt valuable privileges. Lewis in the mean time finding his hands too weak to hold the reins of government, committed them indiſcriminately to all who were near his perſon. But equally a dupe to his paſſions and confidence, he was betrayed by one of his wives, who perſuaded him to ſtrip himſelf in favour of his ſons; diſhonoured by another who influenced him to chuſe her galant for his miniſter; inſulted by his children who employed the very power he had given them againſt himſelf; deceived by the clergy, who took advantage of his piety in extorting the moſt dangerous privileges from him. We here meet with one of the moſt ſhocking ſcenes that is to be found in the annals of the world. Unnatural and barbarous ſons were in arms againſt a father, who had heaped favours upon them; a pontiff choſen a mediator in the impious quarrel

quarrel covering himſelf with the maſk of friendſhip, delivered the too credulous prince, into the hands of his enemies; biſhops whom their ſovereign had loaded with his bounties, cited him to a trial equally ridiculous and ſhameful; the majeſty of the diadem was trampled upon, and the altars ſtood witneſſes of thoſe crimes; the weak emperor was obliged to acknowlege publicly the lewdneſs and debaucheries of his conſort, loaded with indignities, depoſed, ſcourged with rods, and ſhut up in a cloiſter, where cruelty was added to inſult. Compaſſion for his misfortunes, reſtored him to the throne; contempt threw him from it a ſecond time; and though he was reeſtabliſhed again, it was only to be the ſlave of thoſe very eccleſiaſtics who had dethroned him. Factions again revived and continually diſturbed his peace, until the weight and bitterneſs of affliction, put an end to his life, with his long and miſerable reign.

Lothaire, Lewis, and Charles, celebrated the funeral of their father in a manner worthy of themſelves. Three armies appeared in the field animated by the hatred and reſentment of their leaders, paſſions that are ever violent when they happen between brothers. The ambition of Lothaire, who would ſtrip his younger brothers, forced the latter to unite in the plains of Fontenoy, where one hundred thouſand French met in arms for the quarrel of three deſpicable princes, and laviſhed that blood which might have protected the ſtate. Lothaire was vanquiſhed and obliged to conſent to a Diviſion. With the title of emperor,

emperor, he preſerved Italy, Provence, and the fertile countries ſituate between the Saone and the Rhine, part of which ſtill retains his name. Lewis had Germany; and France fell to the ſhare of Charles, the youngeſt of the three brothers. The articles of agreement were ſcarce ſigned, when the injuſt Lothaire meditated to infringe them; but being interrupted in his deſigns, that libidinous and cruel prince ſuddenly gave himſelf up to extravagant devotion, and terminated the life of a tyrant under the habit of a monk.

Lewis II, his ſon and ſucceſſor to the empire, did not degenerate ſo far from the blood of Charlemagne. He recovered ſome authority in Rome; he expeled the duke of Beneventum who attempted to ſhake off the yoke, and forced him to take ſhelter among the mountains of Corſica; he defeated his uncles in their endeavours to incroach upon his territories; he marched againſt the Saracens who ravaged Italy, and, in order to force them to retire from that country, carried the war into Africa, where he gave hopes of the greateſt ſucceſs, until death ſuddenly ſnatched him away in the flower of his youth. Germany was ſcarce able to ſupport herſelf under Charles *the Fat*; France experienced every miſery under Charles *the Bald*; the Normans laid waſte the fineſt provinces with impunity; the nobles made a jeſt of authority; anarchy and the barbarians rent the kingdom, while the weak and puſillanimous ſovereign did nothing but aſſemble councils, or order forms of prayer. This prince however, who could not govern the dominions he had, was

in

in continual motion to uſurp other territories: he flew to Rome, where he meanly ſolicited the imperial Crown, which he obtained only by giving up the moſt precious prerogatives. After his return to France he ſtill looked on with an eye of tranquility, while the Normans and rebels diſtreſſed and ruined his ſubjects; he was entirely engroſſed by the idle ſuperſtitions which agitated that age of ignorance and controverſy. At his death, which the treachery of a phyſician accelerated, the empire did not devolve to his ſon. Charles *the Fat*, was already maſter of Germany, to which he added Italy, with the title of Auguſtus. France recovered a little under Lewis *the Liſper*, and formed the greateſt expectations under Lewis and Carloman, who divided the territories of their father between them. Thoſe princes revived ſome ſparks of the genius of the Pepins; and their harmony, which has diſtinguiſhed them, gave ſome check to the attempts of the nobles, and the ravages of the barbarians. After their reign, which was too ſhort to repair the misfortunes of the ſtate, the nation rejected their brother, who was ſtill an infant, and were in hopes of relieving the public diſtreſs, by conferring the ſcepter on Charles *the Fat*, who was already maſter of Italy and Germany. The power of Charlemagne might be expected to revive under a great grandſon, who united all his extenſive poſſeſſions. But power which gives additional luſtre to genius, ſerved only to expoſe the weakneſs of Charles. All was trouble and confuſion under the weak monarch, and the miſeries as well as diſturbances were become deſperate.

Indignation armed thouſands. Charles ſuddenly plunged headlong from ſo many thrones, eſcaped falling a victim only through contempt; he was confined in a wretched village where he was near periſhing for want, and avoided his melancholy fate, but by begging the weak and mortifying aſſiſtance of a baſtard of his family.

HENCE we may truly date the fall of the family of the Pepins, and the real epocha of feudal government. Out of the ruins of the throne of Charles *the Fat*, were formed thoſe numerous principalities that have been known by ſo many different names. The dukes and earls in France and Italy; the margraves, landgraves, and burgraves, in Germany; who were before nothing but temporary and dependant governors, now made themſelves abſolute in the provinces committed to their care; and by a double uſurpation, loaded the people with chains which they had ſhaken off. Though the neceſſity of defending themſelves againſt the Normans, obliged them to unite and acknowlege a chief, he was not however a ſovereign whom they dreaded, but a mere equal, to whom they gave a more pompous title, and paid vain honours.—Thus the feudal adminiſtration was formed, that is a deſpotic ariſtocracy, ſimilar to that in Poland at preſent, by which the nobles were abſolute maſters of their vaſſals, equal among themſelves, and gave the crown to a chief, who was only choſen to execute the general reſolutions. At the ſame time, France, Germany, and Italy, that had been united near two centuries under the ſame ſovereign, were now divided, and formed ſeparate ſtates.

IN

In France, the young Charles, who had been excluded from the throne of his anceſtors, ſtill ſolicited it in vain. The people were ſenſible that the feeble hand of a child would but increaſe the diſorders of the times, which required a man of wiſdom and riper years to ſupport the ſtate that tottered on every ſide. No ſuch prince was to be found among the deſcendants of Charlemagne: the ſuffrages united in favour of Eudes, earl of Paris, who was eminent for his capacity and heroic courage. This prince was the ſupport of France; during a reign of nine years, made himſelf formidable to the barbarians, and reſpected by the nobles, whom he perſuaded at his death to reſtore to Charles the crown of his anceſtors. Charles, ſirnamed *the Simple*, at length recovered his inheritance, but it was only to ſee it more diſtreſſed than ever. The Normans, whom Eudes had kept in awe, now returned in greater numbers, and with more inſolence. The nobles, full of contempt for a prince who owed his crown to their pity, diſdained every mark of dependance. The weak ſovereign, incapable of exerting valour againſt the one, or firmneſs with the others; reſolved however to diſarm the former, and for that purpoſe ceded to their chief that fertile province which has taken from them the name of Normandy. But the nation being incenſed at this alienation, gave the crown to Robert, the brother of Eudes, who had all his valour. The ſtate thus divided between two maſters was completely ruined. The misfortune of Robert, who was killed, though victorious, contributed only to ag- France.

gravate the unhappy fate of Charles. Raoul, duke of Burgundy, aſſumed the place of the deceaſed, and attacked his rival with greater vigour. The unfortunate Charles, after being conquered, a fugitive, the ſport of his ſubjects, the dupe of his friends, and betrayed by his protectors; at length terminated a life of the greateſt agitation and tumult, in captivity; while his ſon Lewis, carried away in the arms of his mother, was forced to croſs the ſeas to ſeek a place of refuge. Raoul however ſhewed he was worthy of the throne to which he had been raiſed. He marched againſt the Danes, who ravaged Aquitaine, and by a deciſive victory delivered France from thoſe ſtrangers. The ſtate recovered a little under his reign, but after him it experienced new misfortunes. The nobles called in Lewis, and reſtored him the throne of his father, diſmembered, degraded, and without power.

Germany. GERMANY, after the fall of Charles *the Fat*, ſtill preſerved a reſpect for the blood of Charlemagne; and on the throne ſhe had eſtabliſhed placed Arnoul, a baſtard of that family, who was as weak, and as unfortunate as his predeceſſors. The reign of his ſon Lewis III, was ſtill more inglorious. Germany was obliged to implore the mercy of the Huns, and did not obtain peace of that barbarous people until they had ſubmitted to a tribute. Upon the death of this prince, the nation, weary of the feeble poſterity of the Pepins, abjured them for ever; and endeavoured to find among her own nobles, hands more worthy to ſway the ſceptre. Conrad, duke of Franconia,

was

was the firſt of their countrymen whom the Germans fixed upon to govern them. Hiſtory has extolled his prudence, which diſplayed itſelf in the midſt of plots and conſpiracies; his wiſdom, that firſt attempted to extricate his country from the confuſion in which it was involved; and his regulations, which, though they produced no extraordinary effect in the beginning, were however the origin of thoſe glorious days of his ſucceſſors: but he has been chiefly applauded for his greatneſs of ſoul, which made him ſacrifice every thing to the good of the ſtate; and at his death, appointed Henry duke of Saxony his Succeſſor, the deſcendant of a family no way related to him, and one whoſe ambition had perpetually diſturbed his reign.

HENRY, firnamed *the Fowler*, who was deſcended from Vitikind, the generous defender of Germany, diſplayed all the noble ſentiments of the hero, from whom he derived his origin. Germany, torn to pieces for above a century, had loſt the very idea of laws; he not only revived them, but had the art even to make them reſpected. His vaſſals thought themſelves ſuperior to ſubjection, and ſpread confuſion in the ſtate by their mutual quarrels; by a proper exertion of firmneſs, prudently tempered with lenity, he diſarmed them, and re-eſtabliſhed tranquility. The French, animated by the pride of having given maſters to the places beyond the Rhine, frequently croſſed that river and committed depredations; he erected forts along the banks that protected his ſubjects from thoſe inſults. The people of the north deſcended

from the mouth of the Oder, and carried fire and ſword into the very heart of Saxony; he attacked them in their own country, and gained ſuch ſignal advantages over them, as to oblige them to give him poſſeſſion of the barriers. In the mean time the Huns ſent to demand the tribute, which was a diſgrace to Germany. Henry expreſſed his refuſal with a generous indignation, and the blood of twenty thouſand of thoſe barbarians, ſhed in the plains of Merſebourg, waſhed away the infamy that had ſtained his crown. Under his ſon Otho Germany roſe ſtill higher. The ambition of the nobles was curbed, rebellion extinguiſhed, the rights of the different orders were ſettled, and a ſolid tranquility eſtabliſhed on that foundation; the Germanic eagles croſſed the Rhine, and ſubjected new vaſſals; France in her turn was invaded, and loſt Loraine; the boundaries of the ſtate were advanced to the Baltic; the Vandals ſcarce found ſecurity in their marſhes; the Sclavonians were obliged to conceal themſelves in their woods; and the Huns, after being attacked in the very center of their country, and cut to pieces in ſeveral engagements, at length vaniſhed from Europe, which they had ravaged for three centuries. Germany now at the higheſt ſummit of glory ſhe had ever attained, beſtowed the ſirname of Great on her ſovereign, and Italy invoked him as her deliverer.

Italy. THIS part of the world had no longer any ſettled condition. The north remained in the power of the emperors, while the family of France preſerved their ſtrength and conſequence. When the misfor-

misfortunes of the poſterity of Charlemagne produced that dreadful anarchy which ſucceeded on the depoſing of Charles *the Fat*, that rich country became a prey to a ſwarm of petty tyrants, who contended for, and rent it in pieces. Berenger, who firſt ſeized upon it, was expelled however for his cruelty by Guy of Tuſcany and his ſon Lambert, but, returning after their death, he behaved with ſtill greater barbarity than before; Lewis, who drove him out a ſecond time, periſhed by the intrigues of the man who had crowned him. Rodolph of Burgundy, who came in after, was ſoon obliged to make way for Hugo of Provence. The great qualities of the latter, and the ſervices he rendered Italy, did not however prevent his fall. Berenger II, ſon to the firſt, and the worthy deſcendant of that tyrant, made his people groan under his inhuman exceſſes. All thoſe petty ſovereigns, whoſe territories did not extend beyond a few leagues, went to Rome to receive the imperial crown, and, with a vanity equal to their impotency, ſtyled themſelves the auguſt maſters of the world. Slaughter however ſignalized thoſe ridiculous reigns; and the people, who were made the inſtruments and victims of their tyranny, had no other conſolation, but that of ſeeing their inhuman oppreſſors mutually butcher and deſtroy each other.

Rome.

At Rome nothing was more curious than the conduct of the popes, and their art in making advantage of ſo many revolutions. Leo III, crouched under the formidable Charlemagne, he acknowleged him for his ſovereign, ſubmitted to

his ſentence, and confeſſed the right of the emperors to the confirmation of his ſee. After the death of that conqueror, the very ſame pontiff lengthened his chain, and, being accuſed of new crimes, artfully evaded acknowleging Lewis for his judge. Stephen IV, who took poſſeſſion of the Tiara without the conſent of that prince, thought it ſufficient to make a ſlight excuſe. Paſchal I, not content with rejecting all homage, refuſed even to give up ſome murderers that the emperors demanded, and adding irony to diſobedience, made anſwer, that the aſſaſſins could not be delivered up, becauſe they belonged to the family of St. Peter. His immediate ſucceſſors were content with adhering to the ſame plan; but Gregory IV, taking advantage of the hatred of the children of Lewis, did not ſcruple openly to avow the pretenſions of his ſee: eſſential ſervices done to his country, eminent virtues, and heroic courage, were the titles to that ſovereignty which he publickly claimed. The reſolution of Nicholas I, completed the buſineſs; and John VIII, working upon the mean ambition of Charles *the Bald*, had all the rights of the emperors transferred to himſelf in authentic form. The exceſſes of the popes of the tenth century interrupted a little the progreſs of this policy. We cannot look back without aſtoniſhment on the ſhocking diſorders which then raged in the chair of St. Peter. Stephen VII, after digging up his predeceſſor Formoſus, and inveſting the putrid body with the pontifical robes, ſat in judgment on it, and ordered it to be thrown into the Tibre. Sergius III, having ſucceeded to the

the throne by art and intrigue, gave up the reins of both church and ſtate to Maroſia; and Maroſia, having ſurvived the pontiff, was in hopes of governing in Rome, but ſhe found a rival of her power in her ſiſter Theodora. Thoſe two women filled the city with confuſion, and intirely influenced the votes. Theodora triumphed by violence, and procured the election for John X, who, under the ſacerdotal habit diſplayed all the abilities of a commander, and his courage was the terror of the Saracens. Maroſia, having recovered the aſcendant by a new revolution, tumbled the unfortunate John from the throne; and ordered him to be ſtrangled. John XI, ſcarce made his appearance, when the hands of his brother Alberic deſtroyed him by ſuffocation. Alberic, the worthy ſon of Maroſia, threw his mother into a dungeon, and having made himſelf maſter of the chair of St. Peter, ſeated his ſon in it, by the name of John XII. The city was then torn and diſtracted by a variety of different factions, and all Italy took part in thoſe quarrels. Berenger, who tyrannized over the north, advanced towards Rome under the colour of protecting the city, but in fact, to plunder and ravage it. In this ſituation, the pontiff deſtitute of every other hope, turned his eyes towards the king of Germany, and ſolicited his protection; tempting him with the proſpect of a ſplendid title, and the poſſeſſion of Rome.

The ſouthern part of Italy experienced as many revolutions, and was not ravaged by a leſs number of tyrants. The Saracens and Greeks continually

nually diſputed it, and after a century of bloodſhed and ſlaughter, it finally became the theatre of the enmity of thoſe two nations, and the rapacious avidity of various petty tyrants.

THE adjacent iſlands had a ſimilar fate, experienced the ſame calamittes, and were ſpectators of the like exceſſes.

Venice. VENICE continued to diſplay a regular ſyſtem of policy, in the midſt of all the confuſion and troubles that diſtracted Europe. While the family of the Pepins remained formidable, ſhe avoided ſubmitting to their yoke, by affecting a ſubjection to the Greeks. But when the French empire ſunk under its own weight, and was no longer an object of their fears, the republic obliterated every mark of ſervitude, and the name of the tyrant of Conſtantinople was eraſed from their regiſters. The government then acquired more conſiſtency; democracy, that has ever been a tumultuous form of adminiſtration, gradually declined, and a mixture of ariſtocracy was introduced, which is better calculated to form wiſe reſolutions, as well as to execute them with greater diſpatch. She redoubled her induſtry at the ſame time, her marine increaſed, her commerce flouriſhed, her ſhips ſailed from her gulph to convey theſe products of Europe to the eaſt, and thence returned with the riches of Aſia to Italy. By this double trafic, thoſe happy inſulars became the mediators of two parts of the world; were reſpected by their neighbours, and daily introduced opulence into their country, which gave new life and vigour to the ſtate. In thoſe deſtructive ages,

after

after being weary of the bloody ſcenes with which ambition and weakneſs had diſfigured the world; we feel a relief and pleaſure in contemplating the quiet progreſs of this republic. Thus the traveller after croſſing the Alps, and beholding wild dreary waſtes, rocks covered with eternal ice, frightful precipices and torrents, ſits down to reſt with purer joy in the plains and gardens watered by the bounteous ſtreams of the Po.

SPAIN was continually divided by the Moors and Chriſtians. Both parties were perpetually at war, and by conſtantly ſharing their petty territories among the children of their kings, weakened themſelves by ſuch partition. The chriſtians however gained ground, and the north was recovered by the valour of their princes. Among thoſe worthy of notice, was Alphonſus *the Chaſte*, who repaired the misfortunes of preceding reigns by his firmneſs and intrepidity, conciliated the love and veneration of his people by his virtues, and their eſteem by his courage. Ramires his ſucceſſor, who had ſcarce aſcended the throne, when ambaſſadors from the Saracen prince arrived at court with orders to demand the tribute of the virgins. The generous Ramires ſhuddered with horror at the propoſal.—"Go, ſaid he, and tell "your maſter, that inſtead of a hundred virgins, "he ſhall have twenty thouſand men on his fron-"tiers." When an immenſe multitude of barbarians pouring in like a deluge, threatened to overwhelm him; his courage and capacity made amends for the inequality of numbers, and a complete victory freed his kingdom for ever from an

ignominious

ignominious tribute. Victory ſometimes crowned the valour of Alphonſus III, at other times fortune betrayed his prudence; but, intrepid in misfortune, he recovered ſucceſs, and ended his days with glory. Ordenio, after conquering Leon, fixed his court in the capital of that kingdom, penetrated into Caſtile, and advanced with an army to the very banks of the Tagus. Alponſus IV, was a man of fickle diſpoſition, diſguſted with the throne, he retired to a cloiſter, and afterwards quitting it with the ſame inconſtancy, he attempted to reſume the ſcepter which he had ceded to Ramires. Being defeated by the latter, he then threw himſelf into the arms of that generous brother who received him with the moſt tender friendſhip, and ſet a glorious example to the world by ſharing the ſovereign power with him. The diſagreement however between thoſe two monarchs proved the ſource of a revolution. Fernandez Gonzalez, a man equally valiant and ambitious, who had defended the province committed to his care againſt the Moors, from a notion that courage was a ſufficient title to royalty, ſhook off the yoke of Ramires, and gave riſe to the ſovereigns of Caſtile. The king of Leon attempted in vain to reduce him to obedience; the Saracens took up arms in hopes of reaping ſome advantage from the diſſentions of the chriſtians, and obliged the monarch to acknowlege the Caſtilian for his equal. There were now three kingdoms in the poſſeſſion of the chriſtians in Spain. Leon had the trifling advantage of of greater antiquity: Caſtile was ſuperior in the ſtrength and vigour of her government; while Navarre,

Navarre, that had been diſmembered from the French monarchy by the famous Enigo, found ſecurity and protection againſt her neighbours in the mountains that ſurrounded her, and made daily incroachments on the Saracens of the north.

England, Egbert.

ENGLAND, being now united under Egbert, ſhone with a luſtre to which ſhe was before a ſtranger. But this proſperity was ſoon interrupted and eclipſed by the triumphs of the Danes, who then attacked every part of Europe. Being repulſed by a monarch who could not always guard againſt a ſurpriſe, but who had capacity to repair his misfortunes; they returned after his death, and in the reign of Etelred, a prince equally weak and pious, made themſelves maſters of one part of the iſland, and ravaged the other. Their countrymen, at the ſame time, landed in ſwarms, and rent the monarchy. The Saxons reſumed courage, and the two people, in alternate victories and defeats, ſaw the crown frequently paſs from the head of a Saxon to that of a Dane. Among the Saxon kings, the moſt remarkable, was firſt, Alfred, who, after being inſtructed in the ſchool of adverſity, was a formidable warrior, a moſt amiable prince, the protector of juſtice, the ſupport of the arts, and the friend of virtue: next Athelſtan, the offspring of an unlawful connection, who was preferred to the legitimate heirs, and juſtified that preference by continual victories, and the wiſdom of his government; and laſtly, Edgar, ſirnamed the David of England, and who in fact, reſembled that Jewiſh king by his valour, his ſucceſſes, and crimes.

DENMARK,

Kingdoms of the north.

DENMARK, Sweden, Bohemia, and Hungary, had authentic annals; and thoſe kingdoms which began to acquire a conſiſtent form, were now more connected with the reſt of the powers of Europe: but the facts preſerved in their chronicles, though valuable for particular ſubjects, are loſt however in a general hiſtory.

THE empire of the Greeks now exhibited a continual ſeries of tragical and bloody events. Irene had ſcarce enjoyed the fruits of her crime five years, when ſhe was expelled by Nicephorus, whom ſhe had loaded with favours. The latter, after a reign of nine years, convulſed with every kind of tumult and ſedition, was defeated and ſlain, in a battle with the Bulgarians. His ſon Stauracius, who aſſumed the purple, was quickly ſtripped of it, by the pious and weak Michael Curopalates. The imprudent adminiſtration of Michael loſt him the throne at the end of two years, and transferred the empire to Leo the Armenian. Leo, of obſcure birth, and no friend to religion, was however a ſtateſman and ſoldier; he defeated the barbarians, gained the love of his ſoldiers, perſecuted the monks, and was at laſt aſſaſſinated on Chriſtmas night, in the choir of St. Sophia, by Michael *the Liſper*, whom he had condemned to death. The murderer, after exchanging a priſon for a throne, was not more favourrble to the monks, to whom he was indebted for the empire. His ſon Theophilus, with the ſcepter, inherited his hatred againſt the clergy, and had the happineſs, notwithſtanding this hatred, to tranſmit, unſullied to poſterity, his glorious reputation for juſtice,

juſtice. Michael was at firſt governed by an uncle, unworthy of his confidence, afterwards conceiving a diſlike to him, he had him aſſaſſinated. He then raiſed Baſil the Macedonian, whom out of fear, he reſolved to deſtroy, but was prevented, and fell himſelf a ſacrifice to Baſil. The latter ſtained with the blood of his benefactor, aſcended his ſeat, and ſhewed himſelf worthy of that dignity. Under his reign genius was encouraged, and merit approached the throne; the laws recovered their influence; diſputes concerning religion ſubſided; victory returned to the ſtandards of the empire; the Bulgarians were ſubdued; the Saracens defeated; and Conſtantinople ſaw the ſhadow of her former glory revive. Leo, diſtinguiſhed by the firname of philoſopher, to the pleaſure of cultivating the ſciences, ſacrificed that of governing, which is the moſt important of all to a prince. His ſon Conſtantine Porphirogenetes did not ſucceed him. Alexander, the brother of Theophilus, who was preferred, ſhewed himſelf unworthy of the honour, and fell a victim to his libidinous exceſſes. Porphirogenetes, at the age of ſeven years obtained the ſcepter under the regency of the patriarch at firſt, afterwards under that of Romanus Lecapenes, a man of low origin, who roſe by intrigues, and after ſeducing the ſenate and people, acquired an abſolute authority under the name of guardian and father of the emperor. He left nothing but an empty title to Conſtantine, and, when he was preparing to rob him even of that, his own ſon took up arms againſt him, and diſputed the throne with him. The diſſentions of this

this family proved their deſtruction. Conſtantine made them inſtrumental to the recovery of his authority, and began a reign, which was that of the fine arts; but this prince, whom literature has honoured as one of her moſt zealous protectors, was taken off by poiſon, adminiſtered by the monſter to whom he had given birth.

Saracen empire.

THE empire of the Saracens was at the ſummit of glory, at the beginning of this epocha. Aaron-al-Raſchid, who united talents with virtue, made both flouriſh throughout his immenſe dominions. The glory of the empire was eclipſed after his death, by the diviſions among his children: but Almamon becoming ſole maſter, revived all the ſplendor of the reign of his father. The power of his arms was felt at the ſame time, in the empire of Conſtantinople, Africa, and Italy; and a fleet, that was ſent out by his orders, ſtruck terror into the Vatican. This prince at the ſame time promoted ſcience, in which he took great delight. The elements of Euclid were tranſlated, under his own immediate eye, and taught in the public ſchools. Ariſtotle and Theophraſtus, tho' the tranſlation of them was far from being juſt, uſhered in the dawn of philoſophy among the Arabs. The healing art, the moſt important branch of all human knowlege, which till then was governed by a blind practice, or deſpicable and ſuperſtitious notions, acquired more determinate principles in the works of Hippocrates and Galen. Motaſſem, the glory of arms and literature, was ſucceeded by Watik, who carried both ſtill higher, and ſpread his fame throughout the univerſe.

univerſe. Armenia, Natolia, and even Thrace were witneſſes to his triumphs. The iſlands of the Archipelago were taken, while the Mauritanians, being maſters of the Adriatic ſea, burned Raguſa and Ancona by his orders, and menaced Rome with the yoke of the Alcoran. A taſte for the arts was diffuſed through every part of the empire by the liberality of the prince, and men of learning, in every branch, continued the reign of letters.

The ſplendor of the court of the califfs ſeemed to expire with the life of Watik. The brother of that prince ſucceeded to the ſcepter and diſgraced it. He was debauched, cruel, ſuperſtitious and deteſted by his ſubjects. He was put to death by the monſter his ſon. The latter, whoſe unnatural crime excited horror, became an object of contempt likewiſe, by his effeminate and imprudent conduct. Diſcord, faction, and inteſtine commotions, diſturbed the various provinces that were ſubject to the empire of Bagdad. The increaſe of taxes, occaſioned by the luxury and effeminacy of the tyrant, provoked the people. The chiefs of the principal governments, artfully took advantage of the diſcontent. The governor of Syria gave the ſignal of rebellion, and his ſucceſs encouraging thoſe who were more remote; the commanders of Algiers, Tunis and Tripoli followed the example, and formed independent ſtates.

The deſcendants of Fatima, who laboured in that obſcurity to which they had been reduced, ſaw in this general confuſion a favourable opportunity of emerging from their abject ſtate, and urged their juſt pretenſions. Religion was made

a pretext for their revolt, and they invited all thoſe who revered the memory of Ali to join them. Numberleſs followers crouded to their ſtandards; and the merit of the firſt leaders ſeconding the ardour of the ſect, they founded a powerful empire in Africa, which, even in its infancy, was the rival of that of Bagdad. The conqueſt of Egypt effectually ſecured the power of thoſe new provinces, and the ſituation of that province, proved a continual ſource of opulence. Cairo, built under the auſpices of victory, and choſen for the reſidence of thoſe califfs, became the centre of the commerce of the eaſt; and that city, famous even at this hour, roſe immediately after it was founded to an equality with the firſt in the world.

ENTHUSIASM effected a revolution that was ſtill more ſingular. An obſcure derviſe, having formed the reſolution of converting the idolaters ſcattered through the deſerts of Africa, ſolicited the aſſiſtance of ſome apoſtles from the Faquirs of Mecca. Thoſe miſſioners, under the direction of their chief, ſeduced in fact great numbers of ignorant people; inflated with this ſucceſs, they were then prepoſſeſſed with the notion that the reſt of the Mahometans had relaxed, and looked upon themſelves as inſpired by heaven to reform them.

They united together under the name of *Marabouts*; and as the intoxicating ſpirit of ſuperſtition is one of thoſe that is the ſooneſt diffuſed, they ſaw numberleſs proſelytes ſwarm round their banners. As their numbers were now grown formidable, reſolutions were take to ſuppreſs them; but

but perſecution, that has been ever found to defeat its own ends and increaſe ſects, produced thouſands of fanatics, who were made deſperate by the excommunication of the califf. They took up arms under the command of Abubeker; and inflamed by that enthuſiaſm which makes reformers terrible, they marched againſt their enemies, defeated them, and renounced for ever all obedience to the two pontiffs. Their commander aſſumed the tiara himſelf, and by the name of Miramolin, reigned in the double capacity of prieſt and king, over the weſtern coaſts of Africa, where he founded one of the moſt powerful empires of the univerſe. Thus the Mahometan religion had at the ſame time three chiefs, each of whom boaſted himſelf to be the only true ſucceſſor of Mahomet, and they mutually excommunicated one another. The immenſe monarchy of the Saracens was divided and diſmembered, and the ancient califfs had now nothing left but the provinces of the eaſt, which were convulſed with enthuſiaſm and rebellion.

In the mean while a new people iſſued from the remoter parts of Tartary, and ſpread themſelves on the borders of the Caſpian ſea. The Turks after having abandoned the frozen climates where they originated, endeavoured to eſtabliſh themſelves in the ſouthern provinces of Aſia. Thoſe people, who ſtill poſſeſſed all the ferocity of their anceſtors, were famous throughout the eaſt for their valour, the effects of which that country had felt. The califfs of Bagdad, from an idea that thoſe ſtrangers might be a ſupport to their empire, ſolicited their aſſiſtance to defend it. Turks.

They promiſed them places of the firſt dignity in the ſtate, and the only condition they required of thoſe barbarians, who were ſtill ſunk in idolatry, was, their conforming to the Saracen worſhip. The Turks complied, gave ſtability to the empire, and ſuppreſſed rebellion; but perſuading themſelves that ſoldiers had incontrovertible pretenſions to a throne, which their valour had preſerved, they ſeized upon the government, leaving to the califfs no other title but that of the heads of religion. The Saracens endeavoured to oppoſe thoſe ſtrangers, and a tedious war was kindled between the two nations. Each of them elected pontiffs, who were crowned and ſacrificed, and became the victims and ſport of both parties. The ſtrangers at length triumphed, and while proſtrate at the feet of the califf, they reverenced him as the image of the divinity, he was a ſlave to their capricious humours, trembled beneath their power, and in the very midſt of pomp and luxurious ſloth, ſaw his life and death in the hands of thoſe imperious conquerors. All Aſia was ſubjected to the authority of the Turks, who founded a number of petty kingdoms, where under the name of ſultans they governed as deſpots. They were inveſted however by the head of religion, but this was nothing but an idle ceremony, the homage they paid to ſuperſtition was voluntary, the pontiff could not refuſe to comply with the will of his maſters.

REFLECTIONS.

IDOLATRY was gradually aboliſhed in the northern parts of Europe. Germany, Denmark, Sweden and Bohemia had lately renounced it. All the refuge it now had, was Poland, Pruſſia, Lithuania and ſome other northern parts of the globe, among people whoſe religion and laws were equally deſtitute of any ſettled form. Religion.

MAHOMETISM remained nearly in the ſame ſituation. The progreſs of chriſtianity compenſated for the ſchiſm that divided it. Photius, patriarch of Conſtantinople, completed the ſeparation of the two churches; and this affair, which had been ſo repeatedly attempted by his predeceſſors, acquired by the genius of that man, a permanent conſiſtency. All Aſia acknowleged him for her chief, and even the moſt ancient patriarchs themſelves revered him as the monarch of the church. The Roman pontiff on his ſide, acquired ſtill more power and veneration in the weſt. Thus religion had two ſovereign pontiffs; the pope had the weſt under his obedience, and the biſhop of Conſtantinople gave laws to the eaſtern empire.

AN obſcure hereſy broke out in the church of France. Goteſcale, a viſionary monk, whoſe imagination was heated by the injudicious peruſal of the works of St. Auguſtin, debated on the incomprehenſible ſubjects of grace and predeſtination. Florus, a deacon of Lyons, and Hincmar, biſhop of Rheims, both famous for their writings in thoſe times, by taking part in the diſpute, gave it a

gree of importance: but after ſome noiſe, the unfortunate monk, being condemned in a council, expiated his errors by a degrading penance and impriſonment for life. The innocence or guilt of this man ſtill remains a doubt; the weakneſs of his imagination, and the ſeverity of his perſecutors admit of none.

Ratramnes friar of Corbia, firſt aſſerter of the real preſence in the euchariſt.

A MORE important queſtion diſturbed all the weſt. Ratramnes, a friar of Corbia, publiſhed a work wherein he maintained that the real body of Jeſus Chriſt was preſent in the ſacrament of the altar. Scot Eugene and Paſchuſus Ratbert, exclaimed againſt the aſſertion as blaſphemous, and pretended that the opinion of their opponents contained an abſurdity that ſhocked reaſon, and countenanced idolatry. The whole church was in flames by this diſpute; numberleſs doctors engaged on each ſide; both parties accuſed one another of novelty of opinion, appealed to the teſtimony of the fathers of the firſt centuries, argued from the precepts of the apoſtles, and even cited the words of the legiſlator. Scot and Paſchuſus, were overcome, and the belief of tranſubſtantiation being confirmed by the councils, was received all over the world.

THE Iconoclaſts, and the enemies of the monks, continued to diſturb the eaſtern church, and thoſe diſturbances frequently became the ſource of the moſt tragical revolutions. Excommunications were thrown out with a liberal hand on both ſides; impriſonment, exile, and even torments were by turns employed to determine thoſe diſputes, which ſhook the imperial throne.

Two

Two powerful empires had lately, ſunk into ruins; and their fall changed the face of Aſia and Europe. From the ruins of the throne of the Carlovingians, two great kingdoms, and a ſwarm of principalities aroſe. Out of the throne of the califfs were formed three extenſive ſtates, and ſeveral ſovereignties. The circumſtances and cauſes of thoſe two revolutions, which happened at the ſame time, were ſimilar. Empires, their revolutions and their cauſes.

The extent and greatneſs of the ſtate contributed to the deſtruction of both empires. It is almoſt impoſſible for a machine, conſiſting of ſo many parts, to be permanent. It may be preſerved ſo long as a ſuperior genius directs its ſeveral ſprings; but whenever it falls to the management of a man of ordinary talents, a thing unavoidable in hereditary ſucceſſion, the whole is diſjointed, and each different part becomes the prey of a daring uſurper. Governors muſt be ſent to the remote provinces, who are neceſſarily armed with great authority; they have large bodies of troops under their command, whoſe attachment they may eaſily gain; beſides, by moderate indulgence and affability they ſecure the hearts of the people. With ſo many reſources to ſhake off the yoke, it is difficult to reſiſt the temptation. How feeble are the ties of duty, when we can exchange that virtue for the pleaſure and advantage of commanding! If one gives way to thoſe dictates of ambition, twenty others follow the criminal example; and being accomplices in guilt, they are mutually intereſted to aſſiſt each other. Thus every ſtate that has riſen to a certain degree of power, ap-

proaches nearer to ruin, in proportion as ſhe advances to greatneſs.

THE weakneſs of the princes on both ſides, was a ſecond cauſe of their fall, and this cauſe reſulted from the firſt. In fact, in a ſtate of great extent, deſpotiſm becomes the neceſſary form of government. But, from the exorbitant power which this mode of adminiſtration confers, the weakneſs and misfortune of princes are in time produced. When men are raiſed ſo far above others, they imagine they have a right to indulge every capricious wiſh and deſire: hence thoſe acts of injuſtice that irritate the ſubjects: they fancy themſelves beings of a ſuperior nature: from this proceeds a diſdain, which exaſperates them: they flatter themſelves that nothing will venture to oppoſe them: this intoxicating temerity leads them into erroneous undertakings, the inevitable ſource of diſappointment and misfortune: they think that every one reverences the yoke to which all are ſubject; this occaſions a falſe ſecurity which ſinks them into indolence, lulls them in the arms of pleaſure, and baniſhes every thing that might diſturb thoſe enjoyments; it ſhuts the ear againſt the voice of prudence, which in vain ſuggeſts the ſtorms that are ready to burſt on the head of the ſenſeleſs tyrant.

BESIDES thoſe cauſes which were common to both the French and Saracen empires, there were others likewiſe peculiar to each.

Norman conqueſts.

THE Normans gave the moſt fatal blows to the ſucceſſors of the Pepins. The enterprizing boldneſs and activity of thoſe people were aſtoniſhing.

Under

Under Charlemagne they were ſeen to ravage all the northern coaſts. In the reign of Lewis the Debonnaire, they appeared on the frontiers, and carried off an immenſe booty. Under Charles *the Bald*, they penetrated into the heart of the ſtate by the rivers, and attacked at the ſame time every part of the kingdom. The ſtrongeſt cities were ſurrendered to them, they burned or plundered the moſt conſiderable, and generally carried away their plunder by forcing a paſſage through numerous armies who endeavoured to cut off their hopes of retreat. This people at the ſame time invaded Great Britain, and the adjacent iſlands; they laid waſte the coaſts of Portugal; appeared in the Mediterranean; pillaged Andaluſia; and burnt Seville. The effects of their valour were felt even in Italy; and, notwithſtanding the great diſtance they were from their own country, they returned through various ſeas and ſtates, plundering as they proceeded, aud ſecuring their booty by continual battles and victories. In order to reſiſt ſuch obſtinate enemies, heroes ſhould have been at the head of the empire to keep off thoſe formidable ſtrangers by force of arms. Princes on thoſe occaſions adopted the moſt dangerous method. They purchaſed the retreat of thoſe robbers with gold: this ſhameful tribute removed them for a while, but at the ſame time encouraged them to return ſoon after, more numerous and terrible than before. It is natural to conceive that thoſe misfortunes muſt have greatly incenſed the nation againſt government; and that it was no difficult taſk for ambitious men to perſuade the people to force the

ſceptre

ſcepter out of the hands of maſters who were incapable of defending them.

Religion was a particular cauſe of the fall of the califfs. It is the fate of every ſyſtem of worſhip to have ſchiſms that rend and deſtroy it. Among the ancients thoſe diſputes were confined to the learned, who carried them on without rage or animoſity. Citizens were not deteſtable to each other for mere objects of ſpeculation, natives of the ſame country did not take up arms againſt one another, on account of opinions that were indifferent as to their happineſs; nor nations againſt nations to determine the truth of their faith by fire, ſword and every criminal enormity. A zealous love for truth ſometimes hurried into thoſe fatal exceſſes the diſciples of a maſter, who had given them only meekneſs and virtuous examples for arms. They have butchered numbers of their unhappy fellow citizens, friends and even deareſt relations, for the explanation of ſome words of a book, every page of which inculcated the obligation of loving even their moſt inveterate enemies. Error carried on thoſe pious perſecutions with ſtill greater violence. The Arabian empire contained a ſwarm of bigots who were enemies to the califfs of Damaſcus, on account of ſome ceremonies they had different from what thoſe pontiffs preſcribed. We have ſeen a powerful party look upon them as uſurpers. Force had ſtifled open clamour, but inward animoſity grew more violent; faction was ſecretly undermining the throne, and wanted but a favourable opportunity to burſt forth. The diſſentions in the family of Almamor, encouraged inſolence

ſolence and rebellion. Egypt was ſuddenly diſmembered from the body, and a new califf darted his ſpiritual thunders againſt the old, while his armies carried off the moſt precious gems of his tiara. Africa did not want for deſcendants of the prophet, who, with the Alcoran in one hand and a ſcymiter in the other, inſiſted that they alone were his true ſucceſſors. The family of Mahomet increaſed in proportion to the number of daring and ambitious men. Thus, in leſs than half a century, all the provinces of the weſt were divided from the ſcepter of Bagdad, and formed ſeparate kingdoms, many of which actually ſubſiſt at this hour.

The provinces of the eaſt, of which the Turks made themſelves maſters, muſt have been loſt alſo to the califfs. They acted prudently therefore in calling in the aſſiſtance of thoſe people who could alone defend them; and they were wiſer ſtill in engaging them to embrace Mahometiſm; this was binding them by the chains of religion. But the ties of eſteem were neceſſary likewiſe, and that warlike nation was a ſtranger to every other virtue but that of valour. If the califfs themſelves had been at the head of the army, their preſence might have ſtruck an awe into the commanders, and the ſoldiers would have been attached to ſovereigns whoſe courage they reſpected. But thoſe princes thinking it ſufficient to pay the Turks, left them under the command of their ancient leaders, who found it no difficulty to inſpire rough and unpoliſhed ſoldiers with contempt for a prince who ſent them to encounter dangers in which he had no

ſhare.

ſhare. The tranſition from contempt to rebellion is ſhort. It would be leſs dangerous for a monarch to be hated, fear ſometimes reſtrains ſubjects, but when once they proceed to contempt, the hopes of impunity embolden the moſt timid. The revolution in fact was rapid. The Turks, having baniſhed the califf to the ſanctuary, ſeized upon the ſcepter, and their deſcendants ſtill govern the rich dominions uſurped by their anceſtors.

So many revolutions in the Saracen empire did not however produce any change in government. Under the califfs it was military and religious; under the Turks the military alone prevailed. It is evident, that in either caſe, it muſt always be deſpotic.

The government of the French empire on the contrary experienced the greateſt viciſſitudes. Under Charlemagne it was a perfect monarchy. The legiſlative authority was exerciſed by the nation in conjunction with the ſovereign; there were general aſſemblies in which the people explained themſelves by their deputies, laws were enacted, and the moſt important affairs of ſtate diſcuſſed. The emperor with all his power did not attempt to dictate his chapters but in the midſt of a general aſſembly, then known by the name of a council, and his regulations had no force without the conſent of the majority. But after the diſſolution of thoſe aſſemblies, the prince was armed with the whole ſtrength of the executive power. He made war and peace, and concluded treaties; the army was entirely under his command; the generals, called dukes, derived their authority from him alone:

alone: the intendants or lieutenants, who were appointed to adminiſter juſtice in the provinces, were no more than his delegates. The counts and margraves, who governed or judged the people, held but a precarious authority, dependant on the will of the prince, and which always died with them.

THUS, various as the ſprings of power muſt have been, in dominions ſo extenſive, they were however ſubordinate to each other, and ultimately centered in the hands of the ſovereign. Under the ſon however of this extraordinary man, the government already felt ſome alteration, and oligarchy began to appear. Under the ſucceſſors of the Debonnaire, the authority of the throne was annihilated, and the power of the people entirely forgot. Inſolence, trampling on the moſt ſacred laws, made fiefs hereditary, gifts that were in their very nature revocable, and till then continually reverting to the hands of the ſovereign, as a perpetual ſource of rewards to animate virtue and valour. The poſſeſſors of thoſe fiefs, now no longer acting by an authority delegated from the throne, governed their vaſſals by their own arbitrary will. The fear alone of being oppreſſed by more powerful neighbours, induced the weaker to ſhelter themſelves under the protection of thoſe who had uſurped more conſiderable fiefs, to whom they bound themſelves to certain trifling duties and vain ſubmiſſions. The latter, influenced by ſimilar motives, paid the ſame marks of deference to counts and dukes, who, in like manner, had nearly the ſame connections with the throne. Thus the feu-

dal

dal government was gradually formed, in which millions of ſlaves groaned under the oppreſſive yoke of a thouſand petty tyrants, who conſidered the prince not as a maſter to whom they had given ſuperior powers, but as a leader to whom they allowed a greater ſhare of pomp and honour.

THE Greek empire had now no longer any ſettled form. The military, the populace and the ſenate alternately, and oftentimes in conjunction, uſurped the right of conferring the imperial ſceptre; and the blackeſt enormities were the ſteps by which that dignity was generally obtained. It would be in vain to ſeek for a regular form of government among other nations, where every thing was convulſed with the horrors of war, and left no room for any other conſideration, but that of attack or defence.

Legiſlation

LEGISLATION now ſeemed to emerge from the chaos in which it had been ſo long plunged. Charlemagne, ſenſible of the beneficial effects of ſuch regulations, exerted every effort to revive them. His chapters, thoſe teſtimonies of a ſoul inflamed with the love of order, ſufficiently diſplay his ſuperior genius. In them we find regulations that would do honour to the moſt enlightened ages. But the feeble rays of light that beamed forth under the protection of this prince, were extinguiſhed in the diſorders that enſued at his death. Superſtition and monkiſh ignorance began once more to preſide in the councils of the nation, where they dictated abſurd orders that became the ſport of inſolence.

Capitularies of Charlemagne.

THE

THE morals of the people, being now no longer restrained by the authority of the laws, grew more depraved and licentious than ever. We have observed the disorders of the first church of the world. The other sees exhibited scenes of equal confusion and scandal. Bishops disgraced their functions by intrigues and perfidy, abbots pillaged and fought, monks and friars with sword in hand, maintained their right of trampling on their vows and obligations. Morals.

THE nobles considered their vassals as beings of an inferior nature to themselves, destined only to be the instruments of their oppression and injustice, or to serve as victims to their passions. The people, bowed down under the yoke of their barbarous masters, had lost every impression of those amiable virtues, which a well regulated liberty inspires; and were strangers to any other sentiment but that of cruelty and fear, two extremes that are ever united in the hearts of slaves.

VICE was now triumphant in Constantinople; perfidy and cruelty had assumed the most destructive of all forms which is that of religious enthusiasm. Plots, treachery and poison were frequently employed, under the impious pretext of zeal and veneration for religion.

THE mussulmen grew more and more refined. Justice and humanity were cherished at Bagdad; and those virtues began to appear at the court of the califfs of Cairo. Cruelty and persecution found no longer a retreat but at the palace of the Miramolins, who, having been nurtured in the bosom of

of ſuperſtition, had preſerved all its criminal exceſſes.

Sciences.

All that could merit the name of ſciences was now fled from the weſt; the political ſtorms that raged had ſwept away even to the very traces of them. Learning was ſcarce in a better condition there; Anaſtaſius the librarian, was the only perſon who emitted ſome faint rays: he had tranſlated the acts of the eight general council, from the Greek into Latin; he has left behind him ſome inſtructive tracts on Monotheliſm, and we are indebted to the ſame author for a curious hiſtory of the popes previous to his time.

Hiſtory, Eginhart, of Charlemagne.

Among the various annaliſts of this century who have tranſmitted the life of Charlemagne, Eginhart alone deſerves notice. This illuſtrious German having been invited to court by a hero who had a juſt ſenſe of the value of learning, became ſecretary to the emperor, and was loaded with favours; his gratitude prompted him to undertake the hiſtory of his protector, which he has written in a ſtyle much ſuperior to the taſte of thoſe days. This work throws the beſt light on the character of that conqueror; and indeed no perſon had a better opportunity to perform the taſk. There is reaſon however to ſuſpect his partiality. A writer who is attached to a great monarch by ſuch powerful obligations, cannot eaſily avoid placing his benefactor in too favourable a point of view, or reſiſt the natural inclination of flattering the likeneſs.

Some ſciences were revived at Conſtantinople, where the emperors, not ſatisfied with affording protection to genius, condeſcended even to publiſh the

the monuments of their learning and knowlege. We have the Tactics of Leo the philoſopher, a work well calculated to ſhew us the manner of engaging that was uſed in ages prior to that prince.

His ſon Conſtantine Porphirogenites has left behind him works of ſtill greater utility, on account of the light they throw on the geography of the age in which he lived, and on the empire which he governed. Nicon, a Grerk monk, became famous by his treatiſe on the religion of the Armenians; this work affords important inſtruction to divines. But the moſt remarkable ſcholar of this century was the illuſtrious Phocius, who in his immortal collection, has diſplayed the moſt extenſive, various and profound erudition, regulated by a ſolidity of judgment that rarely accompanies ſuch a variery of knowlege. Phocius.

Astronomy and phyſic, continued to flouriſh among the Saracens. Three famous ſchools were eſtabliſhed with that people. That of Bagdad was ſtill ſupported, notwithſtanding the fall of the princes who protected it. The califf Fatimite had founded one in Egypt, which rivalled the firſt, while that of Cordova, which daily became more frequented, was conſidered in Europe, as the center of learning in that part of the world. Of all the Saracens of this century, Rhazes had acquired the greateſt reputation. This Arab was admired in the eaſt as a prodigy, and he merited a part of his fame. Phyſic was much indebted, and chymiſtry under eternal obligations to his labours. Rhazes, phyſician and chymiſt.

The liberal arts continued to flouriſh under the auſpices of the Alcoran; but in the midſt of thoſe Fine arts.

ſtrokes of genius which the Moors diſplayed, they gave continual proofs of that capricious taſte to which they ſtill adhered. Their poetry which was moſt conſpicuous had this farther merit, that it was generally employed in ſubjects of moral philoſophy. Painting and ſculpture triumphed with ſplendor at Conſtantinople. Leo and Conſtantine thought it no ſhame to be ſeen frequently at work in the midſt of the artiſts, contending with them for the palm of merit in their profeſſion. Genius was cheriſhed and animated by ſuch powerful and flattering protection, and maſter-pieces formed after the models of the ancients, added new ornaments to the capital of the Grecian empire.

END OF THE THIRD EPOCHA.

FOURTH EPOCHA.

OTHO THE GREAT.

The Empire transferred from the French to the Germans.

From the Year 962 to 1095 of Chriſt.

State of the world.

OF the three empires that governed our hemiſphere, one only ſubſiſted at this time, the other two had diſappeared. The Grecian empire, ſituate between the French and the Saracens, the

the leaſt extenſive and powerful, obliged to ſupplicate the former, and often compelled to become tributary to the latter; internally ſapped by numberleſs deſtructive cauſes, and outwardly attacked by enemies of ſuperior ſtrength, though continually tottering on the very brink of ruin, ſtill preſerved itſelf, notwithſtanding all its defects and misfortunes.

The Saracen empire that enjoyed ſo many triumphs in the preceding century, was now parcelled out into a variety of ſtates, and ſhewed no other traces of her exiſtence, but in the pomp that encircled the califf, and in the homage paid to that prince and pontiff by the conquerors, who ſtripped him of his poſſeſſions. A warlike and barbarous people, who had adopted the religion of Mahomet, and bowed down at the feet of his ſucceſſors, deprived them of the moſt fertile provinces of Aſia; while in Africa, rebellion formed two powerful monarchies out of the ruins of that throne.

The empire of the French, that had been the terror of the weſt, appeared only in a number of different principalities that ſprung from her ruins. The moſt powerful were thoſe of France and Germany; and thoſe two ſtates appeared at firſt ſight to poſſeſs an equal degree of ſtrength; upon a nearer view however it was eaſy to ſee a very eſſential diſparity. France was a large body exhauſted by anarchy and tyranny; each province had an independant ſovereign with the name of duke or count, and one of thoſe uſurpers was even bold enough to aſſume the title of king. Thus there

was a king of Burgundy, dukes of Paris or France, of Aquitaine, of Normandy, and of Britanny; earls or counts of Champagne, of Flanders, of Toulouſe, of Anjou, of Morienne, who reigned as ſo many independant ſovereigns over the provinces which they had uſurped. Thus were the people ſlaves under a multiplicity of maſters, who with reciprocal hatred were at continual war together; it is true, they acknowleged a ſpecies of hereditary chief, whom they honoured with the title of king; but this chief, whoſe poſſeſſions were confined to a ſmall number of towns, had neither authority, troops or money; was frequently called to an account by his vaſſals, and every day liable to be depoſed by their caprice.

The kingdom of Germany was not more extenſive than that of France, the number of princes was not leſs conſiderable; but, though the chief was elective, which ſhould naturally leſſen his ſtrength and authority, he was however much more powerful than the French leader. This aroſe from the prudence of the nobles, who, while they preſerved to themſelves the honour of electing their maſters, had ſenſe enough to conceive that it was their intereſt to give up a part of their liberty, in order to ſtrengthen the hands of their common ſovereign. The king of Germany had a treaſury at his diſpoſal, officers obedient to command, and powerful armies ready to execute his orders. To complete thoſe advantages, a wiſe prince firſt occupied the throne, two great men were his ſucceſſors, and Otho, who reigned at this time, was the hero of his age.

Spain

SPAIN ſtill continued in the ſame ſituation. The north was in the poſſeſſion of the Chriſtians, and perpetually at war with the Moors, who were maſters of the ſouth. With both, the ſtates were numerous and weak. The chriſtians had three, the muſſulmen thirty. The former however had gained conſiderable ground; the Moors had not loſt courage, and were more experienced; but, though their enemies were much divided, there were ſtill greater diviſions among the muſſulmen.

ENGLAND had entirely aſſumed a new form. The ſeven little kingdoms, into which it was before divided, now compoſed but one monarchy; and would have become formidable, had not the diſputes between the Danes and Saxons prevented thoſe inſulars from paying any attention to their neighbours. The eternal quarrels of thoſe two nations made the iſland one continued ſcene of revolutions and ſlaughter.

IN the north of Europe, Poland alone merited regard, from her growing connections with the ſouth; the other parts ſcarce emerged from the groſſeſt idolatry, preſented as yet, nothing but fables or matters that deſerved little notice.

ITALY continued to exhibit a view of all her cities in ruin and confuſion, oppreſſed by tyrants, or rent and diſtracted by anarchy. Venice, alone ſeparate from all the reſt, ſtill leſs by her ſituation than policy, enjoyed peace and proſperity, for which ſhe was indebted to the prudence of her adminiſtration.

THE kingdom of Germany was now therefore the ruling power in the weſt, and in appearance,

none was any way equal to her. Rome however contained a power more ſolid, and was at leaſt her rival. The pope poſſeſſed a very ſmall territory, the authority he had in his capital was but recently uſurped; this authority alſo was continually diſputed, and frequently annihilated; it was divided by powerful tyrants, by a ſenate, who, in the moſt feeble condition, had all the pride of that aſſembly of kings whoſe place they held, and by a people whoſe misfortunes were aggravated by the continual remembrance of their ancient glory. It would therefore appear, that no prince was leſs formidable than the biſhop of Rome: not one however poſſeſſed a more real and extenſive power. He governed the conſciences of mankind; the great work of ſpiritual monarchy was finiſhed. A collection of pretended canons, fabricated two centuries before, by the adherents of the popiſh ſee, and artfully diſſeminated on proper occaſions, had been received by all the weſt as the fruits of the pureſt and moſt enlightened ages. Notwithſtanding the evident marks of fallacy and impoſition that appeared in this prepoſterous collection, it was ſo firmly eſtabliſhed that its deciſions became laws, and the maxims it contained were revered by all Europe without any oppoſition. According to thoſe principles the pope was not merely the head and monarch of the church, he was the maſter or abſolute deſpot; the oracles of his chair were infallible, nor could the councils themſelves make any decrees, but what might be altered or annulled by the pontiff. This arbitrary authority with reſpect to doctrine, was equal in

diſcipline.

diſcipline. The authority exerciſed by biſhops was precarious and dependant on the chief pontiff; they held their dignities no longer than while they were approved by their dread ſovereign: cauſes immediately ſubject to their juriſdiction, were to be carried before the ſupreme tribunal of Rome; and excommunications, ſo terrible in this century, fell alike on the heads of the people and their paſtors. Thus all the eccleſiaſtics were attached to the chair of St. Peter by the ties of duty, of hope, and of fear; by this means the pope had, in every chriſtian ſtate, a great number of ſubjects blindly devoted to his orders, who were reſpectable for their riches and dignities, and had an entire aſcendant over the minds and opinions of the people. With an abſolute authority in ſpiritual matters, the facility of an encroachment on temporal power is obvious, eſpecially in thoſe times, when ignorance and ſuperſtition had diſturbed every idea and confounded all diſtinctions. Thus without troops or territories, in the midſt of confuſion and miſery, a pontiff becomes formidable to all princes, and will ſhortly appear one of the moſt conſpicuous characters on the theater of the world; aſſuming a rank equal to the greateſt emperors, oppoſing all their forces, and triumphing over their courage and power.

WHILE Rome was convulſed with violent diſorders, and in the moſt humiliating condition to which the popes had ever been reduced, John XII, was meditating a ſplendid revolution. Raiſed to the throne of the church at the age of 18, with an unlimited power in ſpiritual

affairs, he ſaw with indignation, his temporal authority annihilated, by the ſenate, the people, and Berenger; who, being maſter of the campania of Rome, and of part of Tuſcany, had the boldneſs to ſtyle himſelf king of Italy. The pontiff, after making vain efforts to ſhake off ſo mortifying a yoke, ſaw himſelf menaced with the loſs even of his dignity. Inflamed with ambition and revenge, he determined to follow the example of one of his predeceſſors, and call into Italy a prince who had power to gratify his reſentment, but whoſe remote ſituation would not allow him to preſerve the authority he might ſeem to derive from a vain title. The reign of Otho was a ſeries of victories planned by his wiſdom. This was the prince whom the pontiff called in, to his protection and deliverance. In order to perſuade him to a compliance, he obſerved, that to his perſonal merit, which ſo far diſtinguiſhed him from other princes, he might add an auguſt name, and give a ſuperior luſtre to his ſceptre. He repreſentd Charlemagne crowned by the hands of Leo, and invited him to Rome to receive the like honours, that he might carry back to his country the ſupreme title which the French had loſt by their weakneſs. The pope publicly deſired nothing more than the pleaſure of doing honour to the merits of Otho, and of puniſhing the rage and inſolence of Berenger; in private however he flattered himſelf that the gratitude of the new emperor would leave him maſter in Rome, with all the authority neceſſary to his ambition and pleaſures. Otho, who was flattered by the title of auguſt, and ſenſible, at the ſame time, that it would furniſh

aſh him with a pretext for ſubjecting Italy, gave every encouragement to the hopes of the pontiff. He croſſed the Alps at the head of a flouriſhing army, after routing the petty tyrants of Lombardy, defeating and taking priſoner Berenger: with the moſt ſolemn ceremonies, in the midſt of an aſſembly, where the king of France was a ſpectator, he received the imperial crown from the hands of John XII. But, being reſolved to enjoy the privileges and rights it conferred, he immediately took upon him the authority of a ſovereign in Rome; he reformed abuſes, puniſhed the ſeditious, and conſidered the pontiff in no other light than the principal of his ſubjects, who ſhould find in him a ſevere judge of his crimes and irregularities. The pope was ſenſible of the error he had committed in removing a feeble tyrant, in order to make way for a powerful maſter. In the emperor he had created, he perceived a king that would exact obedience, and not a mere phantom as he had flattered himſelf. The haughty pontiff ſoon came to a reſolution to deſtroy his own work; and ſeeing no other reſource but in ſome troops that had followed Adalbert, ſon to the unfortunate Berenger, he ſtifled all reſentment, made terms with him, gave him poſſeſſion of Rome, and put the German garriſon to the ſword. The two tyrants then uniting their intereſts and hatred, agreed in ſharing the power and authority, which they devoted to vengeance. Otho, who had already returned to Germany, flew back with a rapidity that ſurpriſed the enemy; he drove out the pope and prince, and aſſembled a council for the trial

of

of the pontiff.—The public ſcandal he had given ſoon determined the ſentence. John XII, after having been depoſed for crimes that were but too manifeſt, and branded with every mark of diſgrace that the rage of an angry victor could dictate, was replaced by Leo, and the world looked upon him as ruined for ever: but the emperor had ſcarce repaſſed the Alps, when the induſtrious pontiff formed at a diſtance a new party, re-entered Rome, reſumed his dignity and power, and to complete his bold attempts, aſſembled another council, in which he had the emperor and his pope condemned and degraded, and artfully procured a deciſion that eſtabliſhed the ſuperiority of his ſee over the thrones of monarchs. At the ſame time he raiſed the inhabitants of the city whom he had gained over by his misfortunes and courage, rekindled the public hatred againſt ſtrangers; he expatiated on the ſhame and diſgrace of bending their necks to the yoke of Germans, intereſted the neighbouring cities, levied troops in every part of Italy, and invited even the Saracens to his aſſiſtance. His aſtoniſhing efforts, his courage and activity, had given every cauſe of fear to the friends of the emperor, when he fell by the hand of a huſband whom he diſhonoured.

The ſpirit of liberty which John XII, had kindled in the breaſts of the Romans, was not extinguiſhed in the blood of that pontiff. With a determined reſolution not to ſubmit to any foreign maſter, they placed the tiara on the head of Benedict V, and made vows to ſhed the laſt drop of their blood, if neceſſary, in oppoſing the emperor,

who

who was marching to beſiege them. The blind rage of a populace who fought without any order or diſcipline, ſoon gave way to the genius and power of Otho; but, neither the taking and plundering of Rome, the execution of the principal rebels, the captivity and mutilation of Benedict V, the exaltation of a new pope, nor all the misfortunes united were able to ſubdue the ſpirit of the Romans. They were no ſooner informed that Otho was marched back to Germany in queſt of new victories, than the cries of liberty echoed once more on the banks of the Tyber; the German gatriſon was obliged to fly a ſecond time; the new pope with difficulty eſcaped falling a victim to the fury of the rebels; and another, being placed by themſelves on the throne of the church, to their arms united the thunders of excommunication. The unhappy Romans were however ſubjected a third time, obliged to acknowlege the emperor, and to receive John XIII, who being eſtabliſhed in the chair, ſupported the authority of the ſtrangers. Otho, at length, after having been adored in Germany, dreaded in Italy, the ſcourge of barbarians, and an object of veneration to all Europe, terminated a ſplendid and glorious reign in a happy old age, and carried with him to the tomb, the title of great, which poſterity has confirmed to his memory.

Otho II, who ſucceeded to the domininions and empire of his father, was not alike the heir of his glory. He was a ſevere and weak prince, unfortunate in war, and cruel in misfortune; he was conquered by the French on the borders of the Rhine,

Rhine, defeated by the Greeks near Rome, and totally routed by the Saracens in Pouille.—He glutted his inhuman revenge on the city of Beneventum, from an idea that the people rejoiced at his misfortunes, and died at Rome of vexation, and the wound of a poiſoned arrow that ſtruck him in his flight.

Otho III, at the age of twelve, preſerved the throne of his father and grandfather, in ſpite of all the efforts of the malecontents who endeavoured to deprive him of it. When he came to riper years he united all Germany by his abilities and valour, but Rome ſtill continued intractable. The people of that city intoxicated with the idea of their paſt glory, continually forgot their preſent weakneſs, and could not bear to ſubmit to the yoke of the Germans, whom they looked upon as barbarians. A citizen named Creſcentius, inflamed the minds of the people by a deſcription of the Roman common-wealth, and a chimerical ſcheme for re-eſtabliſhing that glorious form of government. All Rome was led away by the ſeductive harangues of this viſionary; the people talked of nothing but conſuls, prætors, tribunes and prefects, they bound themſelves by vows to acknowlege no ſovereign, and the pope and emperor were equally proſcribed. Otho returned haſtily back to Rome, ordered Creſcentius to be hanged, reſtored Gregory, and concluded he had ſufficiently ſecured his authority by the puniſhment of the rebels. But the enthuſiaſm of liberty, the moſt excuſeable of all others, was not extinguiſhed by ſo many diſappointments. Three years

were

were ſcarce elapſed in murmurs, when Rome reſumed her projects. Gerbert, the moſt enlightened man of the times, who had been lately raiſed to the pontifical throne, exerted in vain every effort to calm the rage of a populace that reſpected his virtues. The venerable old man, deceived by an appearance of tranquility, invited the emperor to Rome, where he ſhould find obedient ſubjects ready to proſtrate themſelves at his feet and acknowlege his authority. Otho had ſcarce arrived in the city, with few guards and attendants, on the faith of his promiſes, when his palace was ſurrounded by an enraged mob, who with loud cries, demanded ſatisfaction for the blood of their magiſtrates. The caſtle of St. Angelo, to which the pope had conveyed the emperor, was ready to give way to the multitude, armed with fire and ſword by revenge and a paſſion for liberty. The prince was on the point of falling into the hands of thoſe implacable and ferocious enemies, when the marquis of Tuſcany and the duke of Bavaria flew to his aſſiſtance with ſome troops they had haſtily collected, and by aſtoniſhing efforts of valour, opened themſelves a way to the emperor and extricated him out of this perilous ſituation. He was no ſooner at liberty than he prepared to exert his authority, the people were attacked and obliged to fly in turn, and the blood of the rebels that flowed beneath the ſword of the victor, as well as the hands of the executioner, at length extinguiſhed the ſpirit of rebellion. Otho ſet out upon his return to Germany, exulting in the thought of having eſcaped all the ſnares of Roman perfidy; he

died

died however on the road by poiſoned gloves, which had been preſented by the widow of Creſcentius, not with a view of revenging the death of a huſband whoſe memory ſhe had betrayed, but in reſentment for the contempt of her charms that had been in vain ſacrificed to ambition.

Henry of Bavaria.

THE unanimous voice of Germany conferred the crown on Henry duke of Bavaria, who was the neareſt relation to Otho, and of the ſame family with that prince. The arms of the empire were ſucceſsful in this reign. The Saracens and Greeks loſt a part of the Pouille, and the Romans, having in vain rebelled, were obliged to receive the pontiff whom they had expelled, from the hands of this prince. Henry now intoxicated with a blind devotion, gave himſelf up entirely to eccleſiaſtics, who, having more art and knowlege than the prince, ſeduced him by flattery, and governed him by motives of religion. Under this ſacred cloak, they obtained the moſt aſtoniſhing privileges, and acquired the principal authority in Germany. In Italy, the pope, more artful and more reſpected than the emperor, ſtretched his prerogative farther than any of his predeceſſors; and if Henry did not entirely renounce the right of confirming the election of the pontiffs, he left them however all the power conducive to that end. The gratitude of the church has honoured his name with a place in her hiſtory, but in the annals of policy he will ever be conſidered as a weak prince.

THE houſe of Saxony, that had given four kings to Germany, and three heads to the empire,

loſt

ſoſt both ſceptres, which paſſed into the hands of the family of Franconia. Conrad II, the firſt of this branch, had to contend with rebels who refuſed to acknowlege him; he conciliated their hearts by his prudence, while he ſubdued them by his valour. Under Henry III, who at the age of twelve years inherited the crown of his father; the enemies of the empire and the rivals of his family, exulted in vain expectations, from the tender age of the new emperor. Deaf to the advice of his daſtardly guardians, he marched in perſon againſt the Bohemians, whom he made tributary; he compelled the earls of Holland to acknowlege him for their chief; flew to the protection of the king of Hungary whom his ſubjects had proſcribed, and after re-eſtabliſhing him on the throne, croſſed the Alps, ſubjected Italy, expelled popes who had been crowned without his concurrence, and placed his kinſman Bruno in the chair, who under the name of Leo IX, edified the world by his virtues.

The moſt tender infancy was no way injurious to his ſon. Henry IV, at the age of five years, was charged with the fate of the empire, under the guardianſhip of his mother Agnes; at thirteen he aſſumed the reins of government himſelf, and diſplayed all the qualities of a hero. He was affable, humane and liberal, with the moſt exalted mind and the greateſt intrepidity of any prince of the age: he captivated the hearts of his faithful ſubjects, laid ſedition proſtrate at his feet, and raiſed Germany to a higher pitch of glory than any of his predeceſſors. His penetration and ſagacity ſoon diſcovered

covered the moſt dangerous enemies of his throne. He ſaw the eccleſiaſtics armed with a formidable authority, and the popes with a degree of power and riches that daily augmented. He obſerved ſpreading in Europe maxims which tended to give the clergy a total independance, and conſequently might lead to the ſubverſion of all monarchies. The ignorance of the times readily adopted opinions that were opportunely ſuggeſted by artful eccleſiaſtics at the ſecret tribunal of confeſſion. The prince had but two reſources againſt ſuch arts; thoſe were the right of inveſtiture, by which he was maſter in the nomination to benefices, and that of confirming the pope elected by the Roman clergy; theſe enabled him to appoint none but ſuch as were devoted to his intereſts. Rome, ſenſible of the importance of thoſe two privileges, endeavoured to diſpute his claim to them. Henry was the more ſtrenuous in ſupporting them.—Alexander II, placed in the chair without his participation, imagined he might brave his authority with impunity: the emperor refuſed to acknowlege him, procured a ſecond election, and contrived to have another appointed. The pontiff, ſeeing no ſafety for himſelf but in confuſion, reſolved immediately to ſpread ſedition in the empire; he united with the ancient malecontents, excited others, and after kindling the flames of diſcord in Germany, had the boldneſs to ſummons his prince to Rome. Death however put a ſtop to his career, and ſeemed to have reſtored tranquility, but it only increaſed the ſtorm.

A Monk

A Monk born in the loweſt obſcurity, educated in a cloiſter, trained up in diſputes and controverſy, expert at intrigue, auſtere and ambitious by nature as well as principles, Hildebrand, in fine, ſo celebrated under the name of Gregory VII, aſcended the throne of St. Peter. He employed art and cunning at firſt, and carefully concealed his ambitious deſigns, while his authority was unſettled. He refuſed to declare himſelf pope without the conſent of the emperor, to whom, as to the ſovereign of Rome, he ſent to ſolicit the confirmation of his dignity. Having by this artifice ſecured the chair, he threw off the maſk and openly attacked the right of inveſtiture. Upon the refuſal of the prince to give up his privileges, he cited him before his tribunal, with threats of proceeding againſt him. The contempt of the emperor provoking his pride, he held up the thunders of excommunication, and concluded with diſcharging them on his head. The emperor flew to arms, in order to take vengeance for ſuch an inſult. Nothing could then reſtrain the violence of the pontiff; perſuaded that he was the viceroy of God, even in temporal matters, and inherited a part of his omnipotence: he imagined that kingdoms belonged to him, and thence concluded, that he had a right to ſtrip ſovereigns of their poſſeſſions. He actually deprived Henry of the empire, declared his throne vacant, and abſolved his ſubjects from all fidelity and allegiance to that prince. After this, ſetting no bounds to his extravagant pretenſions, he cited all kings to appear and acknowlege his ſuperior authority; created ſome, confirmed others, actually

depoſed two, and menaced ſeveral more. This intoxication daily increaſing, he inſiſted that all iſlands belonged to him, that all princes were his vaſſals, all people his ſubjects, and accordingly ſent his legates to raiſe taxes and exact hommage. All Europe was aſtoniſhed; ſome ſubmitted, and Germany was divided; Henry inflamed with indignation put his troops in motion in order to chaſtiſe the pontiff. Gregory levied a hoſt of eccleſiaſtics in the dominions of the emperor, and rebellion raiſed its daring head under the banners of the croſs. Germany and Italy were in flames from the borders of the Baltic to the extremities of Sicily. Henry in vain exerted the moſt aſtoniſhing efforts, in order to oppoſe the ſtorm, the terrors inſpired by ſuperſtition had entirely damped the courage of his moſt faithful ſubjects. Looked upon with horror, as an object blaſted by the curſes of excommunication, on the point of being depoſed in a ſolemn aſſembly of the nation, he was obliged to ſubmit to Gregory and croſs the Alps, to ſupplicate the forgiveneſs of that inſolent pontiff. He was made to ſtand three whole days in an open court, his feet naked, in the coldeſt ſeaſon of the year, without any other covering than a wretched woollen garment, and was allowed no nouriſhment but at night; at length he was admitted to implore pardon on his knees for his heroic courage, which he diſgraced by his unworthy humiliation. The ſenſe of this indignity ſoon awoke, and reſuming ſentiments more worthy of himſelf, he made vows to puniſh the author of his diſgrace. He haſtened back to Germany, encouraged his adherents,

adherents, aſſembled a council, depoſed Gregory, and, in his room, ſubſtituted Guibert, who was devoted to the emperor. Gregory, on the other hand, diſcharged his thunders, by which he depoſed Henry, and, through the aſſiſtance of the clergy, formed another aſſembly, compoſed of his factious adherents, wherein Henry was excluded from the throne, and Rodolph, duke of Burgundy, appointed to ſucceed him. Henry, more inflamed by this freſh inſult, firſt marched againſt his rival, and in a bloody battle, deprived him of life and empire. He then turned his arms againſt Italy, drove before him the troops of the counteſs Matilda, a devotee and the protectreſs of Gregory, created a new pope in Rome, and forced his implacable enemy to fly for refuge to Pouille, where he died of grief and vexation. Henry imagined that all his difficulties were now terminated by his death, but the maxims of Gregory became the inheritance of his ſucceſſors. Victor III, and Urban II, inforced them with equal vigour, and employed the ſame reſources. They continued to work upon the paſſions of his ſuperſtitious ſubjects. Phantoms of emperors were raiſed and multiplied, as often as Henry deſtroyed them. Among his domeſtics, his friends, and thoſe whom he had loaded with his favours, he found bigots ready to attempt his life. In ſhort, Urban had the art to ſeduce his eldeſt ſon Conrad to take up arms againſt him: crowned by a faction of the miniſters of peace, he marched to attack a father bending beneath the weight of years, in order to deprive him, by the

blackeſt of all crimes, of a ſceptre of which nature would have ſoon given him the poſſeſſion.

Italy. THE north of Italy, divided by the emperor and the popes, was a perpetual ſcene of conteſt between thoſe two powers. The ſouth recovered tranquility by a new revolution. In caſting an eye over this part of Italy, we are preſented with a view of what is now called the kingdom of Naples, it was then divided into Pouille and Calabria. Both parts were ravaged by the Saracens and Greeks, who diſputed the poſſeſſion of every little town. Every city had its ſovereign who all mutually endeavoured to ſtrip each other. Gaimar reigned at Salernum, a conſiderable city in Pouille; the Saracens laid ſiege to the place and it was reduced to the laſt extremity. Forty Norman gentlemen, on their return from a pilgrimage to the holy land, accidentally arrived in the harbour, and ſeeing the city in ſuch confuſion and diſtreſs, they offered their aſſiſtance to Gaimar in defence of the place. The prince accepted thoſe offers with joy, and gave them the command of part of his troops. Affairs reſumed a new face under the conduct of the ſtrangers. They revived the courage of the inhabitants, led them againſt the enemy, and trained them to arms, by ſeveral ſallies and ſkirmiſhes. When they ſaw that courage had taken place of fear, they marched with all their forces againſt the Saracens, attacked their camp, took it by ſtorm, and put the enemy to flight with dreadful ſlaughter. Gaimar and the whole city offered them the moſt conſiderable preſents, they refuſed any other reward for their ſervices than the pleaſure

ſure of having delivered their fellow chriſtians. Gaimar conjured them to exhort their countrymen to lend their aſſiſtance for the defence of his country; and in order to perſuade them by the excellency of the climate, he loaded the Norman veſſels with the moſt delicious fruits of Italy. The pilgrims ſpread the news, at their return to Normandy. A ſwarm of adventurers prepared to ſeek their fortune in a country, the amazing fertility of which had been ſo much extolled. Tancred de Hauteville, a gentleman of lower Normandy, had been lately diſgraced by his ſovereign. He had twelve ſons, his fortune was inconſiderable, and he then had no hopes of advancing his family at court. He adviſed his children to ſeek a happier lot elſewhere, and to ſeize the opportunity that now offered of eſtabliſhing themſelves in thoſe delicious climates of which they had heard ſo many pleaſing accounts. They all embraced the propoſal of their father with joy, and ſet ſail for Salernum followed by numbers of young people, who, from the natural ardour of their age, and the ſeverity of fortune, were ready to engage in the moſt hazardous deſigns. Pouille was in greater want of protection than ever. The Saracens had made another deſcent, and the Greeks were reduced to the laſt extremity, without any proſpect of relief. In this deplorable ſituation, they looked upon the arrival of the Norman brothers, who voluntarily undertook their defence, as a particular favour of heaven. The prudent advice of theſe ſtrangers, the wiſdom of their proceedings, and their heroic courage ſoon gave a new turn to af-

fairs: the Saracens were repulſed in turn, and the Greeks ſo well ſatisfied with their conduct that they gave the chief command to William, one of the ſtrangers, who, on account of his ſtrength, was called* Braſ-de fer. The new general juſtified their choice; in a few years the Saracens were ſtripped of all Pouille. When he ſaw that his countrymen were ſufficiently numerous to oppoſe the Greeks themſelves, he threw of the maſk, and openly declared that he did not intend that his conqueſts, enriched by his own blood and the blood of his brothers and friends, ſhould fall to the ſhare of the Greeks whom he had defended. His meaſures were ſo well concerted, and purſued with ſuch heroic conſtancy and reſolution that he prevailed; drove out both the Saracens and Greeks whom hatred and revenge had united, and at length, was crowned duke of Pouille. His brother ſucceeded to this dignity and maintained it with equal ſucceſs. Humphrey, another brother of William, inherited the dutchy, but found the pope a formidable enemy. Leo IX, attacked the prince with the thunders of eccleſiaſtic cenſure, ſo terrible in thoſe times, and ſupporting them with more ſubſtantial weapons, put himſelf at the head of his troops and attacked the Normans. Victory abandoned the papal ſtandards; Leo was taken priſoner in a bloody conflict, and, inſtead of meeting with a generous chriſtian in the victor, who honoured the head of the church, he found an able politician who obliged him to acknowlege

* In Engliſh, Iron-arm.

his

his ſovereignty. Robert Guiſcard, the fourth brother, and ſucceſſor to the three former, was not content with Pouille; he attacked the Greeks in Calabria, and drove them out of that country; he then croſſed over into Sicily, where he attacked the Saracens with the ſame good fortune; and, after ſeveral victories, for which he was indebted to his abilities and courage, he made himſelf maſter of the whole iſland, of which he was declared ſovereign. The emperor of Greece alarmed at his rapid progreſs was making preparations to oppoſe it. The active Robert, eager to anticipate his deſigns, entered Thrace at the head of fifteen thouſand men, where he met the emperor with above an hundred thouſand men under his command, put this formidable army to the rout and threatened Conſtantinople: but other affairs ſoon re-called him to Italy. The terrible Gregory VII, had diſcharged his thunders againſt him, and his new ſubjects were ſeeking perhaps a pretext in religion to throw of their chains. His rapid and unexpected return entirely ſuppreſſed thoſe commotions, the gallant prince oppoſed the attempts of the pontiff with ſuch exalted ſpirit and reſolution, and ſo well retained his ſubjects within the bounds of their duty, that he was in a condition to reſume his conqueſts. While he was making preparations for the accompliſhment of theſe deſigns, the face of affairs was totally changed in Rome. The haughty Gregory, preſſed by the arms of Henry IV, beſieged in the caſtle of St. Angelo, and ready to fall into the hands of an enemy juſtly enraged againſt him, was obliged to ſupplicate aſ-

fairs: the Saracens were repulſed in turn, and the Greeks ſo well ſatisfied with their conduct that they gave the chief command to William, one of the ſtrangers, who, on account of his ſtrength, was called* Braſ-de fer. The new general juſtified their choice; in a few years the Saracens were ſtripped of all Pouille. When he ſaw that his countrymen were ſufficiently numerous to oppoſe the Greeks themſelves, he threw of the maſk, and openly declared that he did not intend that his conqueſts, enriched by his own blood and the blood of his brothers and friends, ſhould fall to the ſhare of the Greeks whom he had defended. His meaſures were ſo well concerted, and purſued with ſuch heroic conſtancy and reſolution that he prevailed; drove out both the Saracens and Greeks whom hatred and revenge had united, and at length, was crowned duke of Pouille. His brother ſucceeded to this dignity and maintained it with equal ſucceſs. Humphrey, another brother of William, inherited the dutchy, but found the pope a formidable enemy. Leo IX, attacked the prince with the thunders of eccleſiaſtic cenſure, ſo terrible in thoſe times, and ſupporting them with more ſubſtantial weapons, put himſelf at the head of his troops and attacked the Normans. Victory abandoned the papal ſtandards; Leo was taken priſoner in a bloody conflict, and, inſtead of meeting with a generous chriſtian in the victor, who honoured the head of the church, he found an able politician who obliged him to acknowlege

* In Engliſh, Iron-arm.

his

his ſovereignty. Robert Guiſcard, the fourth brother, and ſucceſſor to the three former, was not content with Pouille; he attacked the Greeks in Calabria, and drove them out of that country; he then croſſed over into Sicily, where he attacked the Saracens with the ſame good fortune; and, after ſeveral victories, for which he was indebted to his abilities and courage, he made himſelf maſter of the whole iſland, of which he was declared ſovereign. The emperor of Greece alarmed at his rapid progreſs was making preparations to oppoſe it. The active Robert, eager to anticipate his deſigns, entered Thrace at the head of fifteen thouſand men, where he met the emperor with above an hundred thouſand men under his command, put this formidable army to the rout and threatened Conſtantinople: but other affairs ſoon re-called him to Italy. The terrible Gregory VII, had diſcharged his thunders againſt him, and his new ſubjects were ſeeking perhaps a pretext in religion to throw of their chains. His rapid and unexpected return entirely ſuppreſſed thoſe commotions, the gallant prince oppoſed the attempts of the pontiff with ſuch exalted ſpirit and reſolution, and ſo well retained his ſubjects within the bounds of their duty, that he was in a condition to reſume his conqueſts. While he was making preparations for the accompliſhment of theſe deſigns, the face of affairs was totally changed in Rome. The haughty Gregory, preſſed by the arms of Henry IV, beſieged in the caſtle of St. Angelo, and ready to fall into the hands of an enemy juſtly enraged againſt him, was obliged to ſupplicate aſ-

ſiſtance from the hero whom he had excommunicated. The generous Robert flew to his relief, forced his way into Rome, obliged the emperor to fly, and then returned with the pope to Pouille where he loaded him with honours. An authentic act, by which Robert was acknowleged ſovereign of Pouille, Calabria and Sicily, with the title of duke, on the condition of paying homage and a trifling acknowlegement to his ſee, was the reward with which Gregory requited the eſſential and generous ſervice of his benefactor. Thus four adventurers founded the monarchy of Naples that ſtill makes ſo conſiderable a figure in Europe. The ſons of Robert inherited his poſſeſſions, and his poſterity diſſatisfied with the title of duke, as not proportioned to the extent of their power aſſumed that of king, which the world acknowleged.

France. FRANCE now exhibited the reign of Lothaire, remarkable only for the weakneſs of the monarch, the inſolence of the nobles, and the oppreſſion of the people. Lewis V, ſon to this prince, had a reign of ſtill greater confuſion, his life was more ignoble, and he died poiſoned by his wife. We are here preſented with a famous revolution. The crown, which by right belonged to Charles duke of Loraine, brother of Lothaire, and paternal uncle to Lewis, was taken from him by the nobles who, after the example of the Germans, at length rejected the poſterity of the Pepins. Thus the deſcendants of theſe heroes, loſt, by their ſtupidity and indolence, after a poſſeſſion of two hundred and thirty-five years, the throne which courage and capacity

capacity had uſurped. The French ſought among the nobles a perſon worthy of the ſcepter; the choice fell upon the fortunate Hugh Capet, whoſe poſterity have enjoyed the crown eight hundred years without interruption. Hugh was grandſon of Robert, whom the French had elected king, in the room of Charles *the Simple*; his father, was called Hugh *the Abbot*, on account of the rich abbeys which he poſſeſſed, was reſpected by the nation for his gallant defence of Paris againſt the Barbarians. Hugh Capet inherited the courage of his anceſtors, and had preſerved France under Lothaire. This family poſſeſſed the dutchies of Paris and Orleans, and thoſe two cities from their vicinity to the Loire and the Seine, were the moſt ſecure bulwarks of the monarchy againſt the attempts of the Normans. Thus the intereſt of the ſtate, the gratitude of the nation, public eſteem, the virtues of his anceſtors and perſonal merit were the pretenſions of Hugh, and thoſe auguſt titles procured him the crown: but, indebted to his equals for his elevation, he was obliged to compenſate for the favour, by admitting the legality of thoſe uſurpations made upon the throne to which he was raiſed.

The family of Capet obtain the crown of France.

In the anarchy and confuſion that prevailed in preceding reigns, we have obſerved that the governors of the provinces had made themſelves independant, diſdaining to obey maſters who were incapable of commanding. The prince was obliged to confirm thoſe depredations, and ſuffer the ſtate to be parcelled out into as many different ſovereignties as there had been rebellious nobles: thus

thus the feudal government, till then only ſupported by violence and injuſtice, was ratified by the ſanction of the laws: the monarch was now no more than an hereditary chief, the poſſeſſor of a larger manor, and the firſt amongſt his equals. Hugh ſhewed himſelf worthy of the rank to which he had been raiſed by the voice of his country. If murmurs were heard, on account of the ſeverity he exerciſed on the unfortunate Charles, who, with his whole family was betrayed into his hands by a perfidious biſhop, his many virtues ſhew that his heart diſavowed that proceeding, which muſt be rather attributed to the ſad but neceſſary policy of his rank of ſovereign. The tears and regret, with which his memory was honoured, increaſed by comparing his talents with the weakneſs of his ſon, to whom he quietly tranſmitted the ſcepter. The ſubmiſſion of Robert to the pope, who had the boldneſs to excommunicate him; his pliancy in renouncing a beloved conſort, becauſe the match was not agreeable to the pontiff; his immenſe donations to the church; the anthems and hymns he compoſed for different feſtivals; but above all, his religious barbarity in burning ſo many poor wretches, for a bare ſuſpicion of hereſy; all contributed to render his memory dear to the clergy, and his name is ſtill revered on their altars; but if we look for the king or the man in Robert, we are far from finding the qualities that conſtitute either. He was a blind inſtrument in the hands of a wicked and capricious conſort; his ſhameful condeſcenſion diſgraced his beſt talents, and France

remained

remained without luſtre or greatneſs while he reigned. Henry I, who ſaw his own mother making prepararions to dethrone him, preſerved his crown by the aſſiſtance of the duke of Normandy, and forced his brother to reſt ſatisfied with the dutchy of Burgundy, which remained three hundred years in the poſſeſſion of that branch of the royal family. France was ſtill governed by the feudal ſyſtem, and continued in obſcurity while attached to that mode of adminiſtration, until ſome prince of ſuperior talents appeared, who had the art to unite the ſtrength of the nation. under Philip I, a prince below mediocrity, the ſtate was ſtill farther from aſpiring to any fame or glory; but while the monarch, alternately ſunk in ſuperſtition and ſenſuality, was ſcarce mentioned or known in Europe, one of his vaſſals acquired immortal glory, together with a kingdom that made him his equal.

England. We have ſeen the people of the north for upwards of two centuries, exerting all their efforts againſt England, in order to ſtrip the poſſeſſors of that country. In the beginning of the eleventh century two kings, of different nations, diſputed that conqueſt with the moſt violent animoſity. Ethelred, of the ancient Saxon line, uſed all his endeavours to preſerve the crown of his anceſtors; Sueno, king of Denmark, aſſembled all his forces to retain his conqueſt. Fortune favoured the Dane, the Saxon was obliged to take refuge in Normandy with his ſons, Alfred and Edward. Canute, ſon to Sueno, who inherited the valour of his father without having his barbarity, triumphed

phed by his heroic courage over all the attempts of the ancient poſſeſſors, and at length happily united the minds of his ſubjects, having conciliated their hearts by his numberleſs virtues. After his death, and that of his children, the hatred of the Engliſh revived, the Danes were exterminated from the iſland, and continual emigrations had ſo far exhauſted their countrymen, that they loſt all hopes of recovering their conqueſt. The Saxon race was recalled, but Alfred, ſon to Ethelred, was crowned only to be butchered by the traitor Godwin, whom the blind affection of the prince had raiſed to the higheſt rank next the throne. The ungrateful and perfidious aſſaſſin had not reſolution to aſſume the place of his victim, but called in Edward, the ſecond ſon of Ethelred, who had taken refuge at the court of Normandy. Godwin, who was in a condition to dictate laws to his maſter, obliged him to marry his daughter, and at the ſame time effected a match between his ſon Harold and the heireſs of the Daniſh monarchs, from whoſe hand he might hereafter derive conſiderable pretenſions. Edward, with the moſt exalted virtues of a chriſtian, united all the talents of the greateſt prince; his memory is conſecrated in the annals of the church, and in the hiſtory of his own nation he will preſerve an immortal place, for his humanity and love of juſtice, which inſpired him with the glorious reſolution to renounce the privilege of oppreſſing his ſpecies. Magna Charta, the eternal monument of his love for his people, is ſtill the baſis of that ineſtimable bleſſing of liberty which conſtitutes

ſtitutes the glory and happineſs of England. The too early death of this excellent prince filled the whole kingdom with lamentation and mourning, and by the extinction of the ancient ſovereigns, opened a field to the ambition of two competitors. Harold invoked the rights of the Danes which he derived from his wife, and the nation declared for him. The duke of Normandy exhibited a will of St. Edward, dictated by gratitude, and by which he was called to the Saxon throne. Thoſe two princes, at the ſame time, made preparations to decide the uncertainty of their pretenſions tions by force of arms. William put to ſea with the flower of his Norman troops, and as ſoon as he landed, gave orders to burn his whole fleet, to cut off all hopes of retreat from his people. He marched haſtily againſt his rival, who was equally impatient for the conflict. They met near Haſtings, where Harold and his brothers, after performing prodigies of valour, loſt their lives, leaving the fortunate William in poſſeſſion of the crown and victory. The victor marched directly to London and eſtabliſhed his authority: he then ran over the different provinces, which he viſited as a conqueror; and, perceiving that the Engliſh were continually reſtleſs under a foreign yoke, which they deteſted, he oppreſſed them with all the rigours of deſpotiſm, and chained down rebellion by terror. Having thus made himſelf maſter of a powerful kingdom, which he treated like a tyrant, he returned to Normandy, to enjoy the fruits of his labours, in the midſt of his ancient ſubjects, whom he governed with paternal affection. A paltry jeſt of Philip, who

was

was jealous of the glory and elevation of his vaſſal, provoked the latter to take up arms againſt the king; and, while like a robber, he was avenging with fire and ſword a trivial inſult, he died at the ſiege of Mante, after having divided his dominions among his children. Robert, though the eldeſt, had Normandy alone for his inheritance. The conqueror, perceiving in his ſon William, a temper more reſolute and inflexible, judged he was better qualified to preſerve his conqueſt, and gave him England. Henry had but a few places and a ſum of money. William followed the plan of his father, and governed his ſubjects by terror. Avarice, in multiplying taxes, ravaged England, but did not prevent her gathering ſtrength under this reign. This prince, whoſe reſolution few have equalled, united and ſet every ſpring in motion, and notwithſtanding the ſuperſtition of the times, his attention was continually awake to repreſs the ambition of the clergy. Lanfranc, archbiſhop of Canterbury, having attempted to enlarge the prerogatives of his ſee, was obliged to fly to Rome to ſeek a juſtification of his unprofitable zeal. The whole ſtate gathered ſtrength under this ſevere, but clear-ſighted prince, while Normandy languiſhed under Robert the meekeſt and weakeſt of men.

Spain. In Spain the diviſions among the Moors ſtill encreaſed, by which they daily loſt ground, and every year ſome part of their dominions paſſed under the yoke of their rivals. Among the Chriſtians, the kings of Leon, weakened by the ſeparation of Caſtille, acted no more than a ſubordinate

dinate part. Navarre roſe in power; Sancho, one of her kings, who married the only daughter of the count of Caſtille, united the two ſtates by this alliance, and became the moſt powerful ſovereign in thoſe parts. It was this prince who, after a famous battle which he gained by his valour, bound the infidels with thoſe very chains which, in confidence of victory, they had forged for the Chriſtians. Of the poſſeſſions of this king, to whom his contemporaries gave the title of great, his ſons formed three kingdoms. Ferdinand inherited the crown of Caſtille, Garcias held Navarre, and Arragon fell to the ſhare of Ramir. The marriage of the heireſs of Leon with Ferdinand, by uniting that kingdom to Caſtille, made that prince the chief monarch of Spain, and his valour continually enlarging the boundaries of his dominions, he at length pitched his ſtandards beyond the banks of the Tagus. Inflated with this ſucceſs, he was no longer ſatisfied with the name of king, but aſſumed the title of emperor. Henry III, then maſter of Germany, was offended that any ſovereign in Europe ſhould dare to claim an equality of rank with himſelf, menaced the king; and the pope, coinciding with the views of the German prince, forbad the Caſtilian to aſſume a new title. The pontiff and emperor not ſatisfied with a ſubmiſſion to this, inſiſted farther that Ferdinand ſhould acknowlege himſelf a vaſſal of the empire: terrified by the thunders of the vatican, with which he was threatened, the Spaniſh monarch was ready to comply, when the famous Roderigo, ſo well known under the

name

name of Cid, revived his courage, and perſuaded him to brave the anathemas of Rome and the arms of Germany. The diviſion of the territories of this prince became a ſource of contention at his death. Sancho, diſſatisfied with his narrow territory, ſucceſſively attacked all his brothers, and, no leſs fortunate than unjuſt, found means to ſtrip each. The city of Zamora alone, that was the portion of one of his ſiſters, was wanting to his ambition; he was killed in attempting to make himſelf maſter of it. Alphonſus VI, one of the brothers of Sancho, that had been ſtriped like the reſt, and whom the ſuſpicions of his brother had obliged to take ſhelter in a cloiſter, quitted his retreat, and united on his head the ſeveral crowns of his father. The triumphs over the Moors were multiplied under this prince; he penetrated into Andalouſia, and there deſtroyed two ſmall kingdoms, which he annexed to his own; he ſubjected to his authority a part of the banks of the Tagus; and, purſuing the courſe of that river, advanced into the moſt weſtern part of Spain, where his ſucceſs founded a new kingdom.

Portugal.

MANY young noblemen from foreign countries were aſſembled round the ſtandards of the king of Caſtille, and emulouſly ſtrove to ſignalize themſelves againſt the Moors. Among thoſe ſplendid competitors for glory, Raimond and Henry, two princes of the houſe of Burgundy, were diſtinguiſhed for their valour and prudence, and attracted the admiration even of their rivals. Alphonſus charmed with their merit, was reſolved

to

to attach them to his intereſt by the cloſeſt ties. He gave his daughter Uraca to Raimond, with Galicia as a portion, which he erected into a principality. Henry obtained Thereſa, the natural daughter of the ſame king, with the ſovereignty of all the lands he ſhould conquer on the coaſts of the ocean, on condition, however, that he ſhould pay homage to Caſtile. Henry performed wonders, his arms were triumphant in all parts; under the title of count, he ſubjected all the fertile country that is ſituate between the Mindo and the mouth of the Tagus. Thus the valour of this prince laid the foundation of a kingdom, which, enlarged by his ſucceſſors, has ſince performed ſo conſiderable a part.

Portugal founded by Henry of Burgundy.

The Moors, in the mean time, alarmed at the progreſs of the Chriſtians, called in the Saracens from Africa. The king of Morocco came to their aſſiſtance, followed by a deluge of Barbarians; but, after ſpreading terror to the extremities of Spain, he was overpowered by Alphonſus, who, in a ſingle campaign, diſplayed all the reſources of the military art, defeated and diſperſed the troops of the African prince, and obliged him to fly to his own dominions.

Poland now emerged from her obſcurity; the virtuous Mieclas I, had baniſhed idolatry from that country; and, under his ſucceſſor Otho the great, it was erected into a kingdom. Boleſlas I, deſirous of ſhewing himſelf worthy of the title with which he had been recently honoured, extended his frontiers to the Oder and Tanais, obliged the neighbouring princes to acknowlege

Poland.

themſelves his vaſſals, and made his country no leſs flouriſhing at home than formidable abroad. Mieclas II, the unworthy ſucceſſor of this great man, by his indolence loſt Moravia and Sileſia, that had been conquered by his father. His widow, who governed after his death, as guardian of Caſimir I, was driven out on account of her mal-adminiſtration; and the young king, who ſhared in the diſgrace of his mother, retreated to the monaſtery of Cluny, where he devoted himſelf to retirement. The ſtate, in the mean time, ſunk into a dreadful anarchy, was groaning under every ſpecies of calamity, and ſaw no other reſource but in recalling the legitimate ſovereign. Caſimir quitted, not without pain, a ſolitude that was dear to him, and with ſighs aſcended a throne for which he ſeemed but little calculated, but where, however, he united all the virtues of a hermit with the talents of the greateſt prince. Under his ſon, Boleſlas II, Ruſſia was made tributary, Moravia and Sileſia were recovered, the ſovereigns of Bohemia found a generous protector, and Poland roſe to the ſummit of greatneſs; the glory of the ſtate was eclipſed in a moment with the proſperity of the monarch. A biſhop of Cracow reproved with intemperate zeal the pleaſures of his maſter, and had the boldneſs to excommunicate him. Boleſlas, hurried on by impatient rage, flew to the church in ſearch of the prelate, and, inflamed with reſentment at the ſight of his enemy, butchered him at the foot of the altar. The terrible Gregory VII, then ſeated on the papal throne, employed the moſt dreadful ven-

vengeance; his thunders were diſcharged on the people, as well as the prince; Poland loſt the title of kingdom: Boleſlas was depoſed, proſcribed and given up to rebellious rage. Poland once more became a dutchy, and the unfortunate monarch, after having in vain ſtruggled with his unhappy deſtiny, an object of horror to his people, who had been ſo long triumphant under his auſpices, was obliged to retreat from his country in the moſt abject diſguiſe. Sacerdotal rage purſued him from one aſylum to another, and, like a fugitive vagabond, he wandered from place to place, and, after being driven out by thoſe very perſons on whom he had heaped favours, the unhappy prince, once ſo powerful, was forced to ſubmit to the moſt degrading employment in order to prolong his wretched exiſtence; but the vengeance of the ſacred body was not ſatiated until he periſhed by the hands of murderous ruffians. All was anarchy and confuſion in Poland; and that ſtate, which had ſo ſuddenly grown formidable, and was now more rapidly diſmembered by a number of petty tyrants, no longer made any figure in the world.

Bohemia. BOHEMIA drew advantages from theſe calamities: this country, which till then had been governed by dukes, demanded the title which Poland had lately loſt, and Ladiſlas, her firſt king, obtained it from the emperor, who conferred it on him in the midſt of a ſolemn diet. She now raiſed her head; Moravia, Sileſia, and even a part of Poland, were made ſubject to her ſcepter.

Ladiſlas 1ſt king.

HUNGARY began to afford intereſting events. Geiſa, whom love converted to chriſtianity, introduced that worſhip among his people, and, by wiſe laws, humanized thoſe barbarous manners to which they had adhered for ſo many centuries, after their anceſtors had quitted the froezn heights of mount Caucaſus. Stephen his ſon ardently purſued the ſame work, and his zeal was rewarded by the pope with a title, which that prince has tranſmitted to his ſucceſſors.

Ruſſia.

RUSSIA experienced the like revolution in religion and from a ſimilar cauſe. Her ſovereign Uladiſlas, by marrying a Greek, adopted the religion of the princeſs whom he loved, and the whole nation received the opinions of the church of Conſtantinople, to which they have faithfully adhered ever ſince. Her ſovereigns from that time formed alliances with the other princes of Europe. Henry I, king of France, married a daughter of the Ruſſian monarch.

Uladiſlas marries a Greek and follows her religion, which is eſtabliſhed in Ruſſia, and remains ſo to this day.

Empire of Greece.

IT is with pain we turn our eyes on the empire of Greece. Parricides and fanaticiſm continued to mark her deſtiny. Romanus, reeking with the blood of his father, diſhonoured, by effeminacy and indolence, the throne which his unnatural barbarity had uſurped. The valour of Nicephorus, who obtained continual triumphs in the eaſt, could not preſerve him from the ſnares of the clergy, whoſe treaſure he had ſeized. He periſhed by the hands of his conſort, who, with the aſſiſtance of the clerical body, procured the crown for John Zimiſces. The latter, whoſe piety has been extolled by the church, and who in fact was worthy

of

of riſing by more honourable ſteps, acquired immortal glory by his victories over the Bulgarians and Ruſſians. His ſucceſſors were Baſil and Conſtantine, both ſons to Romanus, whom Zimiſces had adopted: Baſil was a great politician and able captain, but his avarice and ſeverity diſgraced his talents; Conſtantine, ſatisfied with the honours and pleaſures his rank procured, left all the burthen of commanding to his brother. Romanus Argyrus, the huſband of Zoe, daughter to Conſtantine, died by poiſon adminiſtered by his conſort, who gave the crown to Michael the Paphlagonian. This prince, agitated by remorſe on the throne, and weary of bending like a ſlave under the yoke of a wife whom he deſpiſed, abandoned both for a life of retirement and ſolitude. He was replaced by Michael Calefates, whom the ſame Zoe raiſed; from the moſt abject condition, to ſhare the ſupreme authority with herſelf, not as a huſband and companion, but as a ſon whom ſhe had adopted. He was ſoon after plunged back into his primitive meanneſs, and puniſhed with the loſs of his eyes for attemptiug to dethrone his benefactreſs. Zoe, ſtill miſtreſs of the ſupreme rank, by the unanimous conſent of a people who adored her, placed a third huſband on the throne, and reigned quietly with Conſtantine Monomacus. The empire, which continued to loſe ſtrength under this reign and that of Theodora ſiſter to Zoe, was on the very brink of deſtruction after the death of thoſe princeſſes, through the incapacity of Michael Stratioticus, whom the faction of the eunuchs of the palace had inveſted with the pur-

ple. The ſenate and army obliged this phantom of an emperor to hide himſelf in a cloiſter, and raiſed, for the firſt time, the blood of Commenes to the throne. Iſaac, illuſtrious by his abilities and courage, was beginning to give hopes of re-eſtabliſhing the proſperity of the ſtate, when he was attacked by a diſorder which he thought incurable; he deſcended from the throne therefore and retired to a convent; nor could he be perſuaded afterwards to reſume the ſcepter, though a perfect recovery had entirely diſſipated his apprehenſions. Ducas, whom that great prince nominated for his ſucceſſor, did not juſtify the diſtinction with which he was honoured. He was juſt, humane, an excellent man in private life, but a weak emperor; he looked on without emotion, while the barbarians were ravaging the lands contiguous to Conſtantinople, and inſulted the very walls of the imperial city. His widow Eudoxia, who reigned with her three children, artfully drew out of the hands of the patriarch the obligation ſhe had given never to marry again; ſhe effected this by flattering the prelate with the hopes of ſeeing her married to one of his relations; but ſhe no ſooner got poſſeſſion of the paper, than ſhe broke through the vain engagement, in favour of Romanus Diogenes, on whom ſhe beſtowed her perſon and empire, and who diſplayed a valour worthy of that elevation. Fortune betrayed him in a battle; he fell into the hands of a generous ſultan, who ſeemed to delight in ſetting him at liberty. Being ſent back loaded with preſents and favours by an enemy whom he had offended, he found, among

among his own ſubjects, barbarous monſters who made him expire under the moſt cruel tortures. Michael Parapinaces, the ſon of Ducas, made advantage of the misfortunes of Diogenes and aſſumed the purple. The infamy with which he ſtained it by his effeminacy, obliged him to abandon it, and ſeek for ſafety under the habit of a monk. Two Nicephorus's then conteſted the ſcepter, the conqueror, who put out the eyes of his rival, diſgraced the throne which he poſſeſſed but three years. After this, Iſaac and Alexis Commenes reviving the remembrance of their father, who was ſo lately beloved, laid claim to the ſcepter of which they had been deprived by baſe uſurpers. The ſenate, who approved their pretenſions, rejected the elder, and preferred Alexis, as having more reſolution and capacity to govern the helm in a tempeſtuous ſeaſon. This was the Alexis ſo well known and ſo much decry'd in the hiſtory of the cruſades, but to whom the veracity of an hiſtorian cannot refuſe exalted genius, ſingular courage, and a capacity to govern that was altogether extraordinary in thoſe days, and particularly a policy and ſagacity that never were miſtaken with regard to his true intereſt.

Venice. LIBERTY was ſtill unſhaken at Venice and continued to make navigation and commerce flouriſh. The fleets of this republic now covered all the ſeas of Italy and Greece; they entered Propontis, Syria and Egypt, and thus united three parts of our Hemiſphere. Riches and plenty, that flowed from this proſperity, gave new luſtre to the city and freſh vigour to the ſtate. Land forces, pro-

portioned to her maritime ſtrength, had already placed her above the fears of her neighbours; and the Hungarians who ventured to attack her, ſhewed her power by their defeat. This republic, not long after, made one of the moſt glorious conqueſts recorded in hiſtory. Dalmatia, haraſſed by the ravages of barbarians, and ſtill more diſtreſſed by the tumults and diſorders which reigned in the very heart of her cities, looked with a jealous eye on the happy condition of Venice. The tranquility which ſhe enjoyed, the riches and glory ſhe daily acquired, filled the Dalmatians with admiration of a government that produced ſuch happy effects. From an opinion that happineſs would never revive within their walls, until they ſhould live in ſubjection to the ſame laws, they implored their neighbours to take them under their protection, and, by a deliberation no leſs voluntary than general, they ſubmitted for ever to Venice. The latter, by the addition of this rich province, now raiſed her head ſtill higher, and made a figure among the greater powers.

Genoa. A NOBLE emulation was now kindled in another city of Italy. Genoa, that, after the fall of the Roman empire became the ſport of barbarians and tyrants, determined to ſhake off her chains, and drive out the counts who oppreſſed her. The example of Venice inflaming the minds of the Genoeſe, they ſeemed to vie with each other for the honour of traverſing the waves, in ſearch of reſources to compenſate for the ſterility and poverty of their country. They created a doge, eſtabliſhed a ſenate, and formed a marine: their endeavours

deavours were carried on with amazing activity; they followed the Venetians in all their expeditions, and, in a few years, found themſelves in a condition to rival them in the advantages of commerce as well as in the empire of the ſea.

Asia. Asia ſtill exhibited califfs at Bagdad. Thoſe ſplendid phantoms were ſeated on the altar, but deprived of the throne. Their empire was entirely fallen under the yoke of the Turks. This people had paſſed the Tigris and Euphrates, and thence marching towards the eaſt, had ſubverted the throne of Perſia, and carried their conqueſts as far as the Indies. At the ſame time other Dynaſties advanced towards the weſt, and, ſpreading themſelves like a torrent, through Syria and Aſia Minor, formed of thoſe numerous provinces a ſwarm of petty ſovereignties, from the Euphrates to the Boſphorus.

The califfs, deſcended from Fatima, ſtill maintained themſelves in Egypt. Cairo daily increaſed, and the court that reſided in that city diſplayed magnificence and the fine arts. Luxury aud indolence however were gradually ſapping the throne, and had already planted the ſeeds of an approaching revolution.

Africa. The weſtern coaſts of Africa were ſtill under the dominion of the kings of Morocco; thoſe barbarous princes were little known in hiſtory but by their invaſions of Spain, where they ſpread terror and devaſtation.

REFELC-

REFLECTIONS.

Religions. MAHOMETISM loſt nothing by the misfortunes of its pontiffs. The Turks who had ſtripped them of their ſovereignty, embraced that worſhip, and eſtabliſhed it likewiſe in Aſia. But by what prodigy did this ferocious people ſo ſuddenly give way to the opinions of nations whom they had ſubjected, and how came thoſe conquerors to ſubmit ſo readily to the ſuperſtitious doctrine of the vanquiſhed? We muſt not form an idea of the idolatry of the Tartars of Aſia, from that of the Greeks and Romans. The latter, acknowleged an independant being, a creator and preſerver, the avenger of crimes and rewarder of virtues, whom gratitude and admiration made it a duty in men to honour and revere.

WE find in their works ſublime ideas of thoſe great truths. In one part, Jupiter is made the beginning of every thing; he fills all, he watches over all; the ſmalleſt parts of this world do not eſcape his attention and care: at other times, he is a being ſo great, that he can bear no compariſon, or ſecondary power; he is a maſter who reigns over the maſters of the world with as ample authority as the latter have over their meaneſt ſubjects. In ſhort, under the name of Jupiter, we always may trace a God, ſuch as he is deſcribed in the pureſt revelation.

THE other Gods were conſidered only as his miniſters, or rather as ingenious emblems, which repreſented the attributes of his providence, and more

more eaſily reminded them of his power and goodneſs. With this elevated doctrine abſurd fables were doubtleſs blended. But what religion, alas! has not been diſgraced by them? But the grounds of this being excellent, we may readily conceive that ſuch a religion, in propoſing rewards and puniſhments beyond the tomb, was ſufficient for ſociety, as it encouraged virtue, which conſtitutes the happineſs of mankind.

The Turks had nothing ſimilar to this; they were in the ſame circumſtances with thoſe barbarians already mentioned: they could have no great attachment for their idolatry, which was an abſurd collection of ſtupid traditions. When flouriſhing nations preſented more rational ſyſtems to their view, they eaſily conceived the inſufficiency of their own, and were ſenſible that the ſuperior advantages of the former would contribute to their happineſs.

Three religions attracted their attention Mahometiſm, the doctrine of the magi, and Chriſtianity. That of the magi, lately fallen with the throne of the ancient Perſians, had nothing venerable in the eyes of Barbarians. Beſides, a religion that conſiſted in only adoring a Supreme Being under the image of the elements, as the ſources of his favours and goodneſs, that had neither temple, ſacrifice or myſtery, was too ſimple in its doctrine for ignorant people, who ſeldom admire any thing but what they do not comprehend, and was too plain in its ceremonies for the multitude, who have no veneration but for that which preſents a magnificent exterior. The religion of the magi

magi therefore was not formed to gain a preference with the Turks.

When they penetrated into the ſouthern parts of Aſia, chriſtianity was no longer triumphant there; that worſhip was ſunk in oppreſſion and obſcurity. It was not therefore adapted to the taſte of a warlike nation, who panted after battles and triumphs. Mahometiſm then ſitting triumphant on one of the moſt ſplendid thrones of the world, ſurrounded by trophies, and founded on victories, naturally dazzled a nation of ſoldiers. Nor could it be expected that ſuch a people would prefer chriſtianity, that impoſes ſuch a reſtraint on the paſſions, to laws that ſo freely indulge them, and which, in throwing open the moſt extenſive field to conqueſt and ambition, made a duty of inclination.

Idolatry was ſtill ſettled in the north, but Chriſtianity daily gained ground over it. The latter was eſtabliſhed firmly in moſt of the kingdoms watered by the Baltic, and actually reigned from the Tanais to the banks of the Wolga.

The ſchiſm between the two churches was now complete; that which the genius of Phocius had finiſhed, was recently cemented for ever by the addreſs of Michael Corularius. Mutual hatred planted boundaries which time has never been able to remove, and from this century no real union has been effected between Conſtantinople and Rome.

Two ſects diſturbed the peace of the weſtern church. Certain eccleſiaſtics ſpread opinions at Orleans, that were conſidered as new. No juſt idea

idea can be formed of the doctrine of thoſe ſectaries. They were called Manicheans, but we cannot diſcover that they actually adopted the doctrine of the two principles. If their ſentiments have been repreſented in odious colours, their morals were not treated with leſs ſeverity. They have been charged with the dreadful crime which nature abhors, and the moſt ſhameful impurities were conſidered as a part of their ceremonies. It appears however that their greateſt crime was their imprudent declamations againſt the abuſes of authority committed by men in a reſpectable ſtation. This enormous tranſgreſſion confirmed the truth of all the other charges, and was not to be forgiven. They were condemned in a council aſſembled at Orleans, and burnt alive by order of the biſhops, under the authority of king Robert. Thoſe unhappy men ſhouted for joy at the ſight of the ſtake, and, without waiting for the aſſiſtance of the executioner, threw themſelves into the flames. The queen Conſtantia, who imagined her confeſſor guilty of thoſe errors, went to ſee him executed, and, after ſtriking out one of his eyes with her ſcepter, ſhe looked on, without the leaſt emotion, while he was conſuming in the flames.

Berenger, the famous archdeacon of Angers, introduced, or rather revived the other ſect. We have obſerved, that in the ninth century, the real preſence in the ſacrament was attacked by Scotus Erigenes. That opinion however triumphed, and for two hundred years no perſon had attempted to diſpute this doctrine, ſo dear to religion. Berenger, one of the oracles of his time, ventured to revive the

diſpute.

diſpute. His eloquence, which was admired in thoſe barbarous days, gained him numberleſs followers at Angers, and his writings procured him others in every part of France. The church took the alarm, and many enemies were raiſed againſt him. Some attacked him in their writings, he replied. It was at length found neceſſary to uſe other weapons beſides the pen in order to reduce the rebel. Councils were aſſembled, his doctrine was condemned, and he eſcaped death only by retracting his opinions. He ſoon after reſumed his former ſentiments, of which a diſavowal had been extorted. Rome took cognizance of the affair, he was cited to appear at that tribunal, before which kings themſelves trembled. Fear obliged him once more to abjure his doctrine, but he ſtill returned to his opinions as quickly as he diſavowed them; he recanted ten times, but never was perfectly reclaimed, and at length died in retirement, leaving it a doubt in what ſentiments he expired.

In the liſt of religious quarrels, we may alſo place the arguments of thoſe who diſputed about names: thoſe were a ſpecies of divines who maintained that the attributes of God, even thoſe which appeared the moſt widely different, had no other diſtinction but in the names themſelves; ſo that juſtice and mercy entirely confounded in reality, had no diſparity but in the ſounds that expreſſed their effects. This dark and unintelligible notion that ſhould have been confined to the ſchools, diſturbed the whole church. The moſt grave doctors entered the liſts of argument, councils were aſ-

ſembled

ſembled and condemned the authors of thoſe opinions, who complained that their judges did not underſtand their meaning: their complaints were I believe juſt, for they did not really underſtand themſelves better.

While zealous divines interrupted the tranquility of the church by their diſputes, men influenced by a more gentle ſpirit of enthuſiaſm retired to deſarts, valleys and foreſts, in ſearch of peace and virtue. A number of different orders were eſtabliſhed and peopled the woods with pious hermits. The love of virtue had, no doubt, a great ſhare in thoſe venerable foundations, but the deſire of ſafety and quiet contributed to increaſe thoſe devout colonies. At a time when fanaticiſm, war and licentiouſneſs, made one half of Europe a theatre of diſtreſs and miſery, men naturally thought it a happineſs to conſecrate their days in thoſe retreats, which religion made reſpectable to the moſt abandoned and ferocious plunderers. Tyrants were awed by ſuch auſtere piety, and admiration of virtues ſo contrary to their own practice, made them conſider thoſe new monaſteries as ſacred.

Among the religious orders that aroſe towards the end of the eleventh century, four were chiefly remarkable. Robert of Moleſme founded Citeaux, which, by the ſole genius of one man, ſoon ſpread over all the weſt, and even held ſtates in ſubjection. Bruno, amidſt the moſt frightful precipices of the Alps, formed that auſtere ſociety that is devoted to ſolitude and ſilence, and whoſe timid piety thinks it preferable to retire from all the

duties of ſociety, rather than expoſe themſelves to the contagion of their vices, in ſerving mankind. Gerard Tenque, prefering the virtues beneficial to humanity, opened the famous hoſpital of St John, at Jeruſalem. This venerable man, whom zeal conducted from Provence to Paleſtine, was affected with the diſtreſſes of thoſe pilgrims, whom devotion led into countries and climates ſo remote and ſo different from their own, and conceived the reſolution of devoting himſelf entirely to the protection and relief of thoſe unfortunate people. He communicated his deſign to ſome Europeans; compaſſion operated in the minds of the benevolent and humane; Gerard formed a ſociety of virtuous men, who united with him in devoting themſelves to the double object of aſſiſting the poor and attending the ſick.

Thus charity laid the foundation of this order of men, who afterwards became ſo famous by their valour, and who, at Rhodes and Malta, acquired immortal glory. In fine, Robert d'Arbriſſelles, eſtabliſhed in Poitou the order known by the name of Fontevraud, where the firſt monaſtery was erected; it would ſeem that galantry had dictated the rules of this ſingular order, had not the ſanctity of the founder proved that the honour was due to the ſpirit of religion.

Popes. The ſources of the power of the popes, which we have remarked, were fully diſplayed in the courſe of this epocha. In the empire as well as the church, every thing bent under their authority. Not only the biſhops, who preſerved their mitres but at the will of this ſpiritual deſpot, even

ſove-

ſovereigns themſelves trembled at the apprehenſion of his thunders, and the moſt formidable kings were precipitated from the throne, if he but raiſed his voice againſt them. Guy, viſcount of Limoges, impriſoned a biſhop who had inſulted him. He was called to Rome to anſwer for that crime, he accordingly appeared, was tried and condemned by Sylveſter II, to be tied to the tails of two young and vigorous horſes, his body diſmembered in that cruel manner, and afterwards devoured by birds of prey.

THE unfortunate viſcount was near ſuffering in this inhuman manner, and only eſcaped by the compaſſion of his proſecutor, who privately conveyed him out of the dungeon. The popes were not content with exerciſing this ſupreme authority themſelves; they ſent deputies into all chriſtian kingdoms and ſtates, to whom they delegated their power. Then appeared thoſe formidable ambaſſadors, under the name of legates, whoſe pomp equalled that of the greateſt princes, who arrogantly diſputed for precedence with monarchs, aſſembled councils, depoſed biſhops, filled up vacant benefices, levied contributions on the people, excommunicated ſovereigns, and uſurped all their privileges. The count of Marle was excommunicated and degraded from the rank of nobility by one of thoſe legates, for having refuſed to obey his orders.

GERMANY would ſeem to have acquired additional ſtrength by the dominion of Italy, and by the title of emperor conferred on her ſovereigns; it was however by this vain honour that ſhe was really Empires and their revolutions.

enfeebled. If the Germans had never paſſed the Alps, but remained quiet at home, they would have poſſeſſed ſolid ſtrength and power.

THE acquiſition of the north of Italy, that ſource of quarrels between the church and the empire, was the origin of the rebellion that ſhook the throne and deſtroyed its authority. The piety of particular emperors, who granted the moſt unbounded privileges to the church, was another cauſe of the weakneſs of their ſcepter. When more able and reſolute princes endeavoured afterwards to check the progreſs of a power that was grown boundleſs, they found it impracticable: time had too far confirmed thoſe abuſes.

FRANCE had ſuffered no change. The revolution that happened in the reigning family, originated in the diſmembering of the provinces which followed at the dethroning of Charles *the Fat*. The ſucceſſors of that monarch had been ſtripped of the greater part of their dominions; ſome cities, ſuch as Rheims and Laon, were all they poſſeſſed. This weakneſs made it impoſſible for the deſcendants of the Pepins to preſide over a feudal government, that naturally required a chief more powerful than the vaſſals. This ſuperiority of ſtrength was ſtill more neceſſary, at a time when foreign invaſions added new misfortunes to the diſtreſſes of civil wars.

THE family of Hugh, who poſſeſſed the rich dutchies of the iſle of France and Orleans, diſtinguiſhed moreover by their virtue, their courage and eſſential ſervices, might naturally claim the ſuperior authority in that extenſive monarchy. The

revolution

revolution might have been leſs rapid perhaps, had it not been accelerated by an act of imprudent ſeverity of Charles of Loraine. The widow of Lewis V, who lived in ſhameful debauchery, was ſuſpected of having haſtened the death of the monarch.

Charles publicly declared himſelf the avenger of this crime, and impriſoned a biſhop. The clergy imagined their honour was intereſted in this affair, and their privileges affected by ſuch rigour, and from that period Charles became odious to them. This body was very powerful both by their immenſe poſſeſſions, and the blind veneration with which they were honoured. It was eaſy for them to gratify their revenge on the prince, by exaſperating the nation againſt him, and by ſhewing Hugh Capet, as the only perſon capable of raiſing the glory of the ſtate, and who was, in fact, much more worthy of the throne than the duke of Loraine. The gratitude of Hugh and his ſon was diſplayed in immenſe reſtitutions, donations and grants to the clergy.

In the greater part of Europe, the order of go- Governvernment appeared ſimilar. A chief, under dif- ments. ferent titles, preſided over many ſovereigns who were called vaſſals. This chief was obliged to ſupport himſelf with his own territories, and had no authority but over the ſlaves in his own dominions. Empty homage was all he received from the counts and dukes. The latter were equally abſolute over their lands, and the ſubjects in their immediate dependance and juriſdiction; but each of thoſe dukes and counts had vaſſals, that were

as much dependant on them, as he was on the general chief. Every lord and every gentleman was maſter in his manor, the common people alone were ſlaves. Thoſe petty tyrants raiſed caſtles and fortifications on mountains; they carried on continual wars among themſelves, mutually ravaged the lands of each other, and carried off the cattle and ſlaves; they ſeized the paſſes of the mountains and rivers, and arbitrarily demanded from every paſſenger certain duties, of which there ſtill exiſt ſome ſingular monuments: being at liberty in their own dominions to impoſe ſuch laws as caprice or paſſion dictated, they introduced thoſe ſhameful cuſtoms, which more enlightened ages and the authority of kings better eſtabliſhed, afterwards found it difficult to aboliſh. There were ſome even that the authenticity of hiſtory can hardly make credible, and which decency obliges us to ſuppreſs.

Morals. MORALS are ever ſimilar to the form of government: hence we may conceive what they muſt have been under this. A ſpirit of war conſtituted the baſis, it was eſſentially neceſſary to nobles who were continually at war together, and lived in a country haraſſed and impoveriſhed by perpetual ravages and devaſtation, and could not ſubſiſt but by the mutual plunder they carried off from each other. The licentiouſneſs of arms naturally produced the greateſt relaxation of manners. It is not eaſy to imagine to what a pitch of depravity they were carried. Lewdneſs, divorces, violation, and rapes ſeemed as if they were privileges annexed to nobility, and modeſty

hardly

hardly found ſecurity in the deepeſt receſſes of the wilderneſs, where ſhe was devoted to religion. The clergy continued to ſet an example in thoſe diſorders.

Almost all the councils of this century were employed ſometimes in condemning and puniſhing prieſts publickly married, at other times in excommunicating thoſe who openly entertained miſtreſſes; and it even happened ſometimes, becauſe doubtleſs they had no other remedy, that they were obliged to order that prieſts ſhould have no more than one concubine: this diſſolution of manners did not leſſen their inhumanity. We ſhall relate a ſingle fact, at which nature recoils with horror, nor can all the annals of the world match the inhuman example. A dreadful famine was felt in France, monſters of men were ſeen hunting their fellow-creatures like wild beaſts, and a butcher at Tournus publicly expoſed human bodies to ſale, and found wretches among his neighbours to purchaſe this fleſh.

In the midſt of all this violence and debauchery, religion was more cheriſhed than ever. Monaſteries were every where founded, churches built, devout pilgrimages performed, relics ſought with paſſionate ardour; people carried them off from each other either by force or ſtratagem, and ſcarce a year paſſed but the ſtealing of the body of ſome ſaint gave riſe to a kind of war. Intereſt indeed, as well as zeal, had a ſhare in thoſe quarrels: every lord was glad to enrich his fief with a famous relic, becauſe it attracted numberleſs pilgrims, and with them the gold of his neigh-

bours to his territories. France has ſtill many cities, who owe all their greatneſs and wealth to this kind of devotion.

THE moſt enlightened men now trembled at the bare threats of excommunication, and the moſt ſacred duties appeared as crimes, when they were to be performed for ſovereigns proſcribed by the church. King Robert, ſo celebrated on account of his zeal for the church, having been excommunicated, was abandoned by his court, his friends, and even domeſtics, three only ſtill ventured to ſerve him, but they threw to the dogs whatever came from his table; they would have conſidered themſelves as loſt ſouls, if they had taſted of the proviſions contaminated by his ſinful hands. We muſt, however, confeſs that thoſe dreadful excommunications were ſometimes ſalutary; they created a reſpect for particular places conſecrated to religion, and this, at leaſt, afforded ſome retreat to innocence. They ſerved to ſuſpend the horrors of war, for ſome days in the year that were ſet apart for devotion, this was ſo much time granted to humanity, and a decreaſe of ſlaughter. Councils frequently became mediators between tyrants, and obliged thoſe barbarians to lay aſide their animoſity and drop their arms.

Juriſprudence.

NOTHING could be more extravagant than the laws which then prevailed. They were divided, as at preſent, into canon and civil law; the canon law had nearly engroſſed the whole. It governed in every thing that concerned eccleſiaſtics, and it was looked upon as an article of faith that the clergy

clergy could not be tried by the laity: hence aroſe ſcandal and inſults, and frequently the moſt atrocious crimes were perpetrated by the hopes of impunity, or a trifling puniſhment. But this canon law had ſcarce leſs influence over the laity. As it was a received opinion that all the actions of men, wherein religion appeared to be intereſted, were under the cognizance of the ſacred tribunals, numberleſs circumſtances were uſually produced to carry the moſt part of affairs before thoſe courts. Oaths being made to God, it was argued that all thoſe compacts, in which they were concerned, were ſubject to the canonical law; and, as there were few contracts in which they were not required, the clergy became judges in almoſt every action of civil law. Marriages, from being celebrated at the foot of the altar, were a pergetual ſource of cauſes to the miniſters of the church: they were the ſupreme judges in all caſes of divorce, and no age ever exhibited ſo great a number.

The moſt remote degrees of kindred, nay ſpiritual affinity, ſuch as ſtanding ſponſors at the baptiſmal font, were deciſive motives, and almoſt all the aſſemblies of the biſhops were employed in diſſolving conjugal ties. No prince could anſwer for the ſtability of his nuptial engagements: the moſt deſpicable imformer, who could prove that there was any degree of conſanguinity between him and the moſt beloved conſort, had it in his power to cite him before a council, and oblige him to renounce his vows and attachment. Women were in continual dread and anxiety about their precarious ſituation. Every faithleſs huſband

band was furniſhed with arms againſt them. The moſt trifling pretence or the moſt fallacious charge were ſufficient to make them tremble for their fate; and the vain idea of perfection daily became a reſource to diſguſt and perjury.

Civil law, in the narrow circle to which it was reduced, was ſtill influenced by ſuperſtition. It was a prevailing opinion, that the divinity himſelf was immediately preſent at all the judgments of men, manifeſted their equity by certain evident ſigns; that in combats and the ordeal victory was adjudged by heaven, and declared the innocent party. In conſequence of this pious belief, combats and the ordeal were authorized by the judges whenever the accuſation appeared doubtful.

If a nobleman charged one of the ſame rank with a crime, they both appeared before their ſovereign, and were ordered to decide the matter by a duel, and he who happened to be vanquiſhed was judged guilty. Trials of different kinds determined the guilt or innocence of perſons of inferior rank. One was tied neck and heels, and in that condition thrown into a large vat filled with water, if he floated he was exculpated; but, if he happened to ſink, he was condemned without mercy. Another was obliged to walk on burning coals or red hot bars of iron, and his guilt or innocence was determined according to the impreſſions left by this terrible ordeal. Others again were obliged to raiſe their arms in the form of a croſs, and the perſon whom this poſition fatigued ſooneſt, was adjudged guilty: ſome,

ſome, in ſhort, walked through flames, and urged this prodigy as a proof of the truth of their charge againſt their adverſaries.

CERTAIN monks at Pavia accuſed their biſhop of hereſy, and offered to prove the charge by a fiery trial; Peter, one of their fraternity, was choſen to be the inſtrument: he walked, as we find related, with naked feet, at a ſlow pace, in view of the whole city of Florence, through two large fires; he proceeded leiſurely to the end; and, perceiving that he had dropped his handkerchief, returned back and drew it out of the flames in the ſame perfect condition in which he had dropped it. The hiſtorian of a philoſophic turn, is embarraſſed when he finds himſelf obliged to relate facts of this nature. The number of contemporary writers will not allow him to deny it entirely, and the abſurdity of many circumſtances forbid him to place an implicit confidence in thoſe authors. An intelligent critic reconciles thoſe apparent contradictions. There muſt have been great artifice at the bottom of thoſe pretended miracles; and the pens of hiſtorians may have embelliſhed them with circumſtances that never happened. The anecdote of the monk of Pavia, that has been related ſo ſeriouſly by various authors, evidently belongs to this claſs: excluſive of many extravagant circumſtances, the iſſue demonſtrated the falſehood of the whole affair as it has been repreſented. In times of ſuch ſuperſtition, a circumſtance ſo miraculous would have infallibly ruined the biſhop; the prelate, however, notwithſtanding this heavy

heavy charge laid againſt him, was left in quiet poſſeſſion of his ſee.

History. HISTORY continued to offer a ſeries of miraculous events. All affairs of importance are derived from ſupernatural cauſes, and the writers of thoſe times, like ancient tragic authors, generally introduced ſome divine agent in the concluſion. The emperor Otho marches to attack France, he is preceded in his march by a German ſaint, who removes every obſtacle that might obſtruct his progreſs. The ſame Otho, whom the friendly ſaint could not protect from a deſeat, flys back to his own dominions, a French ſaint then fights for his countrymen, and drives out this foreign enemy. If the valour and prudence of Alphonſo triumphs over the Moors, the apoſtle St. James is at the head of the chriſtian armies and ſeen mounted on a white horſe. When Robert takes Avalon, the walls of that city fall at his appearance, as thoſe of Jericho did before Joſhua. If the ſame Robert repudiates Bertha for whom he has conceived an averſion, the excommunicated princeſs is ſaid to have been delivered of a monſter that is web-footed like a gooſe. When that weak monarch renounces his deſign of diſmiſſing Conſtantia a ſaint, is made the protector of this woman, whoſe criminal exceſſes are the ruin of the ſtate. All the annals of thoſe times were obſcured by ſuch fables, through which the eye of criticiſm found it extremely difficult to diſcover the truth.

Erudition. THE learning of this age was proportioned to the judgment and underſtanding of the times.

Many

Many councils aſſembled at great expence, and compoſed of the moſt intelligent perſons of the church, were occupied for ſeveral years in deciding whether Saint Martial of Limoges, ſhould be ſtyled an apoſtle. Two other councils met to deliberate whether the body of Saint Denis the areopagite was depoſited at Ratiſbon or Saint Denis. The Germans declared for Ratiſbon, and excommunicated their opponents. The French were not leſs obſtinate in declaring for the town of Saint Denis, and retaliated on their adverſaries with ſimilar weapons: more enlightened knowlege, however, demonſtrated that both aſſemblies were groſſly miſtaken.

Sciences.

THE ſtate of natural philoſophy may be gathered from the anſwer of the learned to a king who enquired the reaſon of the blood colour that had ſuddenly tinged the waters of a certain lake. The ſudden eruption of a fine red ſand, occaſioned by ſome ſubterraneous agitation, was doubtleſs the cauſe of this phenomenon. The learned replied that it was an effect of the divine vengeance, and threatened approaching calamities for the puniſhment of the ſons of mankind: in ſupport of their opinion, they produced various moral allegories that did honour to their faith, while it diſplayed their ignorance.

Gerbert, mathematician.

A SCHOOL of mathematics was eſtabliſhed at Rheims; but the celebrated Gerbert, who opened this ſchool, had acquired all his knowledge among the Arabs in Spain. This ſcience was then ſo little known in France that Gerbert, who taught no more than the moſt ſimple elements, was looked

looked upon as a conjuror, and would have fallen a victim to his knowledge, had he not been protected by an emperor and two kings, who were among the number of his disciples.

School, divinity.

The rest of the sciences were extinguished among the christians in the west, unless we can honour with that name scholastic divinity, which then was introduced: this dangerous science degraded the majesty of mysteries in subjecting them to vain arguments, and contributed to extinguish real erudition, by substituting the subtilties of wit in the place of solid arguments and philosophic researches.

Fine arts.

The fine arts were less known than ever in the greater part of Europe. The writings of Peter Damiens, of Fulbert of Chartres, and some others, that were considered as prodigies, demonstrate what sort of eloquence prevailed in those days. Idle declamation, frigid allegories, figures crouded in without propriety or order, and a puerile display of witticisms, delivered in a harsh and affected style, are all that we find in those celebrated writers. Some edifices, that were the admiration of those times, still remain as monuments of their taste for architecture: they are great unweildly, mishapen structures, with some degree of boldness perhaps, but without any regularity of taste or design, loaded with numberless statues so wretchedly formed, that we can thence readily conceive their ignorance of sculpture and painting.

Music was not in a more flouriſhing ſtate; it however had made a remarkable acquiſition. Gui, an Italian friar of the city of Arezzo, invented the firſt ſix notes, to which a ſeventh was afterwards added; this diſcovery, which was adopted by ſucceeding times, and improved in more enlighted ages, was the remote cauſe of that perfection to which Italy has ſince carried this pleaſing art.

Gui, firſt inventer of muſical notes.

The human mind was not better cultivated in Aſia. Learning, that conſtituted her glory under the califfs of the family of Abbas, was baniſhed by the Turkiſh ſcymeter. The ſciences now reckoned but three places in the world where they found any ſupport: at Conſtantinople, the protection of the emperors, a view of great models, and the learning of ſome individuals kept alive ſome faint rays of taſte; in thoſe parts of Spain ſubject to Mahometiſm, the Moors and Jews cultivated aſtronomy and phyſic, with ſome ſhadow of ſucceſs; in Cairo, the califfs, though declining in power, ſtill cheriſhed the fruits of genius: Avicenna was the moſt illuſtrious among the Arabs of thoſe days; he united, at the ſame time, the moſt profound ſtudy with a taſte for the finer arts, and a paſſion for pleaſure, to the indulgence of which he fell a ſacrifice, and died in the flower of his age. His writings on phyſic and aſtronomy are of little uſe at preſent; they are tinctured with the ſuperſtitious and falſe notions that prevailed in his country: but, in judging of celebrated men, we ſhould ſtill keep in view the age and country in which they lived;

we

we ought not to condemn them for errors, into which they were hurried by the torrent of prejudice, and we ſhould reſpect them for the rays of truth, which their genius ſhot forth from the midſt of darkneſs with which they were ſurrounded.

END OF THE FOURTH EPOCHA.

FIFTH EPOCHA.

Of the CRUSADES.

GODFREY OF BOUILLON.

The revival of Laws.

From the Year 1095 to 1273 of Chriſt.

State of the world.

THE pope and emperor were the ruling powers in the weſt: both claimed the right of creating kings, and the former aſſumed that of depoſing them. Thoſe two powers reciprocally hated and fought againſt each other, and ſet Europe in a flame by their ambitious quarrels. Henry IV, ſtill held the imperial ſcepter, and defended it with unſhaken reſolution againſt the clergy, who endeavoured to wreſt it out

out of his hands. Urban II, prompted by the ſpirit of Gregory VII, excited his ſubjects to take up arms againſt the emperor, made religion an inſtrument to ſanctify rebellion, and armed the hands of the people with fire and ſword to deſtroy the throne of their maſter.

The nobles ſeized this opportunity of raiſing themſelves to independance; anarchy reigned in the cities, armies of robbers plundered and ravaged the country, and wretched Germany felt, at the ſame time, all the miſeries of tyranny, and all the diſorders of licentiouſneſs.

France began to aſſume a form ſomewhat more tranquil; the number of tyrants was at leaſt leſſened. That body had powerful vaſſals, who were in a ſituation to be dreaded: the dukes of Normandy, grown formidable ſince the conqueſt of England, had made even the ſovereigns of Britanny tributary. The dukes of Aquitaine reigned over the extenſive provinces that lay between the Loire and the Pyrenees, Cevenes and the ocean. The greater part of Languedoc was ſubject to the counts of Toulouſe. The counts of Champagne were maſters of that part of France which goes by the name of that province. The earls of Flanders, beſides the poſſeſſion of that rich country, had the honour of receiving homage from many of their neighbours.

The dukes of Burgundy, attached to the monarch by the cloſeſt ties of blood, had it in their power to aſſiſt him with all the forces of their dutchy, which was the firſt in the kingdom.

The

THE head of this body of ſovereigns had, under his own immediate dominion, all the country that reached from the banks of the Loire to the channel, and the privileges annexed to his dignity were capable of increaſing a power that was ſo conſiderable in itſelf. In fine, Philip wanted only genius and courage to make himſelf a reſpectable prince; but he was a tyrant over his ſubjects, the ſport of his vaſſals, the ſlave of pleaſure and ſuperſtition at the ſame time, and incapable of ſhaking off the yoke of a woman by whom he was diſhonoured, or of repelling the uſurpation of the popes, who inſulted him with threats; he languiſhed in obſcurity in which the monarchy ſhared.

IN Spain two gallant princes continued a terror to the Moors. Sancho Ramir had annexed Navarre to Arragon, and harraſſed thoſe infidels in the eaſtern parts; while Alphonſus of Caſtille, guided by talents and prudence, ſupported by valour, and animated by the virtues of the immortal Roderigo, was daily ſubjecting cities in the ſouthern provinces. At the ſame time the new count of Portugal turned his victorious arms towards the weſt, and by his valour planted the ſtandards of chriſtianity on the banks of the Tagus.

ENGLAND united under the ſevere William, ſuffered by his avarice, but acquired ſtrength by his prudence: ſhe menaced the Gauls with chains, and began already to fit out a fleet for which ſhe was indebted to that prince; and while individuals

groaned

groaned under the rigours of their maſter, the ſtate flouriſhed and improved by his wiſdom and talents.

BOHEMIA, enlarged by the misfortunes of Poland, now actually formed a conſpicuous power, and took part with the emperor, who had conferred the title of king on her ſovereigns. Hungary was more feeble, and ſupported the intereſts of the pontiffs who had crowned her princes. Poland was nothing but a ſcene of confuſion under dukes without power or capacity. Sweden and Denmark were ſtill in obſcurity, and Ruſſia was far from aſpiring to any glory.

POUILLE, Calabria, and Sicily united under the gallant Normans, made themſelves reſpectable in Europe, protected Italy, and were the terror of the Greek empire.

THE empire of Greece, ſapped and enfeebled by every cauſe that contributes to the deſtruction of a ſtate, was at length brought to the very brink of the precipice, and ſeemed ready to fall with the firſt attack; if ſhe ſtill ſurvived, ſhe was indebted for this exiſtence to the extraordinary prudence and ſingular art of the emperor Alexis Cemmenes.

VENICE and Genoa were the only maritime powers that appeared in the weſt. Both miſtreſſes of the ſea, active and intelligent alike in the moſt extenſive commerce, equally reſpected by the chriſtians and muſſulmen, whom they ſerved and enriched themſelves, thoſe two cities, rivals in power and induſtry, began to look upon each other

with a jealous eye, and ſecretly cheriſhed the ſeeds of thoſe quarels, which afterwards proved ſo fatal to both.

The califfs of Bagdad, ſtripped entirely of the authority of the ſcepter, enjoyed no more than the vain honours of the altar. The Turks had made a firm conqueſt of their empire; five principal governments were eſtabliſhed in Aſia; the throne of Perſia, ſubverted by their arms, was poſſeſſed by a ſultan whoſe dominion extended from the mountains of Armenia to the Indus. Another, who reigned at Antioch, poſſeſſed all Syria; Paleſtine was ſubject to the ſultan of Damaſcus: a fourth had for his ſhare Cilicia and the adjacent provinces. Soliman, the hero of his nation, had fixed his ſeat of empire at Niceum, whence he governed Bythinia, and ſent his troops to carry terror beyond the Boſpherus.

The califfs of Cairo ſtill poſſeſſed Egypt; but they were filled with terrible apprehenſions at ſeeing the Turks maſters of Judea, and extending themſelves to the banks of the Iſthmus, which ſeparated them from Aſia; they trembled leaſt that victorious people, who conſidered them as heretics and uſurpers of the ſanctuary, ſhould make religion a pretence for ſtripping them of thoſe rich poſſeſſions.

The empire of the Miramolins of Africa had the uſual fate of every government that is founded on violence and unſupported by capacity. They ſubmitted to the kings of Morocco, who, having made themſelves maſters of the coaſts of the atlantic

lantic ocean, had adopted the religion of the Miramolins, while they ſubverted their throne. Thoſe princes protected the Saracens of Spain, frequently paſſed over into Europe, and the numerous armies that followed them were the greateſt obſtacles the kings of Caſtile found in compleating their conqueſts.

Such was the ſtate of our hemiſphere, when enthuſiaſm gave birth to an event of which we meet with no example in former ages.

Peter, a hermit of Amiens occaſions the cruſades.

Peter, a hermit in the neighbourhood of Amiens, whom zeal had conducted to Jeruſalem, lamented to ſee the city, that had been ſanctified by the author of his religion, groaning under the yoke of the Turks; the ſepulchre of Jeſus Chriſt poſſeſſed by infidels and profaned by their inſults, particularly engaged the attention and concern of this pious traveller: his imagination being gradually heated by thoſe reflections, he entertained the moſt ardent deſire of delivering Paleſtine, and formed the deſign of uniting the chriſtians, in order to wreſt the holy land out of the hands of a people whom he thought unworthy to breathe the air of that country. Filled with thoſe ideas, he returned haſtily back to Europe; there, dreſſed in a ſingular habit, aſſiſted by violent geſtures, and a ſtrong voice, his eyes flaming with his purpoſe, and a crucifix in his hand, he deſcribed in lively, but unpoliſhed language, the ſanctity of thoſe places that had been the ſcene of the birth and death of the ſon of God, the miracles that had ſignalized them, the precious blood that had been ſhed there, and the ſacred monuments that

ſtill remained in that country; he repreſented thoſe monuments diſhonoured, degraded, and trampled upon by the impious feet of muſſulmen; he exaggerated the inſults which were daily offered to the very name of chriſtian, the outrages of which he had been an eye witneſs, and thoſe he ſuffered in his own perſon.

The people ran in crouds to hear this extravagant man, were inflamed by his harangues, and attached themſelves cloſely to him. He travelled over Italy, Germany, and France; the people in all parts deſerted the fields, and earneſtly ſolicited to be his companions in the pious work of exterminating the infidels. From the populace the paſſion ſpread to the nobility, and in the courſe of one year the deſire of carrying arms at Jeruſalem became the phrenzy of the times. Sovereigns ſhared in it, kings applauded it, and the clergy loudly extolled the glorious reſolution from the pulpit. The pope, in order to confirm it with the ſanction of the whole church, aſſembled a council at Clermont, where, under the title of cruſades, he propoſed a confederacy, the object of which was the deliverance of the holy city: the unanimous voice of the fathers exclaimed, *God inſpires, God commands it*; the expedition was univerſally proclaimed, and decorated with all the formalities of religion.

The pope was declared head of the enterprize; the croſs was appointed to be the ſtandard of the army and the mark of the ſoldiery; the contributions of the faithful were to defray the expences of tranſporting the troops, and indulgences,

gences, of which there was no lack, became the pay of the men. Sovereigns, nobles, labourers, and mechanics, with prieſts, women, and even children flew to enroll themſelves.

Sovereignties were mortgaged, lordſhips and manors transferred, and lands expoſed to ſale. In a little time the hermit ſaw, under the banners of the croſs, four hundred thouſand men marching at their own expence, and impatient to abandon their country and go in ſearch of fatigue, ſickneſs and death two thouſand leagues from home. Of the three diviſions, of which this multitude was compoſed, Peter commanded the firſt; it conſiſted of the loweſt ranks. This body, without order or diſcipline, in croſſing over German, maſſacred the Jews, and in Hungary and Greece plundered the chriſtians; conſuming daily by debauchery as well as the repriſals of the inhabitants, it was reduced to a very ſmall number, when they reached the ſtreights.

The ſecond diviſion followed in a leſs tumultuous manner, entered Aſia, began with ſome little ſucceſs, and in the end was deſtroyed in the plains of Niceum, where it ſunk under the arms of Soliman.

Regular troops compoſed the third diviſion; it was under the direction of able officers, and commanded by powerful princes. Among the latter were Hugh of France, brother to king Philip, and the count of Vermandois; Baldwin of Flanders; Euſtatius of Boulogne, and Godefrey, duke of Lower Loraine, who had ſold his city of Bouillon; Herpin, viſcount of Bourges,

who had lately alienated his capital; Robert of Normandy, who had mortgaged that rich dutchy to his brother the king of England, and laſtly, Raimond of Toulouſe; who, on the hopes of future conqueſts, had given up his ſovereignty to a baſtard of his family, and carried his wife and children with him. Thoſe princes in perſon led their ſubjects with a flouriſhing nobility; and, as their march was conducted with ſome degree of order, when they arrived in Greece they ſtill made a formidable appearance: they were reinforced by Boeſmond, duke of Calabia, who, at the firſt news of this expedition, from his impatience to wear the croſs, tore his garments in order to form that ſacred ſign; he was followed by a body of Normans celebrated for their valour. Alexis Commenes was terrified at ſeeing his empire in a manner deluged by thoſe ſwarms of Latins; he flattered, he carreſſed them, made them promiſe homage for the lands they were preparing to conquer, and accelerated the embarkation of thoſe ſtrangers. The chriſtians were obliged to fight for every inch of ground as they advanced.

SOLIMAN in vain exerted his ſkill and courage, they forced their way ſword in hand through the ranks of the Turks, who harraſſed them, and took poſſeſſion of Bithynia, Alicia, and Syria; whence they drove the ſultans. Diminiſhed to one half by fatigue and difficulties, they at length appeared before the walls of Jeruſalem, where the flower of the Turkiſh troops, united with the Saracens, had ſhut themſelves up with a reſolution

lution to defend the place with the laſt drop of their blood. Then began that ever memorable ſiege, ſo nearly ſimilar to that of Troy, by the gallant actions performed on both ſides, by the number of princes that were preſent, by the view of all Europe in arms againſt Aſia, and by the two immortal poems that have celebrated this event. A general attack, at length, made the chriſtians maſters of the city, and opened a field to all the horrors of victory, aggravated by the exceſſes of enthuſiaſtic zeal: every ſpecies of barbarity and cruelty were committed with ſavage fury; the ſtreets flowed with the blood of both ſexes of all ranks and ages, yet thoſe inhuman victors, when they approached the ſepulchre of Jeſus Chriſt were ſuddenly ſeized with reverential awe.

The ſight of this ſacred object affected them, the ſword dropped from their hands, their tears flowed, they fell upon their knees, and the air reſounded with their ſighs and lamentations: they afterwards deliberated about appointing a chief for the ſtate, and the choice fell upon Godefrey of Bouillon, whoſe prudence had conciliated the eſteem of the whole camp. This prince was proclaimed king of Jeruſalem, and obtained beſides a ſmall territory with that throne. Raimond had Eccleſſa with the title of count; and Antioch, the moſt conſiderable of their conqueſts, was allotted to Boeſmond, and erected into a principality. The reſt of the chiefs, ſatisfied with the taking of the holy city, marched back to Europe, and left Godefrey in the moſt unſteady and pre-

carious throne. The Turks ſoon returned to attack the walls of Jeruſalem, and though the valour of Godfrey repulſed their attempts, his reign, which continued one year only, was of too ſhort duration to give ſtability to this infant ſtate. The talents of Baldwin his ſucceſſor could not prevent new misfortunes; this prince, daily tottering on the verge of ruin, and imploring in vain the aſſiſtance of Europe, was preſerved by a reinforcement unheard of till then.

We have obſerved that Gerard of Provence had eſtabliſhed an hoſpital for pilgrims, where he fed the poor and attended the ſick. Raimond Dupuy, his ſucceſſor, did not confine himſelf to thoſe generous cares. Before he ſettled in Jeruſalem, Europeans were obliged to paſs through the midſt of the Saracens who lay round that little kingdom, and death or ſlavery were frequently the reward of their zeal. Dupuy, affected with the hardſhips of the pilgrims, conceived the deſign of adding to the merits of miniſtring to their wants, that of defending their perſons; and formed a new plan of a religious order, that ſhould perform the double duty of charitable attendants in the hoſpital, and active ſoldiers in the camp. He was reſolved, that his diſciples, already bound by all the vows of the cloiſter, and obligations of aſſiſting the ſick, ſhould farther engage themſelves to protect by their ſwords, all ſtrangers that ſhould viſit the holy land. As ſo heroic a ſacrifice required a courage that is rarely found in the lower ſpheres of ſociety, his application was addreſſed to all the nobility of Europe, whom he invited to devote themſelves

ſelves to thoſe duties. The kings of Jeruſalem, who were in hopes of finding in this body, intrepid defenders of their crown, and the popes, certain of having the valour of thoſe military monks at their command, ſeconded Raimond with all their influence and authority. A mixture of love for religion, and of paſſion for arms, was the prevailing character of the times, and gained over many illuſtrious proſelytes to the founder. Thus the laſt form was given to the order of knights of St. John, in which a numerous and ſplendid liſt of nobles, drawn from every part of catholic Europe, devoted themſelves to the defence of religion, and to avenging the outrages that might be committed aginſt it, by the enemies of that perſuaſion. This firſt inſtitution was very pleaſing to Europe, and produced others. The Templars, ſo called from the temple of Jeruſalem, in which they firſt reſided, were formed after that model; and the Teutonic order, who limited their views to the protection of German pilgrims, adopted the ſame rules. The fervor that accompanies every new eſtabliſhment, animated the three orders to perform prodigies of valour. The Saracens were unable to ſtand before them; pilgrimages were ſecure, the boundaries of the chriſtian poſſeſſions extended, and the throne of Jeruſalem ſeemed to be more firmly eſtabliſhed than ever. But the noble emulation that inſpired thoſe warriors, degenerating into cruel envy and hatred, the arms, religion had put into their hands, were turned againſt each other. Thoſe quarrels continually repeated filled the city with diſcord and confuſion,

and

and exhauſted the wretched kingdom; after having been founded half a century, it was now ſinking into ruins by inteſtine diviſions, and ready to fall under the blows of the muſſulmen, who were united to deſtroy it.

Eugene III, whom his virtue raiſed from the monaſtery of Clervaux, to the throne of the church, felt how far his ſee was intereſted in preventing the ruin of this chriſtian colony; but, at the ſame time, ſaw all the difficulty of again uniting the weſt under the ſtandard of the croſs. Time and experience had opened the eyes of Europe, and people were too ſenſible of the obſtacles and misfortunes inſeparable from thoſe pious expeditions. Happily for Eugene, France then poſſeſſed an aſtoniſhing man: Bernard, under the poor habit of a monk, enjoyed a greater reſpect than was paid to the moſt powerful princes; from his humble cell he gave anſwers to Europe that were revered as oracles; he quitted the ſpade, to regulate the articles of a treaty between two monarchs; he left his cloiſter, in order to preſide at a council, where he determined the fate of popes, or made the greateſt ſovereigns tremble in the very midſt of their courts. This man, who was eloquent, conſidering the ignorance of the times, had the moſt unbounded aſcendant over the minds of people. The pontiff fixed his eyes upon him as the propereſt perſon to call princes and their ſubjects to the ſacred banners. Bernard no ſooner ſpoke, than all difficulties vaniſhed. The emperor Conrad, who firſt liſtened to him, with a reſolution to oppoſe

oppoſe thoſe dangerous emigrations, concluded with enrolling himſelf.

Lewis VII, whom the prudent Suger endeavoured to divert from the expedition, by the deareſt intereſts of the ſtate, could not reſiſt the voice of the orator. The people, abandoned their habitations in crowds, the nobles laid the price of their lands at his feet, and near a million of men ſolicited the croſs from Bernard, who promiſed them infallible ſucceſs from heaven; this promiſe he founded on a revelation that nobody had preſumption to diſpute. He had too much ſenſe to act the ſame part with the hermit, and therefore refuſed the dignity of leader, which was unanimouſly offered to him, and this refuſal was conſidered as an heroic act of virtue. The cauſes of the ill ſucceſs of the firſt expedition, were likewiſe the ruin of this. Conrad, who out of eight thouſand men, had not half that number when he entered Syria, returned almoſt alone, to conceal his diſgrace in Germany. Lewis VII, who ſet out with an army no leſs numerous, was ſtill more unfortunate; his wife, whom he carried to Judea, diſhonoured him in that country; his troops were defeated by the Turks, he was taken priſoner by the Saracens on his way back, and he only recovered his liberty, by the valour of the king of Sicily. Two hundred thouſand chriſtians ſlaughtered, on the faith of the promiſes of Bernard, did not however leſſen his credit. To the cries of the widows and orphans who called him to an account for the blood of their huſbands and fathers, he replied, with reproaches on the conduct of thoſe victims,

tims, whoſe crimes, he ſaid, had prevented the effects of the divine promiſes.

Third Cruſade.

SUCCOURS ſo ill conducted and uſeleſs, ſerved only to animate the Turks to the deſtruction of the chriſtians of Jeruſalem, and to ſhew them the little difficulty there would be in driving them out. Noradin, whom they choſe for their leader, promoted this deſign, and Saladin his ſucceſſor completed the work. The latter, after having uſurped Syria, triumphed over the Perſians, conquered Egypt, and, by his victories, made himſelf maſter of dominions that extended to the Oxus, returned back by ſea, in order to ſtrip the Europeans of the places they ſtill retained.

DAMASCUS, Aleppo, and Acre, opened their gates to the conqueror, who, after having artfully drawn the chriſtian army into narrow defiles, where he commanded the paſſes, obliged them to ſurrender priſoners, with Luſignan their king. He then marched immediately towards Jeruſalem, which was in a manner defenceleſs, and by the taking of that capital, he deſtroyed for ever the little kingdom which had not ſubſiſted a century.

THE news of the loſs of the holy land ſpread conſternation in Europe. Urban III, who had exerted the greateſt efforts to prevent that misfortune, died of grief when he heard the news. The chriſtian princes ſuſpended their quarrels, and the deſire of recovering Jeruſalem produced a third cruſade.

THIS was well planned, executed with wiſdom, and gave the moſt ſplendid hopes. Three princes of diſtinguiſhed merit in thoſe days, and who would

would have excited the admiration of any age, were the leaders of this expedition. Frederic I, one of the greateſt emperors that ever governed Germany, and celebrated for many battles and triumphs, advanced by land, at the head of one hundred and fifty thouſand men. Philip Auguſtus, one of the moſt reſpectable kings of France, put to ſea, followed by a flouriſhing army. Richard, king of England, the hero of this cruſade, ſet out with his nobles, and the flower of his troops.

Frederic, who found Iſaac l'Ange on the throne of Conſtantinople, diſcovered ſome perfidious deſigns of that emperor, which he fruſtrated, and met with obſtacles over which he triumphed: he forced his way through the Greek battalions, routed the Turks, who were aſſembled on the banks of the Helleſpont to oppoſe his paſſage; in Aſia, he found armies every where on his march, and obtained as many victories.

Under the walls of Icone, he defeated the moſt powerful ſultan of the country, and made himſelf maſter of the city. He was advancing in this manner, through triumphs, towards Paleſtine, and after croſſing Cilicia, went to bathe in the Cydnus, and died of a diſorder produced by the extreme coldneſs of that river, which, fifteen hundred years before was near proving equally fatal to Alexander.

The army of Frederic was now diſperſed, and the moſt flattering hopes were extinguiſhed with the death of that hero. They revived again at the appearance of Philip, who had ſcarce landed, when he diſtinguiſhed himſelf in ſeveral ſharp encounters,

counters, defeated and routed the Saracens, took many places, and having made himſelf maſter of the open country, laid ſiege to Acre. In the mean time, Richard was advancing haſtily to ſecond the efforts of the French monarch. Intereſts of ſtate had ſtopped him in Sicily, where he had ſettled matters with the authority of a maſter: having ſailed towards the Archipelago, and meeting with a ſtorm, he ſent to aſk refreſhment of Iſaac, king of the iſland of Cyprus, for ſome princeſſes that were in his train. The inhuman refuſal of that prince provoked his reſentment; he landed his troops, gave battle, took the capital, made the king and all his family priſoners, and having taken poſſeſſion of the whole iſland, aſſumed the crown himſelf. After ſecuring his conqueſt, he again ſet out for Jeruſalem, and arrived covered with glory, having a king for his priſoner, and being decorated with a new crown, which his valour had recently added to thoſe he derived from his birth. Philip, who perhaps ſaw the glory of Richard with a jealous eye, by a pretended ſickneſs fettered his activity, and after having ſworn not to attack the poſſeſſions of his rival, until the return of both, he put to ſea with his ſubjects. Richard now became ſole maſter of the operations, reſumed the ſiege of Acre, took that city, defeated the generals of the ſultan in many engagements, gave battle to the ſultan in perſon, and, by prodigies of valour and military ſkill, forced victory from the ſtandards of that hero, who till then had been invincible. While Richard was purſuing his ſucceſſes, and on the eve of reaping all the fruits of his toil, he learned

learned that Philip was returned to France, had excited his brother to take up arms againſt him, and was attacking the Engliſh provinces in that kingdom. Forced in this manner to ſacrifice his expectations to the intereſt and defence of his dominions, the moſt precious of all objects to a king, he renounced with vexation and rage, laurels ſo certain, and made a truce with Saladin, by which the chriſtians were ſecurely protected in Paleſtine, and obtained an aſylum in the city of Acre, but the deſign of the cruſade was fruſtrated, by leaving the ſultan maſter of Jeruſalem.

Fourth cruſade.

So many unfortunate attempts, and ſo much blood ſhed, did not however leſſen the zeal of the popes. Innocent III, one of thoſe pontiffs who diſplayed the greateſt genius, and who reigned with the moſt extenſive authority, made a new effort, and aſſembled another army; this at firſt conſiſted only of French with a few Italians, and marched under the command of Baldwin, count of Flanders. In paſſing through the territories of the Venetians, they perſuaded thoſe republicans to join them, and the Doge, Dandolo, though bending under the weight of years, was reſolved to lead his fellow citizens in purſuit of victory. When they entered the dominions of the Greek empire, young Alexis came to ſolicit their aſſiſtance for the re-eſtabliſhment of his father, who had been deprived of the throne of Conſtantinople, with his eyes and liberty, by the barbarity of an unnatural brother. His intreaties prevailed, they flew to the relief of the unhappy emperor, and reſtored him to freedom and the throne, which he ſhared with

his

his ſon. But this good fortune of that prince did not continue many days,

Alexis Ducas, ſirnamed Murtzulphus, a man of low origin, whom young Alexis had raiſed to the greateſt dignities of the empire, perceived the hatred of his countrymen to the Latins, and conſequently their diſlike to an emperor eſtabliſhed by that nation; he therefore formed a conſpiracy in which both the father and ſon periſhed; and the traitor, ſeconded by the voice of the city, aſſumed the purple which he had ſtained with their blood. The Latins now impelled by the deſire of vengeance, laid ſiege to Conſtantinople, took the place by ſtorm, gave it up to plunder and ſlaughter, and renouncing their deſigns againſt the holy land, determined to preſerve their conqueſt. They immediately created an emperor, and Baldwin was raiſed to that dignity; the patriarch was choſen from among the Venetians, and the other Italian and French nobles divided the reſt of the provinces between them.

In the mean time, ſome fugitive Greeks retreated to a few inconſiderable poſſeſſions they had in Aſia; there, uniting the greateſt weakneſs with a pride and vanity ſtill more extravagant, they founded two empires, one at Niceum, and the other at Trebiſond, the ſovereigns of which, though their poſſeſſions ſcarce amounted to a few ſmall places, ridiculouſly perſiſted in ſtyling themſelves, the auguſt and invincible maſters of the world. Innocent III, who foreſaw much greater advantages to the tiara, in the taking of Conſtantinople than in the deliverance of Jeruſalem, readily pardoned

doned the leaders of the cruſade for having broken through their engagements, and now thought of nothing elſe but to reap all the advantage he could from ſo ſingular an event.

Fifth cruſade.

HITHERTO the armies of the croſs had no other view but to attack the infidels. Innocent III, firſt directed that confederacy againſt the chriſtians. Some obſcure men, ſcandalized at the oſtentatious pomp and ambition of the clergy, complained that in the members of their body, they could not diſcover the miniſters of a religion founded on humility and peace, and had formed a reſolution not to conſider them as their paſtors. Under the name of Patarins, Cathares and Vaudois, they had ſpread themſelves in the ſouthern provinces of France, and particularly in Languedoc, contiguous to Alby, which they ſeemed to have made their head quarters.

INNOCENT ſaw all the conſequences of the daring principles of thoſe ſectaries, and was reſolved to exterminate them. By the aſſiſtance of the clergy, who were equally intereſted in their deſtruction, he preached up a cruſade, and formed a powerful army, which Simon of Montfort commanded as lieutenant from the pope. At the ſame time he erected a bloody tribunal; to the judges who preſided, orders were given to make the moſt rigorous enquiry, to conſider ſuſpicion as a proof, and appearances as crimes, and to drag unhappy victims to the ſtake, on the teſtimony of the vileſt informer.

'TWAS on this occaſion the inquiſition was founded. France, where it firſt originated, afterwards

wards rejected it with horror, but meeting with more reſpect in Italy and Spain, it has long exerciſed in thoſe countries the moſt inhuman ſpirit of perſecution, under the banners of the God of mercy. Two religious orders, lately eſtabliſhed under the auſpices of Innocent, and entirely devoted to his intereſt, were commiſſioned to preſide at theſe executions.

THOUSANDS of the inhabitants of Alby, perſecuted by the ſoldiers of the croſs, and the members of the inquiſition, periſhed by the ſwords of the former, or expired in the flames kindled by the latter. Whole cities were deſtroyed by Montfort: ſixty thouſand citizens were butchered at Beziers; towns and villages were reduced to aſhes by the miniſters of peace. The attempt of Raimond, count of Toulouſe, and ſovereign of Languedoc, to protect his unhappy ſubjects, was looked upon as a crime unpardonable.

HE was excommunicated, expelled his dominions, proſcribed, and trembling every moment with apprehenſions of a worſe fate, he preſerved his life, only by throwing himſelf at the feet of the monks, who with pride and inſult dictated the conditions of his pardon. He was dragged before the principal church of his capital in his ſhirt, a rope about his neck, and a torch in his hand, there ſcourged by the hands of an imperious legate, before an immenſe body of the people; and recovered the precarious poſſeſſion of his dominions but by ſecuring them to France, whom the pontiff favoured.

AFTER

After conquering the people of Alby and Greeks, Innocent reſumed his project of delivering the holy land, but could not perſuade the emperor to join in the deſign, becauſe his throne was too much diſturbed; nor the kings of France and England, as they were too far engaged in their mútual quarrels to unite in that confederacy. Andrew, king of Hungary, and John de Brienne, titular ſovereign of Jeruſalem, commanded this cruſade, and cardinal Julien, legate of the pope, accompanied thoſe leaders. As they perceived that Egypt was the ſupport of the Turks of Paleſtine, they formed a new plan of attack, and directed their firſt operations againſt that kingdom. Sixth cruſade.

The firſt attempts made by the two kings were ſucceſsful. The Saracens, after having been defeated on ſeveral occaſions, abandoned the flat country to the chriſtians, and took refuge in the mountains. The generals ſenſible of the great danger of marching in a country to which they were ſtrangers, thought it neceſſary to ſecure the heights, and reconnoitre the places through which they were to paſs, before they proceeded any farther. The cardinal, conſulting only the dictates of impetuous ardour, treated their prudence as timidity, and declared for purſuing the barbarians immediately. Finding the two kings oppoſed his opinion, he aſſumed the ſtyle of a ſuperior, ſhewed them the orders of the pontiff, and being ſupported by the knights of St. John and the Templars, obliged the generals to pay a blind obedience to his will. The army thus governed by this eccleſiaſtic, daily committed new blunders,

and at length was hemmed in between two branches of the Nile. The Saracens then opened their ſluices, and were preparing to drown the chriſtians, who thought themſelves happy to preſerve their lives, by ſupplicating the mercy of the enemy, who ſent them back with diſgrace to Europe.

Seventh and laſt cruſade.

THE cruſades now ſeemed to be entirely at an end. The zeal of people for thoſe foreign expeditions was extinguiſhed by a view of the misfortunes that attended them. The fermentation which agitated Europe, would not allow ſovereigns to leave their country. The popes themſelves were taken up in perſecuting the emperors, againſt whom they directed the arms deſigned to ſupport the cauſe of religion, and loſt ſight of the holy land. One prince however reigned whom piety inflamed with a paſſion for ſuch an expedition. Lewis IX, a beneficent monarch, able legiſlator, and zealous chriſtian, but weak politician, was deſirous of ſignalizing himſelf in the places that had been ſprinkled with the blood of his redeemer; he invited his people to follow his example, and unite with him in order to drive out the infidels from that country. Margaret of Provence, the conſort of that monarch, marched at his ſide, in order to ſhare in his dangers; his brothers and the principal nobility of the kingdom accompanied him.

EDWARD, ſon to the king of England, the defender of his father, and of the rights of his throne, followed the French monarch with a large train of the noblemen of his country. The army

army ſet ſail from Aigumortes, ſteered for the coaſt of Egypt, and having made good their landing, in ſpite of all the efforts of the Saracens, marched for Damiette, againſt which Margaret led the troops in perſon.

The city carried by ſtorm, a battle gained under the walls of the place, the ardour of the troops, with the intrepid conduct of Margaret, Lewis, and Edward, ſeemed to ſhew that the deciſive moment was now at hand, when the ſubjection of Egypt was to ſecure the conqueſt of Judea. But a dreadful and ſudden peſtilence which ravaged the chriſtian camp, the want of proviſions, the heat of the climate and imprudent ardour of the count of Artois, who was ſurrounded by the barbarians, and periſhed with the flower of the nobility, gave the moſt unhappy turn to thoſe proſperous beginnings. Lewis was attacked near Maſſoura, and, notwithſtanding his heroic behaviour, loſt the battle, and fell into the hands of the enemy, with the greater part of his army. He remained a month in captivity, with the ſword ſometimes hanging over his head to terminate his exiſtence, and his victorious enemies at other times proſtrate at his feet; and at laſt, owed his preſervation to the veneration which his virtues inſpired.

Such was the fate of the laſt cruſade againſt Paleſtine. Europe grown wiſe by repeated misfortunes, and too much diſturbed by the contention for empire among her different powers, now no longer intereſted herſelf for the chriſtians of the eaſt, but by unprofitable prayers. The ſtates

which they had eſtabliſhed, having no freſh ſupplies, ſoon declined.

We have ſhewn how the empire of the Latins had been formed out of the ruins of the throne of Conſtantinople. With that pompous title, the new empire contained no more than the capital and a territory of a few leagues. The Greeks on the eaſt, the princes among the Latins to the weſt and ſouth, and the Bulgarians on the north ſide, confined the limits of that monarchy. Baldwin, who firſt obtained the purple, had ſcarce reigned a year, when he was attacked, defeated, taken and flead alive by the Bulgarians. Henry his brother and ſucceſſor, met with no obedience from his ſubjects, no ſecurity among his neighbours. Peter of Auxerre, the brother in law of thoſe princes, fell into the hands of the emperor of Niceum, and was put to death with tortures. Robert his ſon, was ſcarce able to protect the walls of his capital; and Baldwin II, his brother, being driven out of Conſtantinople by Michael Paleologue, ſaw the throne was loſt for ever.

The chriſtians who remained in Paleſtine after the loſs of Jeruſalem, did not meet with better fortune. The great revolutions that diſturbed upper Aſia, left them in quiet for ſome years; but when the misfortunes of the Turks were over, and gave that people leiſure to recollect themſelves, they reſumed their projects againſt the Europeans, and ſucceſſively ſtripped them of all the places they poſſeſſed.

The diſſenſions, quarrels, and perpetual conteſts of the military monks, who mutually butch-

ered each other; the diſorders, crimes and hatred that reigned among the chriſtians, the feeble and infrequent ſuccours they received from the Weſt, all conſpired to favour the arms of the muſſulmen, while the Greeks, feeling with indignant rage the oppreſſive yoke of the Roman clergy, were eager to open the gates of their cities to the Turks, whoſe empire they preferred. The city of Acre, in fine, the only refuge left for the ſmall remnant of the cruſades, was now attacked, and after a ſiege, in the courſe of which, the chriſtians exerted the moſt heroic efforts againſt the enemy, and ruined themſelves by their diviſions, the place was burnt, and obliterated every trace of the cruſades in Aſia.

In Europe, the emperor Henry IV, was occupied in reſtoring peace to Italy; but he no ſooner learned that his ſon Conrad had revolted, than he marched with the utmoſt diſpatch to Germany, where he had the young prince condemned in a ſolemn manner: the active old man, then uniting force of arms with the formalities of the law, purſued the rebel with indefatigable ardour, routed his troops, ſeized his perſon, and ſent him to priſon, where he died of grief and vexation.

By ſuppreſſing this dangerous faction, Henry flattered himſelf that he had cruſhed rebellion for ever; but the flames that ſoon blazed in every quarter of Germany, convinced him that his ſecond ſon, who enjoyed his greateſt confidence and affection, had liſtened to the inſinuations of the clergy, and that their hands had crowned him with the diadem of his father. The hero was

not proof againſt the ſeverity of the blow; deſpair ſunk deep in his heart, he was weighed down by his misfortunes, and retired to end his days at Liege; where his inhuman ſon ſcarce vouchſafed to ſpeak to him while he lived, and refuſed him burial after his death. Thus a powerful emperor, the maſter of extenſive dominions, who long enjoyed the ſmiles of fortune, who had been victorious in upwards of ſixty battles, and who was adorned with the moſt ſhining qualities, at length cloſed his life in obſcurity and miſery.

It is unneceſſary to refute the abſurd fables which the hatred of the clergy circulated, relative to the viſions of his mother, while ſhe carried him in her womb. We do not deny his weakneſs with regard to pleaſure, but in all other reſpects, nothing but the prejudice of party can refuſe him a place among the greateſt kings.

The death of the unfortunate Henry IV, did not extinguiſh the quarrels between the empire and the church. Paſchal II, inheriting the ambitious deſigns of his predeceſſors, vainly hoped to accompliſh his wiſhes, by exciting the ſon to take up arms againſt the father, and placing the rebel upon the throne; he flattered himſelf that Henry V, would eaſily reſign the rights of the ſcepter to the pontiffs, as he had acquired it by their intrigues. But the young emperor, from a perſuaſion that intereſted ſervices have no claims upon gratitude, inſiſted with no leſs ſpirit and reſolution than his father, on preſerving all the prerogatives of his crown and dignity; and braving the menaces and thunders with which the ſove-

reign

reign of the church endeavoured to terrify him, he marched directly to Rome, ſeized upon the pope and his council, obliged him to ſwear upon the altar to give up the right of inveſtiture and crown him as his ſovereign.

PASCHAL was no ſooner at liberty than he repented of the oaths he had taken, reproached himſelf as if he had been guilty of a great crime, and had them annulled by a council. Gelaſus II, revived the quarrel, and carried it on with the greateſt ardour. Henry oppoſed him with a rival, by ſetting up an anti-pope, but he was continually expoſed to open attacks or ſecret conſpiracies, which threatened both his ſcepter and life. Caliſtus II, more arrogant ſtill than his predeceſſors, on account of his illuſtrious birth, attacked the emperor with greater vigour.

HENRY ſaw his dominions in flames by religion, and the ſame abyſs into which he had plunged his father gaping under his feet; he was ſeized with terror at the proſpect, gave way, and concluded with renouncing the moſt precious prerogatives of his crown. His timidity, in preſerving him, ſeemed to have reſtored tranquility to Germany, when the death of that prince, who left no poſterity, produced freſh troubles. His nephew Conrad, duke of Suabia, endeavoured to ſucceed him, but was thrown out by the Roman faction, who procured the election of Lothaire, duke of Saxony. The latter refuſed nothing to a court to whom he was indebted for all his ſucceſs, and made no uſe of the opportunity that offered, in the conteſt between two popes, who had been elected

elected at the ſame time, and who by mutual excommunications diſcharged againſt each other, divided the intereſts and opinions of mankind.

Roger, duke of Pouille, and count of Sicily, protected Anaclet, who had the ſuffrages of the people of Rome in his favour, and this pontiff was acknowleged by the greater part of Italy. Bernard ſupported the pretenſions of Innocent II, on whom the clergy had conferred the tiara; he had his election confirmed by a council, which he governed by his eloquence, and perſuaded the weſt of Europe to ſubmit to his authority. Lothaire had it in his power to hold the balance between the two rivals, and make that circumſtance ſubſervient to his own intereſt, but the voice of Bernard ſilenced every prudent reflection; influenced by that aſtoniſhing monk, he marched againſt Rome in perſon, drove out Roger with his pope, and placed Innocent on the throne, who rewarded this ſervice with the vain ceremony of a coronation.

Germany ſoon changed her maſter. Conrad III, duke of Suabia, ſucceeded to Lothaire and in him a new family aſcended the imperial throne. The pontiffs ſecurely eſtabliſhed their pretenſions during the reign of this ſovereign, and the cruſades, in which they engaged him, furniſhed new occaſions to ſtrengthen their authority. It met with a formidable oppoſition, however, under the nephew of that prince, Frederic I, who was a great king as well as a great man, an able captain, the idol of his ſubjects, and the hero of the age. This emperor, upon hearing Adrian, who had been

been lately raiſed from the loweſt condition to the chair of Saint Peter, ſtile himſelf the maſter and diſpoſer of crowns, was provoked at the narrow limits to which the pontiffs had reduced his power, and bluſhed at the diſgrace thence reſulting to his diadem. The arrogance of Alexander III, inflaming his pride ſtill more, he dexterouſly took advantage of a double election that happened in the midſt of confuſion and trouble, ſupported the anti-pope, and was in hopes of leſſening the power of the coloſſus by dividing it.

ITALY was paſſionately attached to Alexander. Milan with a formidable power by land, Venice miſtreſs of the empire of the ſea, and the king of Sicily, who dreaded the aggrandiſement of Frederic, warmly ſupported the intereſts of that pontiff.

FREDERIC forced his way croſs the Alps, routed the people of Milan, who attempted to oppoſe his paſſage, ſent his ſon with a fleet to act againſt the Venetians, and was advancing in perſon to drive out Alexander, when the faithleſs conduct of his enemies obliged him to return to Lombardy, where the clergy, notwithſtanding the moſt ſacred promiſes, had perſuaded the people to take up arms; every battle proved a new triumph to the emperor; thoſe repeated acts of perfidy, however, having exhauſted his patience, he was reſolved to terrify the rebels by ſome ſevere example; and therefore plundered and deſtroyed the city of Milan. Alexander was obliged to fly from Rome, and ſeemed to be undone, but he quickly ſhewed that his firmneſs and reſolution

lution ſupplied him with inexhauſtible reſources. He ran about from one city to another; zeal for religion, his venerable years and compaſſion for his misfortunes intereſted the people in his favour; he acquired new friends, encouraged his old adherents, and had the art to perſuade Rome, Venice, Genoa and all Italy to make freſh efforts in his favour.

FREDERIC, though ſtill victorious, got no reſt from his enemies. The citizens of Milan had repaired their walls; enthuſiaſm animated their induſtry, inflamed their courage and made them at laſt victorious: Frederic was forced to fly for the firſt time. In the mean while he was informed that Conrad, his eldeſt ſon, had loſt a battle which left the Venetians maſters of the ſea, and received intelligence from Germany that the clergy were ſucceſſively promoting ſedition, which they made venerable by covering it with the ſacred veil of religion, and that the love his ſubjects had for him began to be ſhaken by the ſuggeſtions of ſuperſtition.

THE emperor, ſhuddering with inward rage, gave way to the ſuperior influence of the pontiff and ſolicited peace; this was granted under ſuch circumſtances only as were ſo many evident marks of the triumph of Rome. The place fixed upon for the conference and interview between the two rivals was Venice, a city entirely devoted to the intereſt of Alexander. Frederic appeared there in perſon to ſwear upon the altar that he renounced the right of inveſtiture, and this oath was pronounced before a crowded aſſembly of his

his enemies. In ſhort, he was obliged to proſtrate himſelf at the feet of the imperious old man, who took a pride in inſulting him in that abject ſituation. Roman arrogance increaſed by this victory, knew no bounds under Henry VI. This prince was not only obliged to receive the crown of his father with the moſt inſulting formalies, but this outrage was farther aggravated by the neceſſity he was under of purchaſing his dignity with the ſurrender of the city of Freſcati, which the Romans razed to the ground, in order to puniſh the inhabitants of that place, for their fidelity to the emperors.

The pretenſions of Henry to the kingdom of Naples and Sicily ſoon revived diſſentions between the church and empire. Henry who had married Conſtantia, the only daughter of Roger, the laſt king among the Norman princes, claimed the throne and was advancing to recover it. The pope, apprehenſive of finding a neighbour too powerful in the emperor, ſupported the baſtard Tancred, who had ſeized on the crown, and was in motion to defend it. Fortune declared for the baſtard, and his victory farther promoted the wiſhes of Rome; but after the death of Tancred, Henry ſurprized his enemies by his activity and diligence, carried every thing before him, made himſelf maſter of the two Sicilies, and became formidable to the pontiff. Happy had it been if, with talents that ſecure dominions, he had known how to unite the virtues which captivate the heart! but his cruel ſlaughter of the family of Tancred, the tyranny he exerciſed over his

new

new ſubjects, his boundleſs avarice and aſtoniſhing barbarity made him an object of deteſtation to his own family; he died by poiſon adminiſtered by the hand of his wife.

INNOCENT III, was then ſeated on the throne of the church; he had all the qualities and ſoul of Gregory VII, with ſuperior genius and art. No pope ever carried the pretenſions of the tiara ſo far, introduced them with greater dexterity, or ſupported them with more capacity. This was the pontiff, who in the cruſades relinquiſhed the barren object of liberating the holy land, in order to make himſelf maſter of Conſtantinople, the acquiſition of which was of much greater importance to the intereſts of his ſee; 'twas he who eſtabliſhing that immenſe body of mendicant friars, who ſpread themſelves through all the ſtates of chriſtendom, were his ſpies about the great, and the inſtruments of his deſigns over the conſciences of men; in the courſe of his pontificate, he excommunicated and depoſed kings, but always on ſuch occaſions when the confuſion of affairs, or the weakneſs of the prince aſſured him that his thunders would not fall in vain; he, in fine, made religion terrible by erecting the bloody tribunal of the inquiſition, which armed with fire and ſword the miniſters of a goſpel that inculcates no other ſentiments but thoſe of meekneſs and charity.

THIS pontiff was ſenſible of the great advantage there would be in giving a maſter to the empire that ſhould be devoted to his, and in preventing the election of the family of Suabia, whoſe noble

ſpirit

ſpirit continually rejected the yoke. His intrigues actually interrupted the election, and filled the aſſembly with confuſion. Two emperors appeared at the ſame time, Philip, brother to Henry VI, who was ſupported by the numerous adherents of his family, and Otho, whom the clergy had elected. A civil war was ready to diſtract and rend the empire, when ſome prudent mediators prevented that calamity, and prevailed upon Otho to reſign the crown, on condition of obtaining after the death of his rival.

PHILIP had enjoyed it ſcarce ten years, without fame or ſplendor, when it paſſed on the head of Otho, and Innocent flattered himſelf that, in a prince who was indebted to him for the crown, he ſhould find the pliant ſlave of his deſigns: but the wiſe Saxon, from a perſuaſion that gratitude for an equivocal ſervice ſhould never betray men to acts of diſhonour, ſupported the rights of his ſcepter with firmneſs, and the friendſhip of the pontiff was thereby changed into the moſt violent hatred. He excommunicated him, declared him fallen from the throne; by the help of the monks kindled the flames of diſcord all over the empire, and on every ſide ſpread deſtruction round the unfortunate emperor, who died of a broken heart, at ſeeing ſuperſtition deprive him of his deareſt friends.

THE attachment of Germany to the family of Suabia again triumphed over the intrigues of Rome, and Frederic II, ſon to Henry VI, already king of the two Sicilies, remained in quiet poſſeſſion of the empire after the death of Otho. Innocent

cent raiſed an inſurrection in Pouille againſt the new emperor, and the brothers of the pope were in arms to ſupport the rebels. Frederic defeated the rebels and brothers of the pontiff, reſtored peace to his hereditary dominions, braved the cenſures with which he was loaded, and marched into Germany, in order to inforce all the rights of his dignity.

Honorius III, menaced and excommunicated him, but made no impreſſion on the mind of that prince, who was ſuperior to all ſuch fears. Weary of his impotent endeavours to excite a rebellion among chriſtians, whom the vigour of Frederic retained in their duty, the pontiff had recourſe to a remnant of Saracens, who had ſettled on the mountains of Sicily, and exhibited a curious ſpectacle to the eyes of mankind, in the head of religion levying troops of infidels. The active Frederic was immediately in motion againſt thoſe new levies, he attacked and ſubdued them, and, in order to cut off the ſource of this evil, he removed that people into the very heart of Pouille, where their motions were carefully watched, by ſubjects who adored their maſter.

Gregory IX, faithful to the maxims of his predeceſſors, perceiving that the preſence of the emperor had diſconcerted their ſchemes, employed art and cunning, and ſeized an opportunity of removing that formidable prince to a greater diſtance. The rights of the kingdom of Jeruſalem had fallen to John de Brienne, and Frederic, who in marrying Yolanda, daughter of that phantom

of

of a king, obtained thoſe rights for a portion, had engaged himſelf to inforce them.

Gregory pretended that religion was intereſted in the execution of this promiſe, called upon the emperor to croſs over into Aſia, at the head of an army under the banners of the croſs; and the prince refuſing to comply, he exclaimed againſt this perjury, and diſcharged his thunders. The emperor who ſaw that thoſe clamours, which were echoed by the clergy, began to make impreſſion in Europe, was determined at laſt to undertake the journey, though he was perſuaded it would be uſeleſs. He ſet out with a ſmall body of troops, depending on the army of the cruſade that was aſſembled near Jeruſalem. On his arrival, he found nothing but diffidence and murmurs, that threatened open rebellion. His orders were given in vain, no perſon would execute them.

The emiſſaries of the pope had been beforehand with him, and, making uſe of the influence of ſuperſtition over weak and vulgar minds, repreſented that prince as an impious wretch blaſted with the thunders of the church, whom it was meritorious to diſobey. At the ſame time, the templars and knights of St. John, who were all-powerful in Paleſtine, influenced by the ſame intrigues, oppoſed his deſigns, attacked his troops, and ſometimes inſulted him perſonally.

Frederic was enraged to ſee that the arts of his enemy had contributed to injure his reputation in Europe, by ſending him upon an expedition to Aſia, where every method had been taken to diſappoint ſucceſs; but he was ſoon informed that

thoſe were not the only ſnares laid for him. The emperor was ſcarce departed, when the pope appeared, at the head of a band of adventurers, plundering and ravaging every place that refuſed to ſubmit to his authority.

FREDERIC received this news with aſtoniſhment, that was ſoon converted into a juſt indignation. He haſtily concluded a treaty with the ſultan of Egypt, ſecuring the poſſeſſion of Jeruſalem to the chriſtians, repaired to the altar of the holy ſepulchre, and put on the crown himſelf, in the preſence of the biſhops, who were ſo far ſlaves to the will of the pope, that they refuſed to officiate at the ceremony; he then marched for Italy with the utmoſt expedition, in order to protect his dominions from the ravages of Gregory. At the head of his ſubjects who flocked round his ſtandards with impatient ardour, he marched in purſuit of the papal army, found them actually committing every ſpecies of violence and exceſs, defeated, routed and obliged them to fly from his dominions; then followed them into the eccleſiaſtical territories, which he attacked in turn. He ſeized upon Romania, Ancona, with the dutchies of Spoletto and Beneventum, defeated an army of Milaneſe in the intereſt of the pope, triumphed over the united forces of Genoa and Venice, croſſed over to Sardinia, and made a complete conqueſt of that iſland; thence returned to the continent, where he ſubjected, with equal rapidity, the dutchy of Urbino and Tuſcany, and then marched to beſiege Rome. At the ſame time, he ſeized upon the poſſeſſion of the templars and knights

knights of St. John, and drove out the mendicant orders, who were blowing up the flames of rebellion in his dominions.

GREGORY, who ſaw his thunders levelled in vain at the head of a prince, of ſuch wiſdom and activity, was in hopes of giving greater efficacy to his anathemas by diſcharging them in the midſt of a general council. But the misfortune of the biſhops, who were taken at ſea, as they were about to comply with the orders of the pope, fruſtrated his meaſures, and Gregory died with grief at the diſappointment.

CELESTIN IV, who held the chair but eighteen days, had it not in his power to attempt any thing. From Innocent IV, the ancient friend of Frederic, Europe conceived ſome hopes of a reconciliation between the two powers. Frederic was of a different opinion, he was perſuaded that his elevation would make a change in the ſentiments of the pontiff. *The cardinal, friend,* ſaid he, *will become an enemy in the pope.* His conjecture was right: Innocent ſoon followed the traces of Gregory. He threatened Frederic in imperious terms, but finding him ſtill unmoved, he excommunicated him, and exhorted Germany and Italy to take up arms againſt him. The emperor replied to thoſe anathemas by continual victories, and obliged his enemy to fly for ſhelter to France. 'Twas there Innocent aſſembled the famous council of Lyons, in which, after a juridical proceſs, he pronounced ſentence on Frederic; and depoſed him, with the moſt awful ceremonies: all the prelates of chriſtendom, with the ambaſſadors of the different princes, were

preſent on the occaſion, and St. Lewis thus ſuffered a ſtroke of eccleſiaſtic authority in his dominions, that might reverberate on his own crown. The pope, at the ſame time, publiſhed a cruſade againſt the emperor, and indulgences became the reward of rebellion.

When Frederic was informed of thoſe tranſactions, he drew his crown from the caſe in which he uſually kept it, and putting it on his head, *They have not as yet*, ſaid he, *deprived me of it*. He then wrote to all the crowned heads, ſhewed them the conſequences of the proceedings of the pope, and deſcribed in forcible terms, the dangers that might thence reſult to their authority. He ſent his ſon Conrad to Germany; he marched in perſon towards the ſouth of Italy, and in the north, left his friend Ecelin, whom neither menaces could ſhake, nor promiſes corrupt. From the Baltic to the coaſts of Africa, all was in arms, every place was in flames. The allies of the pope, under the name of Guelphes, the imperialiſts under that of Gibelins, were continually engaged, and fought with all the rage that enthuſiaſm and perſonal hatred inſpire.

But Frederic had not open enemies alone to oppoſe, he had to guard againſt the treacherous blows of aſſaſſins who were placed round him. He daily found monks diſguiſed in his camp, and in the very midſt of the court, diſcovered traitors among thoſe he eſteemed his beſt friends. Applications were even made to Conrad; he rejected with horror, the offer made him of his father's crown, and the attempt ſerved only to increaſe his

zeal

zeal and filial attachment. Phantoms of emperors ſucceſſively crowned, fell beneath the ſword of Frederic, and his glorious ſon. In every village of Germany and Italy, confuſion and the flames of ſedition were ſpread, by the chief of religion.

REBELLION continually ſuppreſſed in all quarters, ſtill reared her deſtructive head on every ſide, the frequent detection of treacherous ſnares, could not prevent the daily repetition of ſimilar baſeneſs. Reſtleſs anxiety, and the endleſs fatigues of war, entirely exhauſted the mind and body of Frederic, and that prince, who was ſtill young, died at length of grief or poiſon.

FREDERIC, according to the opinion even of his enemies, was one of the moſt enlightened men of the age, of extraordinary courage, active, intelligent, generous, magnificent, and one of the moſt learned men in the world. He ſpoke ſix different languages, and was the friend and protector of all the arts. But, by being continually expoſed to the attacks of hoſtility and treachery, his life was a ſeries of misfortunes, and he died in miſery and affliction, leaving his extenſive dominions rent by various factions, and his family on the brink of final ruin.

INNOCENT IV, imagined the moment was now arrived for accelerating the deſtruction of the houſe of Suabia. He returned haſtily into Italy, and thence invited William of Holland, to uſurp the imperial crown, while he ſent an army to the two Sicilies. His troops were routed by Mainfroy, the natural ſon of Frederic; William periſhed on the ice, ſurrounded by the people of Frieſland,

who cheriſhed the memory of their emperor. Conrad, who inherited the talents and glorious ſpirit of his father, made head on all ſides, and oppoſed his enemies with conſpicuous reſolution; he flew in a manner from the north of Germany to the ſouth of Italy, and by his courage retarded the fall of his thrones. Poiſon, a common expedient in thoſe barbarous times, cloſed his triumphs, and he left only one ſon, in the moſt tender years, to inherit his dominions and dangers. Innocent redoubled his blows againſt this infant, and died while he was flattering himſelf with the hopes of extirpating a race he ſo much deteſted.

ALEXANDER IV, and after him, the ſon of a ſhoemaker of Troyes, who was created pope, by the name of Urban IV, purſued the execution of the plan with equal ardour, and invited princes from every quarter, to whom they offered the crowns of Conradin. Charles of Anjou, the brother of St. Lewis accepted them, and, deaf to the advice of a generous monarch, repaired to Rome, followed by a ſplendid train of nobility; he there proſtrated himſelf at the feet of the pontiff, did public homage for the two Sicilies, and privately promiſed the ruin of the houſe of Suabia. Charles, who was a conſummate maſter in the art of war, eaſily defeated Mainfroy, who fell in the conflict, and the victor, ſeconded by all the indulgences and thunders of the vatican, made a rapid conqueſt of Pouille, Calabria and Sicily.

IN the mean while young Conradin, the laſt branch of the heroic family of Frederic, and his relation the duke of Auſtria appeared to claim the

ſcepter

ſceptet of which they had been robbed: the inconteſtable rights of their birth, the memory of the great men from whom they deſcended, their engaging youth, and ſtill more affecting misfortunes, pleaded in their favour. A powerful army, united under their banners, increaſed the hopes derived from the juſtice of their cauſe, but their valour, unſupported by experience, was no match for the courage of a prince accuſtomed to victory, and a battle imprudently given ruined their party, and made them captives to the enemy. Hiſtory preſents few objects ſo affecting on one ſide, and equally diſguſting on the other, as is here offered to our view. A prince, who has no real title to the crown, appears throwing chains over the legitimate heirs, without compaſſion for their age, or reſpect for their rank; condemns theſe young heroes, who were guilty of no other crime than appealing to the moſt ſacred rights; ordered them to be publicly executed on a ſcaffold, and by the hands of a common executioner, extinguiſhes one of the moſt illuſtrious families in the world.—Thus periſhed the auguſt houſe of Suabia, that was ſo prolific of great men, ſwayed the imperial and held one fourth of Europe in ſubjection for two hundred years.

Every thing was now in confuſion in Germany and Italy, various elections multiplied the number of emperors. Richard, duke of Cornwall, brother to the king of England, purchaſed the vain honour of a title with immenſe ſums. Another part of Germany was gained over by Alphonſus of Caſtile, who made uſeleſs efforts to ſecure it.

Horrid anarchy, divided, diſmembered and rent thoſe unhappy countries; the ſword ravaged the plains and fields, flames devoured the cities, and the pope, from the top of the throne, looked down without concern on all thoſe calamities. The empire, weary of thoſe horrors, united at length to elect a chief, whoſe wiſdom might prevent the farther progreſs of the evil, and the unanimous voice of the nation declared for Rodolph, count of Hapſbourg.

Eſtabliſhment of the Hanſtowns

FROM the dreadful anarchy with which Germany was convulſed, ſome cities derived liberty, wealth and glory. Hambourg and Lubec, terrified by the confuſion and diſorder which reigned among their neighbours on every ſide, formed a confederacy in order to repel the attacks of rapine and plunder. Many cities ſtruck with the wiſdom of this union, and the happy effects it produced, ſolicited to join in the ſame deſign. Thus a kind of republic was formed of cities, which united at firſt for the object of mutual defence only.

HAVING thus provided againſt external inſults by a union which made them formidable, they then regulated their domeſtic government, and by wiſe laws ſecured tranquility. Independance and quiet having enlarged their ideas, they entered into a new aſſociation in order to protect their commerce on the Baltic, to which they lay contiguous. The good order and harmony that reigned among them ſoon augmented their marine; and thoſe people, who acquired a ſort of empire over the northern ſeas, became the rivals of the greateſt powers.

ITALY

ITALY exhibited a ſimilar example. Some cities, ſituate on the coaſt of Tuſcany, took advantage of the continual wars between the petty princes round them, diſclaimed all ſubjection to any ſovereign, erected themſelves into republics, applied to navigation, and eſtabliſhed a commerce, which equally augmented their happineſs and power. Lucca, Piſa and Florence were already grown famous under Frederic II, and diſputed for victory with Genoa and Venice.

GENOA daily roſe in power and greatneſs; her fleets penetrated to the Black-ſea, and acquired colonies there; the iſland of Corſica became ſubject to her dominion; and Sardinia, after long ſtruggles, was divided between her citizens and thoſe of Piſa. Genoa and Venice.

VENICE ſhone with ſtill brighter luſtre. Theſe were the moſt glorious days of that republic. She now beat back the Hungarians, ſecured the poſſeſſion of Dalmatia, in ſpite of all the power of the Greek empire, protected the popes, and oppoſed the emperors with ſucceſs. Having united with the French cruſade, ſhe ſhared the honour of taking Conſtantinople; and after having been the rival of their dangers and glory, acted as their equal in the diviſion of the honours and ſpoils. A part of the iſlands of the Archipelago paſſed under her authority, and the rich and extenſive iſland of Candia became one of her provinces.

THE glorious emulation that had hitherto animated Genoa and Venice, contributed to their proſperity. Cruel envy now took place of that ſentiment; the forces of thoſe two republics devoted

voted before to the progreſs of commerce, began to be employed in mutual and bloody wars; and thoſe republicans, who had acted with ſo much wiſdom on all former occaſions, diſcoloured with their blood thoſe ſeas that had enriched them, on the moſt frivolous pretexts.

France and England.

ENGLAND roſe conſiderably during the courſe of the preſent epocha. Robert, duke of Normandy, was ſtripped of that kingdom by his younger brother, and ſoon after loſt Normandy itſelf, with his eyes and liberty. Henry I, the perfidious oppreſſor of his brother, covered the atrocity of his crime by talents that raiſed him to a level with the greateſt monarchs of the age. This prince, maſter of ſo many ſtates, directed all his thoughts at firſt, to weaken the power of the king of France, whoſe vaſſal he was; with this view he ſupported the nobles of that kingdom, whom he artfully perſuaded to take up arms in every quarter. Lewis VI, in order to retalliate upon Henry, protected William of Court-houſe, ſon to the unfortunate Robert, and urged the Normans to acknowlege their lawful ſovereign. On the other hand, Anſelm, archbiſhop of Canterbury, armed the clergy againſt their prince, on account of the right of inveſtiture, which the monarch claimed, and was refuſed by the primate.

THE pope united with ſo many enemies, and threatened to point his thunders. Henry, made head againſt all thoſe ſtorms by his prudence and courage; he pacified the pope by ceding the right of confering the crozier, and preſerved his honour by retaining the oath of fidelity. He diſperſed the rebels

rebels on the borders of the Thames, defeated Lewis *the Fat*, near the banks of the Seine, and found himſelf in a condition to diſtreſs his rival in turn, by ſetting the emperor againſt him, who entered France at the head of a formidable army.

HENRY, the ſovereign of ſo many ſtates, and triumphant in every quarter, was beſides the happy father of two ſons of the moſt promiſing expectations, and of two daughters, one of whom was married to the emperor, and the hand of the other ſolicited by the moſt illuſtrious princes in Europe: but his two ſons, with one of his daughters, and a part of the nobles, his moſt zealous friends, were in one hour ſhipwrecked and ſwallowed up by the waves. This misfortune revived the projects of Lewis and the ſon of Robert, but did not leſſen the activity of the Engliſh monarch. Notwithſtanding all the efforts of his enemies, he preſerved his conqueſt, and prepared an increaſe of dominions for his ſucceſſors, by marrying his daughter Matilda, now the widow of the emperor, to Jeffrey Plantagenet, ſovereign of the fertile provinces of Maine and Anjou. 'Twas after the concluſion of this match that England loſt her prince; his wiſdom and policy were greatly ſuperior to the times in which he lived, and his character would have been, perhaps, irreprehenſible, if he had been a leſs ungrateful brother, and a victor leſs barbarous.

MATILDA, the heireſs of his dominions, was ſtripped of England by Stephen, who uſurped the crown, and ſhewed himſelf worthy of wearing it. His death reſtored it to Henry II, the ſon of Matilda

Plantagenets eſtabliſhed in England.

tilda and Jeffrey; in him the family of the Plantagenets aſcended the throne. This family was famous for a long ſucceſſion of kings, for the heroes they produced, and for their diſſenſions and misfortunes.

Henry II, who was already duke of Anjou and Maine, united thoſe provinces to England and Normandy: he married, not long after, Eleonora of Aquitaine, whom the king of France had repudiated. By this alliance, in which he ſacrificed the delicacy of the huſband to the intereſts of the monarch, he added to his poſſeſſions the rich provinces ſituate between the mouth of the Loire and the ſource of the Adour. Thus he gave laws from the Orcades to the Pyrenees, and became one of the moſt powerful princes of the age.

The activity and capacity of this prince are recorded; he carried on continual wars againſt France with ſucceſs; he firſt conquered Ireland, that celebrated iſland, till then independant, which the diviſions among her princes firſt ſubjected to a foreign yoke. This is the Henry ſo well known, in the hiſtory of the church, for his quarrels with Thomas Becket, that virtuous prieſt but dangerous citizen, whom Henry had raiſed from the loweſt ſtation to the moſt elevated rank; and who, from a miſtaken conſcience, thought it a duty to diſturb the reign of his benefactor. The death of the archbiſhop of Canterbury would have been juſt perhaps, if it had been decreed in a regular manner: but the violence with which it was perpetrated, made the authors deteſted, and imbittered the life of the king who was innocent.

FRANCE urged Rome to avenge the murder of the prelate, in hopes of profiting by the confuſion in which an excommunication might involve England. Henry, the eldeſt ſon of the Engliſh monarch, who had been already crowned as his ſucceſſor, took up arms, and demanded one half of the kingdom. Eleonora, a wife no leſs jealous than faithleſs, attacked her conſort, becauſe he kept Alice of France, who was deſigned for her ſecond ſon Richard. Violent and artful in her deſires of revenge, ſhe alſo engaged Jeffrey her third ſon in the quarrel. At the ſame time, the king of Scotland invaded the north of England with a numerous army, while the earl of Leiceſter, a rebellious ſubject, who had attempted the life of his ſovereign, ravaged the ſouthern parts of the iſland. Henry, was at firſt ſhocked at ſuch a multiplicity of misfortunes, but he ſoon recovered his activity and courage. He pacified the pope by public penance, and by honours paid to the memory of Thomas. He croſſed over into England with the utmoſt expedition, defeated in perſon, or by his generals, the king of Scotland and Leiceſter, and made them both priſoners.

HE then returned to France, drove his eldeſt ſon with Lewis his protector out of Normandy, marched againſt his other children, ſeized upon the perſon of Leonora, ſubjected the rebels, and dictated peace as conqueror: he ſtill however retained Alice, and by various ſubterfuges eluded the promiſe he had made of giving her to Richard. Richard complained to the king of France, who demanded the reſtoration of his daughter in vain.

THE

THE pope took part in the affair, Henry amuſed him. Recourſe was had to arms again, and all his children, except John the youngeſt, openly declared againſt him. The ſucceſs, with which the aged Henry began the war, ſo deeply affected the young king that he fell ſick, and his diſtemper proved fatal; the father however lamented the death of this rebellious ſon as if he had been always faithful. Jeffrey, who was preparing to reſume the projects of his brother, was trampled to death under the feet of horſes at a public feſtival.

BUT fortune now abandoned the monarch. Richard, the elder of his two remaining ſons, raiſed the ſtandard of rebellion, and victory continually attended him in all his motions. Alarmed at the conqueſts of the confederates, Henry at laſt conſented to ſurrender Alice into the hands of ſome perſon choſen by both parties, and was obliged to give up a part of his power. In the midſt of his misfortunes, this prince felt ſome conſolation, from the idea that John his favourite ſon had not conſpired againſt him, but being curious to ſee the liſt of his enemies, he perceived, at their head, the name of this very ſon, of whoſe innocence he was before perſuaded. This unexpected diſcovery deeply wounded the unhappy father, he ſunk under the ſeverity of the blow, and deſpair hurried him to the tomb. Thus a prieſt, a wife and children, imbittered the life, and at laſt broke the heart of a monarch who had not perhaps his equal in Europe, either as to power or talents.

FRANCE at firſt performed an inferior part. Lewis VI, Lewis VI, leſs powerful than ſome of his vaſſals, ſpent his life in contending with petty tyrants, and his courage procured him ſucceſs, ſuperior to what might have been expected from his ſtrength. He had to ſtruggle with the lords of Montmorency, the petty ſovereigns of Montchery, and the governors of Rochefort; he made it a ſerious affair to reduce the trifling fortreſs of Puiſet, and employed all his troops in the conqueſt of a caſtle that commanded a ſmall village. Continually on horſeback and under arms, defeated and victorious alternately, he at length prevailed by his prudence as well as courage, and ſubjected the ſovereigns of the Iſle of France. Having acquired ſtrength by this ſucceſs, he then turned his eyes towards the great vaſſals, of whom he was chief; he fomented quarrels and diviſions among them, gained over ſome, kindled rebellion in the territories of others, conciliated the friendſhip of the clergy, by affecting great zeal for their intereſt and defence; and when he had made them inſtrumental to the increaſe of his power and authority, he laid hold of every opportunity for humbling that body in turn. Thus, by a prudent conduct, in which policy and valour were always united, he gave the firſt blows to feudal anarchy, and laid the foundation of the authority of his ſucceſſors.

IF we judge of princes only by the extent of their dominions, their power and the greatneſs of their conqueſts, Lewis *the Fat*, muſt not undoubtedly be ranked among great kings; but if they are conſidered by their activity, courage, the wiſdom

dom of their deſigns, and the difficulty of their undertakings, Lewis VI, will be ever dear to the French nation, and hold a place in the liſt of her moſt reſpectable ſovereigns. Suger, the virtuous monk, patriotic prieſt and able ſtateſman, who had ſeconded the deſigns of his maſter, ſupported them after his death, and made amends for the incapacity of Lewis VII.

THIS prince, the unworthy heir of the ſcepter of his father, diſgraced it by his weakneſs, and made himſelf odious by the ravages he committed in Champagne, and by the horrid maſſacre at Vitry, the bare remembrance of which makes humanity ſhudder. No leſs imprudent in remorſe, than barbarous in the commiſſion of crimes, regardleſs of the advice and intreaties of Suger, he dragged the flower of his ſubjects to Paleſtine, there acted ingloriouſly, returned thence with ſhame, diſgraced himſelf as a king and a huſband, and concluded with ruining the power of France, by diſmiſſing a faithleſs wife, who carried with her a ſixth part of the monarchy to the Engliſh ſovereign.

Philip *the Auguſt.*

UNDER Philip *the Auguſt*, affairs took a different turn, from the very commencement of this reign. France claimed ſome weight and influence. At the ſame time Richard aſcended the throne of England. Thus thoſe two ſtates were governed by two young princes, nearly equal in power, both ambitious, both jealous of that falſe ſplendor which attends conqueſts. Richard, with more impetuoſity, more fire, and perhaps more generoſity, had more of thoſe qualities that conſtitute

the

character of a hero; Philip, with more deliberation and coolneſs in his deſigns, more prudence and policy, had more of thoſe talents that form the great king.

They both ſet out for the holy-land with mutual oaths of eternal friendſhip. Richard, who ſignalized himſelf by actions of greater luſtre, and on that account appeared with more ſtriking luſtre, made the French monarch too ſenſible of his ſuperiority. Patriotic love or attachment cannot juſtify the faithleſs Philip, who, notwithſtanding his repeated oaths, not to attack the dominions of the Engliſh prince, during his abſence, returned to France, and with fire and ſword ravaged the poſſeſſions of Richard. The latter, in haſtening to the defence of his ſubjects, was arreſted at the court of Leopold duke of Auſtria, ſold to the emperor Henry VI, loaded with chains, and frequently menaced with torments; in ſhort, he ſuffered all the diſtreſſes and mortifications of captivity. Being afterwards reſtored to the wiſhes of the Engliſh who adored him; he returned haſtily back to France, where he found a perfidious brother who had been in league with his enemies; he obliged the traitor to ſue for mercy, pardoned him, and then turned his arms againſt Philip. France was divided; victory floated between the ſtandards of Richard and Philip, and alternately favoured each, until the Engliſh monarch was aſſaſſinated by the hands of a ruffian; he died, giving orders to pardon his murderer.

Philip, now freed from ſo formidable a rival, was meditating new ſchemes againſt his ſucceſſor.

John had taken the ſcepter of Richard, but it was diſputed by his nephew Arthur, duke of Britanny, who urged a prior claim, as being ſon to the eldeſt brother of his competitor. Fortune, in giving victory to John, threw chains over the unhappy Arthur, whom his inhuman uncle, with a barbarity that is hardly to be equalled, ſtabbed with his own hand. Britanny, with loud indignation, demanded ſatisfaction for the blood of her ſovereign, and Philip cited the Engliſh monarch, as the vaſſal of France, to appear before the tribunal of peers. Upon the refuſal of the criminal, a decree was given in a ſolemn manner, ſtripping him of all the territories he poſſeſſed on the continent. Philip immediately advanced at the head of a flouriſhing army, in order to execute the ſentence, and took poſſeſſion of the rich provinces that made England miſtreſs of ſo conſiderable a part of France. Maine, Anjou, Touraine and Normandy were ſubjected, and the conqueror was marching to reduce Guienne and Poitou, which ſtill remained in the hands of the foreigners.

While the French monarch was thus acquiring immortal glory, and ſtripping the Engliſh of their moſt valuable poſſeſſions. John inſenſible to his loſſes, ſpent his time between pleaſure and acts of violence. He was a voluptuary at Caen, a tyrant in London, and both in the Iſle of Wight: he diſguſted the people by oppreſſive exactions, the nobility by inſults, and the clergy by the open contempt he avowed for religion; odious to all orders of the ſtate, he quarrelled with the pope by an obſtinate firmneſs, that would have been laudable on another

another occaſion, but as matters were then ſituated, it was highly imprudent; he refuſed to acknowlege the archbiſhop of Canterbury whom the pope had appointed; and, ever in extremes, in all his proceedings, he publiſhed a decree, commanding all the clergy to leave his kingdom.

The inflexible Innocent III, immediately thundered out an excommunication againſt John, declared him fallen from the throne, exhorted his ſubjects to expel him, and urged Philip to ſeize upon his kingdom. Philip, always ready to take advantage of any confuſion or troubles in England, equiped a powerful fleet for the expedition. The Welch at the ſame time revolted, the people driven to extremities loudly murmured, the nobles conſpired, and the clergy urged the mob to take up arms. All now uniting againſt the tyrant, he ſaw nothing but a dreadful abyſs before him, into which every thing now ſeemed conſpiring to ſink him.

This was what the artful pontiff deſired, and in the midſt of the deſpair that agitated the mind of the prince, held out an infallible expedient: he propoſed to him to make himſelf a vaſſal to his ſee, and declare his kingdom under the protection and authority of Rome. John bowed the neck with horror to a yoke that he deteſted; he threw himſelf at the feet of the legate, placed his crown on the altar, did not preſume to take it back, until it was delivered from the hands of that eccleſiaſtic, and acknowleged that he held it from the pope.

INNOCENT now took part with John; the clergy whom he brought over to the ſame ſide, obliged the nobles who had reckoned upon their aſſiſtance, to return to their duty. John, who owed his preſervation to meanneſs, now devoted his thoughts to vengeance, and with no leſs dexterity than ſucceſs, concerted one of the moſt formidable leagues that had ever attacked France. The emperor and the king of England were the chiefs of this confederacy; Euſtace of Boulogne, and Ferrand count of Flanders, with a great number of lords, uneaſy at the increaſing power of their monarch, united their forces with thoſe of the foreigners; two formidable armies, one in Anjou under the direction of John, and the other in Flanders commanded by Otho, ſeemed to menace the kingdom with inevitable ruin.

ON this occaſion Philip diſplayed all his greatneſs of ſoul. Incapable of debaſing himſelf by ſupplications to his enemies, deaf to every propoſal that could injure the majeſty of his rank, he relied entirely upon the zeal of his people and his own courage. He ſent his ſon into Anjou, marched in perſon for Flanders, and met Otho at Bouvines.

THE battle fought there is celebrated in the annals of France. That nation acquired immortal glory in triumphing over an army double in num- to the victors; the nobility performed aſtoniſhing feats of valour; Neſle, Montmorency and Deſtaing, gave a luſtre to their names which ſix centuries have ſerved only to increaſe; here it was that Philip, after regulating every thing with the capacity of a great commander, animated by the

danger,

danger, and hurried on by the ardour of his courage, found himſelf alone in the midſt of his enemies, ſurrounded by an enraged band who were determined to deſtroy him; he was at length diſmounted, trampled upon by the cavalry, and in this deſperate ſituation was preſerved by his own valour and the love of his people, two circumſtances the moſt flattering to a king. The emperor obliged to retreat ſhamefully to his own dominions, the counts of Flanders and Boulogne taken priſoners, all Flanders ſubjected, and the precipitate flight of John, whom Lewis, the worthy rival of his father, defeated at Roche-aux-moines, raiſed France to the higheſt pitch of glory.

JOHN returned to his iſland to meet with contempt and hatred. England, enraged to ſee herſelf thus diſgraced by the monarch, and oppreſſed on the other hand, by his avarice and cruelty, which his diſappointments had aggravated, raiſed the ſtandard of rebellion in every quarter, inſiſted upon a reſtitution of the privileges ſhe enjoyed under the Saxon kings, called in Lewis, the ſon and heir of Philip to her aſſiſtance, and braving, for the firſt time, the thunders of the pope which were diſcharged in favour of a vaſſal, crowned the French prince, and abjured the tyrant with his ſon. John, grown more furious by his misfortunes, with a few cities that ſtill remained in his poſſeſſion, and a handful of wretches whom he ſupported by plunder and robbery, redoubled his rage, carried fire and ſword wherever he paſſed, and after exerciſing every ſpecies of oppreſſion and violence, conceived the deſign of breaking down the incloſures

that ſeparated the foreſts from the cultivated lands, in order to let looſe the wild beaſts to aſſiſt him in ravaging the country. Having loſt his people at length in attempting to croſs a river, grief and diſappointment threw him into a dangerous diſtemper, which his exceſſes inflamed: he died leaving a ſon in the cradle, his moſt cruel enemies in poſſeſſion of his throne, and England a prey to all the miſeries of diſcord.

The death of John, which ſeemed, at firſt, to give ſtability to the throne lately acquired by Lewis, became the cauſe of its ſubverſion. The hatred conceived againſt the father, gave way to pity for the ſon. The condition of a helpleſs orphan, innocent of the crimes with which the tyrant was reproached, the lawful heir of the ſcepter excluded by a ſtranger, who had ſignalized himſelf only by his victories over the nation, were conſiderations that inſenſibly affected the hearts of the people. Pembroke, chancellor of England, and des Roches, biſhop of Wincheſter, rouzed thoſe ſentiments, and formed a party to oppoſe the progreſs of Lewis; whilſt the legate of the pope, whom the intereſt of the court of Rome united with them, terrified the people with interdictions and cenſures. The French themſelves co-operated in their own deſtruction by their oppreſſion, and by the contempt which they affected to ſhew for the natives. Thus every thing was gradually conſpiring in favour of the ſon of John; and the chancellor, by his genius and application, daily brought over the nobles of England from the faction of the foreigners. Lewis was ſoon beſieged

ſieged in London; and after having exerted all the efforts of his valour, he was obliged to ſolicit permiſſion to return to his own country; this he obtained but on certain conditions, which he promiſed but never performed.

France continued to riſe in power and ſplendor under Philip, who equally great in peace and war, gave permanency to his conqueſts by a wiſe adminiſtration; he regulated his finances, ſurrounded his cities with walls, took troops into pay, which till then had no fixed allowance, and by that means made them more immediately dependant; at the ſame time he introduced at his court a politeneſs and magnificence which diſtinguiſhed it from others, and left France increaſed one half and reſpected by all Europe. Poſterity has honoured him with the ſirname of *Auguſt*, which he merited no leſs by his talents than his conqueſts He may be juſtly conſidered as the ſecond founder of the French monarchy, and the crown in particular is indebted to him for that authority which makes it ſo reſpectable to the nation.

France preſerved her ſuperiority under Lewis VIII, he was a prince of great courage, and merited reproach only for his blind zeal in turning, againſt the unhappy people of Alby, thoſe arms that would have been better employed againſt the rivals of his ſcepter. The talents of Blanche prevented the ſtate from loſing ſtrength during the minority of Lewis IX. This prince, while he reigned, diſplayed all the qualities neceſſary to increaſe the power and glory of the kindom: he defeated the Engliſh at Taillebourg; retained the re-

bellious vaſſals in their duty; checked the uſurpations of the clergy; put a ſtop to the oppreſſion committed by the nobles; revived laws; created a police; erected tribunals, where he ſat himſelf, and gave decrees that encouraged the hopes of innocence, and terrified injuſtice and oppreſſion: from one extremity to the other of his extenſive dominions, he governed with ſuch order and wiſdom, as made him the delight of his ſubjects and the oracle of kings.

He was indeed an admirable prince, and had no other fault but an exceſs of virtue. Extravagant devotion however weakened the effects of ſo many eſtimable talents. He degraded the majeſty of his rank by too minute attention to trivial matters, he ſometimes exerciſed a cruel perſecution which a heart naturally benevolent ſhould oppoſe; from a ſcruple of conſcience that policy condemns, he reſtored to England the provinces he had taken by his valour. He ſuddenly quitted his dominions, and entered Egypt, where he loſt the flower of his nobles who followed him. Having obtained liberty by diſtreſſing the nation; inſtead of accelerating his return in order to conſole and recover it by his virtues, he paſſed a conſiderable time in viſiting the holy city, and ſeemed, for ſeveral years, to have loſt all remembrance of his ſubjects, in indulging his paſſion for devotion. In the mean time, different factions ravaged France, the more powerful vaſſals made a jeſt of authority, and the inſurrection among the peaſants, one of the moſt barbarous that ever happened, brought the kingdom to the very brink of deſtruction.

Lewis

Lewis at length made his appearance, and appeaſed every diſturbance by his wiſdom; but ſtill engroſſed by his wars againſt infidels, he croſſed over into Africa, where the plague made dreadful havock among his troops, and terminated the life of a king born for the happineſs of his ſubjects, and whom miſtaken zeal often made the cauſe of their miſery.

In the courſe of this reign an event happened that was of little importance at firſt, but is ſince become dear to France. Robert, count of Clermont, one of the ſons of St. Lewis, married the heireſs of Bourbon, took the name of his conſort, and became the head of that branch of the royal family, which aſcended the throne after three centuries. This ancient and auguſt branch has produced many heroes, is now in poſſeſſion of three crowns, is the ruling power in the ſouth of Europe, and makes three powerful kingdoms happy.

England continued to exhibit the ſtrangeſt revolutions. During the minority of Henry III, the iſland enjoyed peace and happineſs, and taſted the fruits of the wiſdom of Pembroke, whom his epitaph, confirmed by poſterity, repreſented as a Sun in the council, and a Mars in the camp. When Henry aſſumed the reins, every thing changed, and the ſtate was more divided than ever. He was juſt, beneficent, and poſſeſſed every virtue without a ſingle talent: he gave his entire confidence to miniſters who employed the authority of the prince in committing the moſt oppreſſive acts of injuſtice. Rouzed by the general murmurs of the people, he puniſhed the authors; but

ſtill

ſtill incapable of holding the ſcepter himſelf, he committed it to the care of an ambitious conſort, who ruined the nation by her rapacious exactions, and diſguſted the nobles by her pride and inſolence.

THE whole iſland, weary of a weak and ſuperſtitious government, roſe up in arms, demanded the reſtitution of her privileges, and diſplayed MAGNA CHARTA, that had lain a long time in oblivion.

THE ſedition had the good fortune to meet with the moſt powerful ſupport in the famous Leiceſter, who, by order of his confeſſor, placed himſelf at the head of the rebels, and aſſiſted them with all his genius and talents. We are here preſented with a ſucceſſion of civil wars, in which, after alternate ſucceſſes and diſappointments, Leiceſter made the king and all his family priſoners, and laid the foundation of that government where the laws only allow the king to execute the will of the people, and leave him the power of doing good.

THE count, who then reigned with the title of king, governed with abſolute authority, reformed the abuſes of the kingdom, and gained admiration. But whilſt he imagined himſelf moſt ſecure, a plot artfully conducted, ſet the ſon and heir of Henry at liberty. The young prince had ſcarce ſhaken off his fetters, when he collected the friends of his family, took poſſeſſion of all the weſtern parts of England, and marched againſt Leiceſter, who advanced to receive him. A battle, in which the count, after exerting all his ſkill

and

and capacity, periſhed ſword in hand, reſtored the king to liberty and the ſupreme authority. The confederates were proſcribed, their poſſeſſions confiſcated, their decrees and regulations annulled, and Edward purſued the heads of the faction who had fortified themſelves in the Iſle of Ely: they made an obſtinate reſiſtance, but were at laſt obliged to implore his clemency. The young hero, more glorious after victory, refuſed to hold the ſcepter he had conquered. Henry, aſſiſted by his advice, paſſed the reſt of his days in tranquility, to which he had been a ſtranger for forty years; this prince was as different from the vicious diſpoſitions of his father, as he was inferior to the immortal talents which adorned his glorious ſon.

Spain, Arragon, Caſtile, and Portugal.

CHRISTIAN Spain, preſented now as many heroes as ſhe had kings. Sancho-Ramir, who had ſo far extended the boundaries of Arragon, died ſword in hand in the very moment of victory. His ſon, Peter I, ſtripped the Moors of the important city of Hueſca, and the little kingdom of which it was the capital. Bold enterprizes, aſtoniſhing actions, and continual battles and triumphs, juſtly gained Alphonſus his ſucceſſor, the ſirname of *Warrior*. In Caſtile, the ſucceſſes were a while ſuſpended. Cid had terminated a life that was a ſeries of wonders with the defence of Valencia. Zaide, the daughter of a Saracen king, whom the love of Alphonſus VI, had lately placed on the throne, intereſted her conſort in favour of her countrymen, and reſtrained the valour which had been ſo fatal to them.

THE

THE king of Morocco, whoſe eyes were continually open to the tranſactions of Spain, took advantage of this indolence and ſuddenly attacked the chriſtians with all the forces of mahometiſm in Africa. The battle of Veles, in which Alphonſus was defeated, and loſt his only ſon, ſeemed capable of producing a general revolution; but the abilities of the Caſtilian in whom misfortune revived all his activity, repaired every thing, and the beams of new triumphs ſhot forth and made the cloſe of his reign glorious.

URACA, the heireſs of the dominions of Caſtile, and mother to the young count of Galicia, married Alphonſus of Arragon, gave him the crown, regardleſs of the rights of her ſon, and chriſtian Spain thus united under this gallant monarch imagined the moment was now at hand for entirely expelling the Moors. The diſputes that aroſe between the royal pair diſſipated thoſe hopes, and fomented greater diſcord than ever between both kingdoms. The young count of Galicia took advantage of thoſe commotions, and the qualities he diſplayed at ſo early a period of life, filenced all objections to a foreign maſter, the nobles deprived Alphonſus the *Warrior*, of the ſcepter, and crowned the ſon of Uraca by the name of Alphonſus VIII. Thus the family of Burgundy acquired a ſecond crown in Spain, and from them deſcended a long race of kings.

THE young monarch had ſcarce aſcended the throne when he had to defend it againſt the prince of Arragon, but by a wiſe and reſolute conduct, he obliged him to acknowlege his rights, and then turned

turned his arms with him againſt the Saracens. The two Alphonſus's attacked the Moors at the ſame time; the Arragonian penetrated as far as Andalouſia, and there defeated twelve kings in a pitched battle; the Caſtilian who advanced between the Tagus and Guadiana, drove an immenſe body of Moors before him, and was preparing to puſh them towards the ſea, when the troubles in Portugal obliged him to return.

Henry of Burgundy, having left a ſon in the moſt tender years, the regency was committed to the counteſs Thereſa. That princeſs entirely devoted to her pleaſures, gave up the ſtate to the management of contemptible favourites. The nation incenſed, broke out into murmurs, and urged young Alphonſus to take the reigns of government out of the hands of his mother, as ſhe behaved ſo unworthy of that authority. Thereſa, inflamed by the deſire of revenge, ſtifled the ſentiments of nature, called in her nephew, the king of Caſtile, to take poſſeſſion of the kingdom of Portugal. The Caſtilian was immediately on the wing to ſeize upon the prey, which he imagined there would be no difficulty in effecting, as he had to contend with a young prince of no experience. The count advanced boldly to oppoſe him, without the leaſt apprehenſion of facing a monarch accuſtomed to conquer, he attacked him, and obtained a complete victory. From a perſuaſion then that he owed no ſubjection to a prince whom he had conquered, he freed himſelf from the homage to which his father had ſubjected his dominions,

minions, and forced the Caſtilian to acknowlege him independant.

The king of Arragon, ſtill inflamed with the deſire of purſuing the infidels, offered himſelf as a mediator between the two princes, and perſuaded them to unite with, and renew the war againſt the Moors. The Alphonſus's accordingly begun their march at the ſame time, one towards the kingdom of Murcia, another to Andaloufia, and the third towards the Tagus. The Moors, thus attacked by thoſe three heroes, imagined themſelves loſt, when the *Warrior*, the ſoul of this confederacy, hurried on by the impetuoſity of his courage, fell into a ſnare, and died ſword in hand.

This accident ſaved the Arabs, and created confuſion among the chriſtians. An extravagant will made by ſo wiſe a prince, bequeathed his kingdoms to the templars, and thoſe military monks prepared to take poſſeſſion. Alphonſus of Caſtile, deſcended by the mother from the family of Arragon, proteſted againſt the will, and claimed the throne. In the midſt of thoſe diſputes, the two nations that had been ſubject to the *Warrior*, were divided; Navarre ſought a prince among the deſcendants of her ancient kings, and crowned don Garcias; Arragon drew the monk Ramir, brother to the *Warrior*, from the cloiſter. The latter, who became contemptible for his incapacity, endeavoured to force reſpect by ſeverity, but excited deteſtation; the hatred of the people obliged him to quit the throne, to which his ſon-in-law, the count of Barcelona was raiſed by the unanimous voice of the nation.

The

The ſovereigns of Barcelona were originally no more than governors appointed by the French emperors, but thoſe princes, taking advantage of favourable opportunities, had made themſelves independent; ſubjected Catalonia, and by alliances acquired a part of Provence, with the city of Montpelier. Raimond united thoſe provinces to the crown of Arragon, and that kingdom increaſed by ſuch conſiderable poſſeſſions, ſeemed now to diſpute for equality with Caſtile.

While the three Spaniſh kings were contending together in order to determine claims that had not as yet been ſufficiently adjuſted, Alphonſus of Portugal, continued his victories, ſubjected all the country that lay contiguous to the borders of the Tagus, defeated in one day five Mooriſh kings, and his ſoldiers, perſuaded that their heroic leader was worthy of the moſt reſpectable title, proclaimed him king, in the very plains that had been the ſcene of his triumph. Caſtile in vain objected to this honour, the pope, who was then conſidered as the umpire in thoſe diſputes, confirmed the auguſt title. Alphonſus, impatient to juſtify his claim to the new rank he had acquired, advanced towards Liſbon, a place of great importance on account of its ſituation, and after a ſiege, in the courſe of which, both parties diſplayed the moſt heroic valour, he took the city, and made it the capital of his dominions.

Sancho, who ſucceeded Alphonſus in Caſtile, juſt made his appearance on the throne, when death carried him off, and deprived his ſubjects of the greateſt expectations they had formed of that prince.

prince. Under Alphonſus IX, who was called the *noble*, from his exalted mind, and the *good*, on account of the qualities of his heart; the famous battle of Murandal was fought, in which, if we give credit to the annals of Spain, a handful of troops routed four hundred thouſand fighting men, two hundred thouſand Moors were ſlain, with the loſs of only thirty Spaniards, heaven diſplayed the brighteſt miracles, and St. James himſelf fought at the head of the Caſtilians. The real miracle, on this occaſion, was the valour and prudence of Alphonſus, who, from a riſing ground, had his eyes on all ſides, regulated every motion, flew to every quarter, where the danger made his preſence neceſſary, and ſeemed to inſpire his people round him with all his courage and greatneſs of ſoul.

Henry I, killed by the fall of a tile, after a reign of few years, filled Spain with affliction and mourning, when he was preparing happineſs for that nation. Ferdinand III, by ſad neceſſity obliged to oppoſe his father, whoſe ambition endeavoured to rob him of the crown he derived from his mother, ſoon after united the crowns of Leon and Caſtile, and equalled the glory of all his predeceſſors. He made himſelf maſter of Merida, of Badajoz, Jaen the capital of a kingdom, Cordova, ſo famous for the learned men it has produced, and Seville, ſo ſtrong from her natural ſituation, ſo valuable for the fertility of her territories, and ſo rich by her extenſive commerce. He died ſuddenly in the midſt of preparations for attacking Africa, which he was reſolved to make

the

her feel in turn, all the miſeries ſhe had occaſioned to the chriſtians of Spain.

Next followed the ſingular reign of Alphonſus X, ſirnamed the *Sage*: he was an able aſtronomer, but a wrong-headed king; he had the vanity to think that he could have aſſiſted God in the government of the world; though he never was capable of managing his own dominions. The fate of this prince was particularly ſtrange; he was reſpected by foreigners on account of his ſuperior knowlege in thoſe days, and hated by his own people whom he made miſerable, with all the qualities requiſite for their happineſs. Germany, ſtruck with admiration at his wiſdom, offered him the imperial crown, at the very moment that his ſubjects were preparing to depoſe him, on account of his incapacity to govern.

In Arragon, Berenger gave ſtability to his throne, by inſpiring love and veneration. The ſtate loſt ſtrength by the misfortune of Peter II. This intrepid prince marched haſtily to the aſſiſtance of the count of Toulouſe, and periſhed at Muret, as he was endeavouring to avenge the cauſe of his friend againſt the troops of the cruſade. James I, re-eſtabliſhed the kingdom by his wiſdom, appeaſed the diſaffected provinces, conciliated the minds of the rebels, attacked the moſt refractory, and reſtored happineſs and tranquility to the whole body of the ſtate: he afterwards diſplayed thoſe qualities that acquired him the title of *Martial* and *Warlike*. He conquered the iſlands of Majorca, Minorca and Ivica, made himſelf

maſter of the kingdom of Valencia, and raiſed Arragon to an equality with the greater powers.

PORTUGAL loſt Alphonſus, but his valour was recovered in Sancho I, his ſon, who triumphed over the Saracens, built cities, created fleets, and encouraged population. Alphonſus enlarged the boundaries of his dominions, and ſecured the frontiers, by reducing the important fortreſs of Alcaſar. Sancho II, blindly inſtrumental to the paſſions of an ambitious woman, paid no attention to his glory; and the people, accuſtomed to ſee great kings on the throne, obliged him to abdicate it. His brother Alphonſus III, who ſucceeded him, repudiated his conſort, and braved the thunders of Rome, which he drew upon himſelf by a ſecond marriage. He made himſelf equally dear and reſpectable to the nation, by the glory of his arms and the wiſdom of his adminiſtration. The Moors, in the mean while, were expoſed to continual attacks, and protracted their ruin by aſtoniſhing efforts of valour. All Spain was involved in war, and the contention between the two people, inflamed by the hatred which a diſparity of religion inſpired, was ſo general, that every village took up arms againſt ſome neighbouring hamlet.

Poland, Ruſſia, and Bohemia.

THE effects of the misfortune of Boleſlas II, were ſtill felt in Poland. Divided among ſeveral dukes, none of whom had reſolution to aſſume the title of king, ſhe preſented nothing but one continued ſcene of quarrels that envy and revenge produced between thoſe weak ſovereigns, with the obſcurity into which thoſe diſorders plunged the ſtate, and the miſeries the inhabitants ſuffered from

from thoſe contentions. The annals of Ruſſia, at this time, ſcarce preſerved the names of her obſcure chiefs: after ſome wars, or rather excurſions againſt the Polanders and Bulgarians, ſhe at laſt fell under the yoke of the Tartars, and ſubmitted to the moſt abject ſlavery.

Ruſſia in the hands of the Tartars.

BOHEMIA continued to form a conſiderable kingdom, preſerved a manifeſt ſuperiority over the neighbouring powers, and exhibited reſpectable princes, and illuſtrious actions; but thoſe are not proper objects of univerſal hiſtory, as they related to that kingdom only which was in a manner ſecluded from any concern with the reſt of Europe.

Sweden.

CHRISTIANITY was eſtabliſhed in Sweden, and the manners of the people grew more refined. Saint Eric digeſted the ancient laws, added others and formed a code, which had been augmented by his ſucceſſors, and ſtill governs the nation. The Goths and Swedes, who before formed two ſeparate people, were now united by a law that has no example. It was decreed that the ſcepter ſhould be alternately ſwayed by each; and what is ſtill more aſtoniſhing than even the eſtabliſhment of ſuch a law, it was executed with fidelity. The ſtate, at the ſame time, roſe in greatneſs, and the conqueſt of Finland, augmented the kingdom with all the forces of that extenſive province.

Denmark.

The modern hiſtory of Denmark may truly be ſaid to commence with Waldemar I. This prince by uniting the different parts of the kingdom,

which a miſtaken policy had divided, reſtored it to that vigour which it poſſeſſed ſome centuries before; he added new conqueſts to the old, made the Rugians ſubmit to the yoke, and ſubjected the Vandals, thoſe eternal enemies of the ſtate, who continually ravaged her frontiers: the famous city of Dantzick is indebted to him for her foundation, and it was under his auſpices that a biſhop began to build the city of Copenhagen.

CANUTE VI, to the poſſeſſions of his father, added the fertile provinces of Livonia and Eſtonia. Waldemar II, ſtill more powerful, ſubjected Pomerania, Mecklenbourg, Courland, all the ſouthern coaſt of the Baltic, and was in a condition to give laws to all the north. His perfidious abuſe of the confidence of a friend, who, at ſetting out for the holy land, committed his wife to his care, in a moment blaſted his proſperity. Count Shuerin, being informed at his return of the injury he had ſuſtained, during his abſence, blew up the flames of rebellion in every part of the kingdom. Pomerania and Mecklenbourg ſhook off the yoke; the dutchy of Holſtein elected a new maſter. Dantzick became a republic, and the Teutonic order, taking advantage of the dreadful confuſion that agitated Denmark, ſeized upon Pruſſia and Livonia, and there eſtabliſhed a power which ſoon after proved troubleſome to the north.

Hungary. HUNGARY had already produced illuſtrious kings. Among thoſe we find Stephen II, the conqueror of the Bulgarians and Greeks, who had ſo long a contention with the Venetians, and obliged them to reſtore Croatia; Bela, who, though deprived

deprived of ſight by the barbarity of an uncle, governed nevertheleſs with equal wiſdom and happineſs; Emeric, who, alone and unarmed, appeared in the midſt of a body of rebels, and ſupporting that reſolute ſtep with the moſt exalted air of authority, awed them into ſubmiſſion, and made them drop their arms; Andrew II, famous for his expedition to the holy land; his memory will be ever juſtly dear and venerable to the Hungarians, for his glorious generoſity in declaring that his people would be right to oppoſe their prince if he attempted to violate their privileges; and laſtly, Bela IV, beloved by his neighbours, and the delight of his own people, who, in the midſt of a reign devoted to every virtue, experienced the greateſt misfortune that can befall a benevolent and worthy king. Five hundred thouſand Tartars ruſhing forth from the extremities of Aſia, overſpread Hungary, and reduced that fertile kingdom to a heap of aſhes, after it had flowed with the blood of a million of the wretched inhabitants. Happily the humane Bela lived to ſee his country freed from thoſe barbarians and taſted the ſweet pleaſure of wiping away the tears of his ſubjects.

Grecian empire.

The empire of Greece, deluged by the cruſades, and blindly ſubject to a pontiff that was an enemy to her throne, was however preſerved by the ablilities of Alexis; the ſtate enjoyed ſome tranquility under that emperor, who had ample revenge for the enmity of the Latins in the hiſtory written by his illuſtrious daughter, a princeſs no leſs diſtinguiſhed for her genius than her father for

his talents. Calo John, the barbarous ſon of his predeceſſor, to whom he refuſed a place of burial from motives of ſuperſtition, routed the Turks and Hungarians, gained immortal glory in Aſia, and died by a poiſoned arrow when he was preparing for new victories.

Manuel Commenes, who was preferred to his elder brother on account of his merit, purſued the plan of his anceſtors, made himſelf odious to the armies of the cruſades, by his duplicity, and dear to the Greeks by his liberality, and appeared culpable in the eyes of religion by his inclination to the doctrine of Mahomet. Alexis II, ſon in law to Lewis VII, had ſcarce held the ſceptre of his anceſtors three years, when he was murdered by his uncle Andronick, whom, through affection, he had raiſed to an equal degree of authority with himſelf. Vengeance however was cloſe at the heels of this enormous crime. Iſaac l'Ange, whom the uſurper had reſolved to put to death, eſcaped from priſon, raiſed an inſurrection among the people, and the perfidious emperor was dragged from the midſt of his palace, placed upon a camel, and led in this manner, ſurrounded by an enraged populace, who, after cutting off his right hand, and ſtriking out his eyes, concluded, with tearing the wretch to pieces. Iſaac was immediately inveſted with the purple, and for nine years ſhewed himſelf worthy of the rank to which he had been raiſed by popular favour.

The family of Commenes, in the mean time, ſupported their authority in the iſland of Cyprus, and there founded a kingdom, that afterwards fell

a prey

a prey to the Engliſh; while L'Ange, who attempted to oppoſe the army of the croſs under the command of Frederic I, drew upon himſelf the arms of that formidable emperor. His defeat, which alienated the hearts of the people, inſpired his brother with the deſign of ſtripping him of the empire, and the unfortunate Iſaac was thrown into priſon, where his inhuman brother gave orders to have his eyes put out. This was the ſame Alexis whom the French cruſade, aſſiſted by the Venetians, ſtripped of the purple, in order to beſtow it on Iſaac and his ſon. The latter were the two princes the murder of whom ſerved as a pretext to the Latins for ſeizing on Conſtantinople, and there founding a ridiculous throne, which tottered from its firſt erection.

The event above mentioned ſhould be conſidered as the real epocha of the fall of the empire in the eaſt. The Greeks no longer preſerved the feeble remains of that power but by the moſt aſtoniſhing efforts. Theodore Laſcaris whom they crowned at Niceum, was a hero, whoſe prudence repaired the misfortunes that had afflicted his country, whoſe intrepidity oppoſed the ſtorms that ſtill threatened her, and whoſe talents were reſpected both by the Latins who had lately ſubverted his throne, and by the Turks who came to ſhare in its ruins. John Ducas his ſon-in-law, whom he had appointed as his ſucceſſor, ſecured the provinces of Aſia, and, having paſſed the Boſphorus, recovered moſt of the places taken by the French, drove them out of Romania, and ſeized upon Andrianople, whence he ſent to ſpread ter-

ror to the gates of the only city that remained in the hands of his enemies.

THE ſtate ſuffered no loſs during the minority of John, an infant of ſix years old who was the heir of ſo auguſt and precarious a ſcepter. Michael Paleologue, the moſt able prince of the age, and one of the greateſt men that modern Greece has produced, routed the Tartars, repulſed the Turks, profited by the misfortunes of the houſe of Suabia, and gave the moſt fatal blows to the empire of the Latins. The death of the minor has fixed an eternal blot on the name of this emperor, which all his eminent qualities can never efface. By the moſt ſpecious and artful conduct he wrought ſo far upon the people that they appointed him colleague to the young Laſcaris; and being thus maſter of the fate of that infant, he ſacrificed him to his ambition, and in him the heir of two houſes and the ſon of his benefactor. The Latins were unable to reſiſt a man of ſuch ſuperior capacity, and eight hundred ſoldiers directed by the genius of Michael, deſtroyed that empire for ever by taking the capital.

Turkiſh empire.

THE Turks continually roſe and fell with alternate ſucceſſes and misfortunes. Overpowered at firſt by the armies of the croſs, they were obliged to take ſhelter on Taurus and other mountains of Armenia; but they ſoon returned again, and under the ſecond king of Jeruſalem, that kingdom was already threatened with the arms of the ſultan Sanguin. His ſon Noradin, whom they inveſted with the ſupreme authority, took Edeſſa, Antioch and Damaſcus, and fixed his reſidence in the

the latter, which lay contiguous to the capital of the chriſtians, and was one of the moſt important cities of Aſia. Syria, Meſopotamia and Cilicia, were reduced under the authority of the muſſulmen; and while Noradin in perſon attacked Paleſtine, his generals entered Egypt and ſubverted the throne of Cairo. Saladin, who drove out the ſon of that conqueror, and ſecured the crown by marrying his widow, completed the triumph of the Turks and the ruin of the chriſtians.

HISTORY cannot perhaps furniſh any thing more intereſting than the life of this hero. At the age of eighteen he had the command of a place that was beſieged, and aſtoniſhed his enemies by the prudent defence he made. Noradin, whoſe confidence he acquired by his merit, ſent him to aſſiſt the califf of Egypt againſt his ſubjects who threatened that ſovereign; he routed the rebels as ſoon as he appeared and reſtored tranquility; upon the ſpecious pretence that his religion rejected the pontiff of Cairo as an uſurper, he afterwards expelled him from the ſanctuary, and deſtroyed that power for ever. His conduct after this ſucceſs was a maſter-piece of policy. Any other man, of the like ambition, dazzled by a conqueſt that raiſed him to an equality with his maſter, and ſeconded by an army that in a manner adored him, would have been tempted to embrace ſuch an opportunity of gaining independence. Saladin well knew that there could be no reliance on the attachment of new ſubjects, and that he had reaſon to fear he might be deſerted by them, at the approach of Noradin to puniſh his rebellion: he

checked

checked his ambition, therefore, did homage for his conqueſt, gained time, and employed it uſefully in conciliating the hearts of the people by governing with the greateſt juſtice and clemency. After the death of Noradin, he looked on, while the ſons of that prince were waſting their ſtrength by their diviſions: the moment he perceived them in the ſituation he had expected, he attacked them at the proper juncture and made himſelf maſter of their dominions. He then quarrelled with Paleſtine, with whom he had artfully kept up an appearance of friendſhip, and this was brought about in ſuch a manner that he had all the advantage, while ſhe gained nothing but diſgrace by the rupture. But his genius chiefly ſhone forth with all its luſtre in the defeat of the chriſtian army; by a variety of ſtratagems he decoyed thoſe enemies into a ſituation that was, in appearance, advantageous to them and inconvenient to him, while the intelligent ſultan well knew that the chriſtians could have no water there but by paſſing through narrow defiles which he occupied; he then avoided coming to a battle with thoſe people, who now, like ſo many enraged lions, made frantic by a want that is terrible in hot climates, were animated by deſpair that is always to be dreaded; to add to their diſtreſs he ſet fire to the foreſts that ſurrounded them; when thirſt had deſtroyed great numbers and exhauſted many more, he made his attack in ſo judicious a manner that his victory was complete, and the taking of a king with his whole army, did not coſt him the blood of a ſingle ſubject. Every thing now gave way

before

before the conqueror, and in leſs than a month the capital of the chriſtians ſubmitted to his mercy.

Our readers will eaſily recollect the behaviour of the armies of the croſs at their entrance into Jeruſalem. Saladin, in his firſt emotions of reſentment, reſolved to avenge the blood of ſo many muſſulmen there ſacrificed by the ſword of their mercileſs enemies; but the voice of humanity was heard, and that virtue, ſo long a ſtranger to thoſe climates, appeared again acccompanied by victory. He paid the greateſt honours to the queeen; and the women of her train having implored the liberty of their huſbands, the conqueror, with tears in his eyes, granted their requeſt without a ranſom. He was ſenſible that the knights of St. John were his moſt implacable enemies, but ſtill when he learned they had the care of the ſick and wounded, he exempted them a whole year from the law prohibiting the Latins to remain in the city. The moſt formidable cruſade that had yet appeared in Judea advanced to attack him; he avoided the firſt ſhock, ſeemed to give way, waited until this numerous body of ſtrangers had waſted and conſumed themſelves, he then made his appearance at the favourable moment and obliged them to return without any loſs, and almoſt without having recourſe to arms. His extenſive dominions, no part of which he derived from his birth, were not diſturbed by the moſt trifling commotion during the whole courſe of his life, and this fortunate uſurper of an empire of eight hundred leagues after having been the idol of his people, the terror of Europe, and an object

object of veneration in the eaſt, died quietly, leaving his immenſe ſucceſſion divided among his children.

Gengiſkan Tartar, conquers China.

THE Turkiſh empire was again involved in confuſion. The ſons of the hero conteſted and rent that rich inheritance which became the object of a new revolution. The Tartars iſſuing from the north of Aſia threatened that part of the world with their yoke. The famous Gengiſkan was their leader, and that barbarian, inſtructed by continual practice in all the ſtratagems of war, was accompanied by victory in every purſuit; he ſubverted the throne of Perſia, penetrated as far as Indoſtan, and ſubjected China, the moſt ancient empire in the univerſe, that, till then, never had bowed the neck to a foreign yoke. Thence returning towards the weſt, he croſſed the Euphrates, and extended his triumphs to the Helleſpont. His ſons, who purſued the victories of their father, ſeemed to have divided the poſſeſſion of the world between them; one turned his arms towards the Eaſt-Indies and ſubjected thoſe rich countries; another paſſed the Wolga, ravaged Ruſſia, Poland, Hungary, and menaced the reſt of Europe; the third, who advanced towards Syria, overpowered the provinces of the Turkiſh empire that extended to the ſea. At the ſame time, the troops of the Mamelucs drove out the conquerors, and took poſſeſſion of the throne of Egypt. The empire of the ſultans ſeemed to be annihilated, and chriſtianity felt ſome conſolation after her misfortunes from the hopes of ſeeing the entire ruin of thoſe ancient enemies of her religion.

The

The Turks in the mean time had retired to the mountains, there unſhaken in the midſt of all their ill ſucceſs, they kept an attentive eye on their common enemies, and formed thoſe deſigns which ſoon enabled them to perform the moſt conſiderable part in our hemiſphere.

REFLECTIONS.

IN looking over the events of this epocha, the cruſades are the firſt object that fixes our attention, and the hiſtory of the world cannot perhaps afford any thing more curious. Chriſtianity looked on with a kind of indifference, for the ſpace of ſix centuries, while an inimical worſhip exacted adoration on the ruins of her temples, in thoſe very countries that had been ſanctified by her founder; ſhe is then ſuddenly rouzed with the moſt ardent deſires of vengeance. Women, old men, eccleſiaſtics and princes, to the number of ſix hundred thouſand people precipitately abandon their country, and march to attack nations at an immenſe diſtance, to whoſe very names they were almoſt ſtrangers. It was not the command of a tyrant that compelled this multitude to expoſe their lives under climates ſo different from their own, nor the art of any diſtinguiſhed orator, who, by his eloquence, diſguiſed the dangers, and diſplayed the ſpecious advantages of the undertaking: an ignorant obſcure man, a poor hermit, was the ſoul of this extraordinary revolution. Enthuſiaſm the moſt powerful incentive to human actions was kindled in the minds of all thoſe who heard the zealot Peter.

ter. We muſt however allow that zeal was not the only cauſe of thoſe emigrations. The popes poured benedictions upon them, forſeeing they would furniſh them with numerous armies ſubject to their authority, and attached to their intereſt, with which they might be enabled to keep kings in awe. Kings encouraged them, becauſe they afforded them an opportunity of removing thoſe turbulent vaſſals, who were frequently in arms to oppoſe their power. The clergy were certain of acting a conſiderable part in thoſe expeditions; the petty ſovereigns expected to acquire richer principalities than thoſe they poſſeſſed in Europe. Men involved in debt or ſunk in poverty were in hopes of alleviating their diſtreſs, and repairing their fortunes in countries ſo remote from the place of their birth.

The firſt attempts of the armies of the croſs were ſucceſsful; Aſia Minor was invaded, and Jeruſalem conquered. But thoſe advantages were followed by ſpeedy misfortunes, and the crown tottered on the head of the ſecond king. The cauſe of the ſucceſs of the chriſtians is evident, they were like a violent torrent that bore down all before them: their misfortunes proceeded from various circumſtances.

I. The victors divided their conqueſts, according to the dangerous practice of thoſe times, a practice that produced the moſt fatal diſturbances, and very frequent revolutions.

II. They were cruel with reſpect to the muſſulmen. A new throne cannot be firmly eſtabliſhed without lenity, this was cemented by blood.

We

We derive all our authority from chriſtian annals. "The blood," ſays a cotemporary archbiſhop, "flowed through the midſt of the ſtreets, and ten "thouſand men were put to the ſword with cool "deliberation."

III. They perſecuted the Greeks. The popes, eager to extend their authority, inſiſted that they ſhould all adopt the Roman form of worſhip. It is well known how jealous all ſects are of their ceremonies, the Greeks were particularly delicate on this point. The Latins would ſuffer no prieſts or friars but thoſe of their own communion. They diſpoſſeſſed thoſe of a different opinion. Bulls were ſent from Rome, with cenſures and excommunications againſt ſchiſmatics. The princes were obliged to comply with them; the greateſt kings in Europe gave way to this power; which was ſtill more reverenced in Judea. The armies of the croſs, aſſembled by the care and under the authority of the popes, looked upon them as the ſupreme monarchs, and the military orders ſo formidable by their birth and valour, were under no command but that of the pontiffs. Every thing conſpired againſt the unfortunate Greeks, who experienced much greater hardſhips under the Latins than under the infidels.

The Greeks however did not ſuffer by religion only; the morals of the victors diſtreſſed them ſtill more. Thoſe armies ſo holy in appearance, frequently conſiſted of the dregs of all nations. Licentiouſneſs which was greater in Paleſtine than in Europe, laid open a more extenſive field to the paſſions of thoſe adventurers: robbery, plunder

and

and murder, were the means by which the greater part ſupported themſelves. If the princes attempted to reſtrain thoſe exceſſes, they were accuſed of hereſy and threatened with the authority of Rome, or elſe an alarm was ſpread of a ſecret intelligence carried on with the enemies that ſurrounded them. It is eaſy to conceive the dreadful ſituation of the natives under ſuch maſters. They ſoon regretted their former rulers, and, the moment an opportunity offered for reſtoring them, the moſt moderate, thought it a great inſtance of duty and ſubmiſſion, to remain inactive, the greater part aſſiſted them with all their efforts.

The new ſupplies drawn from the weſt were frequently more injurious than uſeful. The length of the march, and the diſorders it occaſioned, half conquered the ſoldier before he arrived; and the heat of the climate with the delicious fruits of the country, of which he eat too freely completely reduced him. The kings who commanded the troops, were generally rivals, and jealous of each other; they therefore ſeldom acted in concert: beſides their enemies did not fail to take advantage of their abſence; ſo that they were frequently obliged to return with precipitation to the defence of their dominions. While Robert was conquering Judea, Henry his younger brother ſeized upon the throne of England. At his return from the holy land, Richard found his Iſland in the greateſt confuſion through the treachery of this brother, and the provinces of the continent invaded by Philip *the Auguſt*.

Frederic II, ſet out at the intreaties of Gregory X, he afterwards learned that this very Gregory was ravaging Sicily with fire and ſword during his abſence. In addition to all this, the miniſters of the popes commanded with ſuperior authority in the cruſades. Kings, unaccuſtomed to meet with any oppoſition to their will, could not bear patiently the dictates of imperious eccleſiaſtics, and retired on the moſt trifling pretences. The legates thus left alone to direct all the operations of war, the moſt egregious blunders were hourly committed by thoſe ſtrange generals.

In fine thoſe multitudes of Europeans came pouring in after they had recently ſigned an advantageous treaty, which they broke with imprudence, and violated without ſcruple. It was an eſtabliſhed maxim in thoſe days, that there was no obligation to keep any faith with infidels: the moſt virtuous were perſuaded that the pope had an authority and power to grant diſpenſations for all promiſes and oaths made to thoſe people. There is ſtill preſerved a letter from a grand-maſter of the Templars, in which he expreſſed his doubts about arming his knights, on account of a truce lately made with the Saracens.

This letter diſplays the ſentiments of a man of honour, whoſe natural probity attaches him to the ſacred obligations of a promiſe, and which he finds painful to violate. He got over the difficulty however, becauſe the pope, by exhorting the princes of the Weſt to take up arms for Jeruſalem, had thought proper, no doubt, to abſolve the chriſtians from their oath. So true it is, that ſuper-

ſtition, even in the moſt generous breaſts, frequently ſtifles the voice of eternal juſtice which ſpeaks to the hearts of all mankind; as if there was any authority in nature that could diſpenſe with ſincerity in contracts, which is the baſis of all human ſociety.

The cruſades however diſappeared, leaving with their unfortunate allies nothing but the crime of perjury, which prevented them from having any claim on the honour or faith of the conquerors, the only reſource of the weak. Thus thoſe expeditions, ſo imprudent as to their motives, were uſeleſs with regard to their object; but they produced the moſt happy changes in Europe, and the weſt is perhaps indebted to them for her preſent lights and improvements. The regularity and order that reigned in the Greek cities, the noble pieces of architecture with which they were adorned, the fine paintings that decorated their temples, a communication with the learned men of the eaſt, and the many excellent works they found there, all engaged the attention of the cruſades, and impreſſed them with the firſt ideas of that taſte which circumſtances afterwards gradually diſplayed.

Religion. THE principles of the ſects that diſturbed religion in thoſe days are not eaſily aſcertained. The hiſtorians of this century gave the name of Manicheans to almoſt all thoſe of heterodox opinions; they accuſed them of every crime that we can poſſibly imagine. Enormities the moſt contrary to modeſty were not only imputed to them; but, if we give credit to their enemies, thoſe ſectaries made

made them a ſort of duty. It muſt be however obſerved, that the hiſtorians, who have tranſmitted thoſe accounts, were chiefly monks, and conſequently they ſaw every thing with the eyes of intemperate zeal; this muſt have neceſſarily miſled them, and made them conſider ſimple appearances or popular reports as abſolute proofs. We cannot believe that any religion ever encouraged the crime that nature abhors; and as to the doctrine of the Manicheans, it was a ſyſtem too refined for a people, the greater part of whom were ſunk in barbarous ignorance. We have ventured to form a conjecture, and as ſuch only offer it to the reader.

All thoſe ſectaries unanimouſly rejected the temporal authority of the popes, and agreed in acknowledging the heads of the people as abſolutely independent. That there were two chiefs, one temporal, who governed the ſtate, the other ſpiritual, who preſided over the church. This analogy might have led their ignorant adverſaries to aſſert that thoſe heretics admitted the two principles. The ſuſpicion has the greater weight as in thoſe times of general error both powers were given to the clergy. But without farther remark, we ſhall endeavour to inveſtigate the real opinions of thoſe pretended Manicheans. There were three chiefs among them who had very celebrated diſciples; the names of the chiefs were Peter Valdo, Peter Bruys, and Arnold de Breſſe.

Peter Valdo was a citizen of Lyons, whoſe morals were generally approved. By commerce, carried on with the moſt exact probity, he had

acquired conſiderable riches. Wealth ſo often fatal to the ſenſibility of the heart, ſerved only to increaſe the compaſſionate feelings of his. He ſaw, with tender concern, numbers of unhappy people groaning under the double burthen of oppreſſion and poverty; he took a pleaſure in protecting them by his intereſt and relieving their wants with the liberality of his purſe. He ſoon had round him an immenſe family whom his charity adopted, and who were united by ties of affection to their common benefactor. His memory, ſtill dear after his death, eſtabliſhed a ſort of ſociety among thoſe unhappy people; influenced by the reſpect with which it inſpired them, they met upon certain days to celebrate the benevolence of Valdo, and as they continually pronounced his name with grateful veneration, they tranſmitted thoſe ſentiments to their children. They took a pride in bearing the name of ſo venerable a man, and therefore adopted with joy the appellation of Vaudois, with which their neighbours began to diſtinguiſh them.

It is moſt probable that, in thoſe aſſemblies, held by poor people and mechanics, compariſons were made between the generoſity of Valdo, and the inhumanity of other rich perſons, eſpecially the clergy, who then poſſeſſed immenſe wealth; their avarice either real or pretended, was a frequent ſubject of converſation among them, and religious ceremonies were repreſented as tricks contrived by rapacious avidity. Thus hatred againſt the heads of religion gained ground with the Vaudois, and became hereditary. It is not

diffi-

difficult to imagine how this diſpoſition might lead them into errors; but their morals according to all appearance, remained innocent, and we find writers even among their enemies who endeavoured to palliate their conduct.

THE errors of Peter Bruys were more conſpicuous: he taught that baptiſm was uſeleſs before the age of maturity; that the ſacrifice of the maſs was nothing but a ridiculous ceremony; that purgatory had no other foundation but in the intereſt of the clergy and the credulity of the people; and, in fine, that the croſs was an abominable ſign which religion ſhould deſtroy. Peter Bruys was a fanatic, he went in perſon to pull down thoſe emblems of chriſtianity: he tore them from the altars, and after gathering them in heaps, ſet fire to them in the market-places.

ARNOLD DE BRESSE was a much more dangerous character. He was inſinuating, pliant, artful, of ſuperior knowlege in thoſe days, and famous for his eloquence; his ſcheme tended to annihilate the power of the clergy. He was of opinion that ſpiritual treaſures alone were thoſe which eccleſiaſtics ſhould poſſeſs. He conſidered it as a ſcandal meriting puniſhment, for the miniſters of a divinity poor and humble, to have lands, caſtles, and even ſovereignties. The people inflamed by his harangues, drove out the biſhops, plundered their palaces, ravaged their lands, and inſulted their perſons. Arnold appeared with ſome eclat for a while. Frederic I, well pleaſed with any opportunity of mortifying the pope, protected that innovator, who under ſo reſpectable a pa-

tronage, had the pleaſure of inſulting tthe prieſthood in the very capital of religion. He ſtired up the populace, and at the head of a ſeditious mob, drove the firſt eccleſiaſtics in the world from the Vatican. But he paid dear for this triumph; he was delivered up to Pope Adrian as an hoſtage of peace, and expiated in the flames the dangerous honour of having menaced the pontiff.

We forbear to mention the diſputes concerning the trinity, the arguments on that ſubject were perplexing and obſcure ſubtleties, more calculated for the exerciſe of the ſchools, than worthy of the attention of the councils. But we muſt not omit a queſtion that diſturbed the church of Conſtantinople, becauſe it ſhews the turn of mind of of the Greeks in thoſe days; enquiry was made whether the light that appeared on Thabor was created or increated. This diſpute produced the greateſt commotions and affected even the tranquility of the throne.

Religious orders.

We have taken notice that the cruſades gave birth to three religious orders. The knights of the Hoſpital, the Templars, and the Teutonic order. Spain, who was continually at war with the Saracens, could not fail to produce ſimilar ſocieties. A ſingular event gave riſe to that of Calatrava. The defenders of a city beſieged by the Saracens were preparing to abandon it, when two monks of Citeaux revived the courage of the inhabitants, and by their prudence united with extraordinary valour the place was preſerved. The king of Arragon in order to eterniſe the memory of this ſervice,

vice, declared thoſe monks the heads of a new eſtabliſhment, which was formed after the plan of other military orders, the members of which devoted themſelves to arms for the defence of religion. This body ſoon became famous, and the immenſe donations with which different princes enriched it, have made it one of the moſt conſiderable in Spain. The knights of St. James and of Alcantara were eſtabliſhed in the ſame century, followed the ſame plan with ſimilar ſucceſs, and now actually enjoy the moſt diſtinguiſhed rank.

THE moſt venerable humanity produced inſtitutions of a peculiar kind. The Chriſtians taken by the Moors languiſhed in hopeleſs captivity, from the impoſſibility of paying a ranſom, they were reduced to the cruel alternative of either ſuffering all the miſeries of ſlavery, or turning apoſtates to the religion of their anceſtors. John de Mattra in France, and Peter Nolaſco in Spain, devoted themſelves to the cares of making collections among chriſtians, and of travelling to different places in order to releaſe thoſe unfortunate people from their chains. Thoſe two inſtitutions ſtill ſubſiſt under the name of Trinitarians and the order of Mercy, and their members faithfully attached to the maxims of their founders, ſtill continue to ſet an example of ſuch generous virtues.

THE genius and eloquence of Bernard made Citeaux famous throughout the world, and that order juſtly places the celebrated Abbot of Clervaux in the liſt of its founders. He was the ſoul of that great body, as well as the oracle of the age.

Thouſands of hermits, attracted by his voice, came to the feet of the altars, to lay down their fortune and liberty; Clairvaux alone reckoned 400 religious men who ſpent their time between prayers and labour; by the latter they cleared immenſe tracts of uncultivated lands, enriched the order that poſſeſſed them, and were of ſignal benefit to France. Clugny acquired celebrity in the ſame century, and became the rival of Citeaux. After being founded two centuries and fallen into a degree of obſcurity, it flouriſhed again by the great qualities of the Abbot Peter de Mont-Boiſſier, who, to the honour of being deſcended from an illuſtrious family, added thoſe bright virtues that juſtly gained him the title of venerable.

Orders, in ſhort, of a nature entirely new aroſe in the church. A man of obſcure condition, confined underſtanding and profound ignorance, but of eminent piety perſuaded himſelf that the ſummit of perfection conſiſted in exhibiting a diſguſtful exterior, in appearing in the moſt contemptible dreſs, in running about the world to inſtruct mankind, without having any knowlege himſelf and in ſoliciting charity of others, which religion commands us to beſtow. The ſingularity of this diſcipline, the ſight of an enthuſiaſt venerable for his ſanctity, the favour of the populace, which ſingularity is ſure to obtain, and the open protection of the popes gave the greateſt ſucceſs to this ſtrange inſtitution, and in the ſpace of a very few years, Francis of Aſſiſe ſaw, under his direction, vaſt numbers who endeavoured to imitate his conduct and zeal. Such was the origin of the order

der of brother Minims, which was afterwards divided into many families, who all claimed the honour of faithfully copying their founder, though they differ in ſo many points of diſcipline and appear in ſuch various uniforms.

St. Dominick of the noble family of the Guſmans, deſirous of acquiring ſimilar honours, formed at the ſame time and with the like views, a religious order, whoſe preaching, their principal object, procured them the name of brother preachers. A few years after Honorius III, collected together a number of hermits that were ſcattered in different parts, and formed one body of them under the denomination of Auguſtinians. A biſhop of Jeruſalem united the hermits of the deſerts, and, as he fixed them on Mount Carmel, they took their name from that place and were called Carmelites.

In this manner were created, in the ſame age, the four mendicant orders which have made ſo much noiſe in the world. Their number increaſed prodigiouſly. They ſpread themſelves over Europe armed with extravagant privileges, preaching, catechiſing, and exerciſing all the functions of ſuperior paſtors in a moſt arbitrary manner: they had however powerful opponents. The prelates whoſe prerogatives they uſurped, the univerſities on account of their violated ſtatutes, and the monks whoſe maxims they oppoſed, all roſe up vigorouſly againſt thoſe new orders. Robert Groſſetête, biſhop of Lincoln, and the famous doctor William de Saint-Amour were their moſt formidable enemies. Thoſe learned men aſſerted

that

that voluntary beggary, far from being a virtue, was a vice, and that the friars who had lately appeared, merited correction and not charity. The mendicants however triumphed; they had gained the confidence of the populace, princes encouraged and protected them, and the popes supported them with all their authority.

Revolutions in powers and governments.

The power of the popes had gained additional ſtrength. This aroſe from three different cauſes. The cruſades furniſhed them with numerous armies animated by enthuſiaſm, the moſt formidable of all paſſions: they were abſolute maſters of the warriors who compoſed them, they menaced ſovereigns with them, and turned the arms of this ſacred body of troops againſt thoſe who had the glorious temerity to defend their rights and privileges. The actual ſtate of Germany gave them room to attempt any thing: the empire was no longer governed by princes who united extenſive hereditary poſſeſſions with the ſcepter: the revolution occaſioned by the fall of the Frederics, procured great ſovereignties to the clergy, and in an age of ignorance, falſe ideas inſpired thoſe with a blind devotion to the will of their chief.

The creation of the mendicant orders became a third reſource of the higheſt importance. The friars who compoſed thoſe orders, having no poſſeſſions to attach them to the ſecular powers, and deriving all their ſupport from the indulgences and privileges with which they were ſupplied and armed, directed all their views towards Rome. In the villages, where they heared confeſſions againſt the will of the rectors, in the cities, where they preached

preached, without the conſent of the biſhops, and in the ſchools, which they opened, in ſpite of the colleges and univerſities, they taught the abſolute power of the keys; they made it a crime unpardonable to offer the leaſt reſiſtance to the will of the pope; they opened and ſhut the gates of heaven to the credulous populace, in proportion to the ſubmiſſion ſhewed to him; they were formidable to the biſhops, whoſe proceedings and behaviour they carefully watched; they were dangerous in courts, where they directed the conſciences, and moulded them to the wiſhes of the pontiff. Innocent III, the moſt crafty politician to ſet opportunely in motion thoſe ſprings that were favourable to himſelf, then reigned with abſolute authority over the weſt; he made it his boaſt, that there was not a crowned head in Europe but what had felt the force of his thunders.

The conſtitution of Germany was entirely changed. The Othos were real monarchs, who had the ſupreme execution of the laws; and the nobles of the empire actual ſubjects enjoying liberty without independance. The diſputes that aroſe between the diadem and Tiara, had afterwards ſhaken the throne to the very foundation, or rather it was daſhed to pieces, and retained nothing but a mere ſhadow of its former ſubſtance. The greater vaſſals, taking advantage of this confuſion, diſdained the idea of obedience; the prelates became princes, and the abbots armed their crozier with the authority of the ſcepter. From this general diſturbance ariſtocacy was produced,

and

and the emperor no longer appeared any thing more than a chief among ſovereigns, whom intereſt had united for general protection. National pride may ſtill decorate him with titles and external pomp, but will never reſtore the ſubſtantial power which the imperial crown before poſſeſſed.

In France a revolution was no leſs evident, but this revolution was different. Ariſtocracy that was in full vigour under Philip I, gradually loſt ſtrength, and under St. Lewis the conſtitution was not far from being a real monarchy. The activity, ardour, and reſolution of Lewis VI, had begun the change; the wiſdom of Suger ſupported it: by the weakneſs of Lewis VII, it was almoſt deſtroyed: but the intrepid and triumphant reign of Philip the Auguſt, completed the revolution. Favourable circumſtances combined with the talents of this monarch. The paſſion of the times for foreign expeditions induced many nobles to alienate their lands, and this proved an advantage to the crown. The weakneſs of John *Sans-terre*, and the troubles it produced in England, facilitated the conqueſt of the moſt important provinces. The ſtrength and power derived from thoſe acquiſitions, furniſhed the means of humbling the other vaſſals. The war with the people of Alby, extinguiſhed the power of the counts of Toulouſe; Bouvines diminiſhed that of the counts of Flanders; and the glory, which the monarch acquired by that victory, made the throne more reſpectable than ever. The prudence of Philip drew from thoſe events all that could tend to promote

mote his power. He regulated the finances with an œconomy that doubled his revenues; theſe he employed in giving pay to his troops, and this regulation was of effectual advantage to the authority of his ſucceſſors, becauſe ſoldiers attached themſelves more cloſely to a chief on whom they depended for their ſupport, and by that means the throne was continually ſurrounded with defenders, ready to ſupport its quarrels and ſecure its glory. Lewis IX, completed the work by the order that he had eſtabliſhed in every part of the ſtate, and by regulations that were alone ſufficient to immortalize his name. Thus the power of the ſcepter was ſecured; and all France, at the ſame time, enlarged and increaſed in ſtrength and vigour from reign to reign, began to recover its former luſtre, and to reſume an equality with the moſt conſiderable powers.

The fate of England was different from the two others: the ſtate loſt the moſt valuable appendages, and the crown its moſt glorious prerogatives. We have obſerved that the authority was abſolute under the Norman kings. The two Williams governed with a ſcepter of iron; the two firſt Henrys and Richards reigned with more mildneſs without impairing the ſtrength of government. Under John, the nation profited by the misfortunes and weakneſs of the monarch; the people ſhook off the yoke of deſpotiſm, and the barons claimed their ancient privileges. The charter of St. Edward, having been circulated through the different counties, inflamed all minds with the paſſion for liberty, and from that moment the

Engliſh

Engliſh began to eſtabliſh that form of adminiſtration which they have ſtill preſerved. They laid the foundation of this glorious ſyſtem under Henry III, who was too weak to make any effectual efforts againſt reſolute undertakings. The capacity of the famous Leiceſter completed the edifice: if it received ſome ſhocks from the valour of Edward, the nation did not abandon it entirely, the people in ſucceeding ages reſumed it with more vigour and ſucceſs. Thus while Germany changed from monarchy to ariſtocracy, and France quitted the ariſtocratical form and returned to the monarchical, England abjured deſpotiſm and tended to a complex ſyſtem compounded of both.

We ſhall not dwell upon the great revolutions that changed the whole face of Aſia. Six hundred thouſand Tartars ſuddenly poured in upon the people of the ſouth, ſubverted the thrones of Perſia, Indoſtan and China, and erected others. Force alone effected thoſe revolutions of which we find ſimilar examples in all ages. The fate of Egypt however, exhibited a ſingular event that deſerves attention. Foreign troops were called in to defend the throne, thoſe, taking advantage of the misfortunes of the children of Saladin, drove out the deſcendants of that hero, and choſe one of their own body to ſway the ſcepter. Thoſe troops conſtantly adhere to the ſame maxims, are never recruited but with men born in remote countries; they ſtill preſerve the excluſive privilege of defending the ſupreme authority, which is always committed to one of their own members, and foreigners

foreigners ſtill maſters of the empire of Cairo, they have ſubſiſted in the ſame manner for three centuries. This dominion of the Mamelucs is a prodigy in point of government, and the only inſtance of the kind to be met with in the hiſtory of the world.

Legislatoin.

LEGISLATOIN was the brilliant part of the epocha of Otho; and if it is true that wiſe laws are the greateſt bleſſing to mankind, this age as having revived them, may juſtly claim an equality with the moſt glorious times. The barbarous and ſtupid cuſtoms which had governed the weſt for many centuries, were ſeen flying before the light of reaſon, and all Europe ſubſtituting juriſprudence in their place. Eric introduced a collection of laws in Sweden; in Arragon, ſtatutes formed by the orders of the ſtate, regulated the prerogatives of the kings themſelves; in Caſtile, Alphonſus X, a legiſlator no leſs wiſe than an able aſtronomer, publiſhed thoſe judicious regulations, called *las partidas*, part of which are ſtill in force in Spain; in England began thoſe aſſemblies ſo celebrated by the name of parliaments; in Italy and Germany, notwithſtanding the confuſion that reigned in thoſe countries, all the great cities formed a plan of adminiſtration, which ſecured the rights of all the citizens in general, and of each citizen in particular. France was eſpecially diſtinguiſhed by the revival of this ſcience; ſhe was indebted to St. Lewis for this advantage, for which, as well as for his piety, he merited immortal veneration. From this reign is dated the origin of the French legiſlature; 'twas then real laws appeared to protect weak-

weakneſs againſt oppreſſion; magiſtrates, well verſed in the ſtudy of thoſe laws, were appointed to expound them, and tribunals, armed with authority, enforced their execution. The benevolent heart of the monarch, had the happineſs to find a great man to ſecond thoſe endeavours. Stephen Boileſve, a man too little known in our modern hiſtories, was the inſtrument which the prince made uſe of to ſecure the tranquillity of his people. This illuſtrious provoſt of Paris exerted all the power of his office, which was one of the moſt important of the ſtate in thoſe days: his juſt ſeverity became the terror of guilt, and his knowlege made him the oracle of the laws. It was by his advice that St. Lewis eſtabliſhed the pragmatic ſanction, which by making elections depend on the merits of the candidates, was ſo well calculated to introduce worthy miniſters into the church: the police, that important part of government, which does ſo much honour to Paris, owed its exiſtence to him: the principles of it are to be found in a collection of regulations called *Le Livre des Metiers*, or Book of Trades and Arts he left behind him, in which that great magiſtrate has ſhown a penetration and judgment that were aſtoniſhing, at a time when learning and ſcience ſcarce began to dawn.

Revival of laws.

THE ſpirit of improvement that now appeared in evey part of Europe, was a bleſſing derived from an obſcure man. We know little as to the country, and ſtill leſs of the family of Warnerus, the reaſon is, the benefactors of mankind are generally thoſe who excite the leaſt curioſity. It is a common

common opinion that he found the code of Juſtinian which the Weſt had loſt: there is reaſon to ſuppoſe that he brought it with him from Conſtantinople, where, it is certain, he reſided for ſome time. Warnerus, ſtruck with the wiſdom that diſplayed itſelf in this collection of inſtitutes, devoted himſelf with ardour to thoſe ſtudies; he communicated a taſte for ſimilar objects to a few of his friends, they ſpread it among others; he then conceived the deſign of teaching the law publicly, and being ſeconded by the emperor Lothaire, he opened a ſchool, which he ſoon had the ſatisfaction to ſee crouded with pupils. Boulona was famous all over Europe; people flocked from all quarters to that city, to hear the ſage reſtorer of laws. Azon, his diſciple and ſucceſſor, extended the ideas of his maſter; Accurſus improved them, and this famous juriſconſult ſtill preſerves a place among the oracles of civil law. At the ſame time, Gratian the monk publiſhed his collection of canons, under the title of decrees, and this work, though abounding with errors, gave birth to the canon law. Italy became famous by the labours of thoſe four men; and a glorious emulation now animating the Weſt, chairs for public profeſſors were erected in all parts, which diffuſed the ſpirit of juriſprudence, and produced the happy changes we have already mentioned.

Morals.

MANNERS, that are ever influenced by the laws, were viſibly ſoftened in the courſe of this epocha. Oppreſſion began to be ſeen with all its horrors; and the duty of protecting innocence was looked

upon as the moſt glorious employment of valour. Hence aroſe thoſe crouds of knights errant, who devoted themſelves to the defence of the weaker ſex. In every kingdom they were ſeen followed by their ſquires, armed with helmet and lance, running through the countries and cities, for the protection of the fair whom force or calumny perſecuted.

THOSE generous adventurers, who were valiant, polite, and devout, declared themſelves under the auſpices of a God, of a ſaint, and a lady. To pleaſe the lady was the end of the dangers to which they expoſed themſelves; and that no perſon might doubt of the virtuous intention of their exploits, they carried on their ſtandards, the favourite colours of the fair that was miſtreſs of their affections, and deſcribed in their arms, the objects of her taſte, or the emblems that repreſented her qualities.

Origin of coats of arms.

THE cuſtom of diſtinguiſhing people by coats of arms had been lately introduced. The nobles who engaged in the cruſades, had banners carried before them variouſly coloured, which ſerved as a diſtinctive ſign round which their vaſſals were to aſſemble. At their return they painted emblems on their ſtandards to repreſent their adventures and principal exploits. As thoſe images were ſo many monuments of their glory, they took a pleaſure in multiplying them on every thing round them, and were particularly careful to have them engraved on the bucklers they wore in the field. This was the origin of the variety of coats we ſee in heraldry, which appear the more extravagant, becauſe

time

time has obliterated the memory of the actions they repreſented.

GEOGRAPHY began to emerge from darkneſs. Frequent pilgrimages to the Holy Land, and the cruſades that ſucceeded, made known the weſtern part of Aſia, while the triumphs of the Tartars attracted attention to the eaſtern extremity. Innocent III, alarmed at the progreſs of Gengis and his ſucceſſors, ſent ambaſſadors of a ſingular kind to that people; theſe were two Dominican friars, who in the poor habit of their order, appeared at an idolatrous and barbarous court to ſignify the orders of a pontiff, whom they ſtyled the maſter of kings. They would have paid dear for their preſumptuous commiſſion, but contempt happily preſerved them with life and impunity. Geography.

THE conqueror had even the curioſity to enquire into the arts and manners of Europe, in order to draw a parallel between them and thoſe of China which he had recently ſubjected; and the friars were made to diſpute with the mandarins, in the preſence of the emperor and his whole court. This ſingular embaſſy was uſeleſs, as to the deſign of the pontiff, who was in hopes of checking the arms of the barbarians by that means; but Europe thence derived uſeful inſtruction. The curious accounts given by the monks, made known other countries, religions, and cuſtoms, and inſpired people with a taſte for travelling. Mark Paul, the Venetian, is the moſt celebrated for thoſe purſuits; he was the firſt European whoſe curioſity led him to viſit China; and at his return to his native country, he publiſhed thoſe memoirs

which contributed to enlarge the ideas of mankind wtih reſpect to the knowlege of the globe.

Navigation and commerce.

NAVIGATION and commerce made no leſs progreſs; they both had two centres, where free nations carried them on with a ſucceſs that emulation redoubled. The republics of Italy traded in the Mediterranean, to the iſlands of the Archipelago, the black ſea, the iſlands of Aſia Minor, and on the coaſts of Paleſtine: they carried back ſilks and the precious commodities of the Eaſt, with the fruits of Greece and the perfumes of Arabia.

THE Hanſe towns viſited all parts of the Baltic, penetrated to the extremity of the gulph of Finland, and carried the fiſh of thoſe ſeas and the furs of the climates near the pole to Germany.

NAVIGATION, that always keeps pace with the progreſs of commerce, derived new improvements from the induſtry of thoſe people, and, to attain perfection, wanted nothing but that wonderful machine, which directs the courſe of the mariner in the moſt frightful tempeſts, and may be not improperly ſaid to afford him light in the midſt of darkneſs.

Univerſities.

WE muſt not look farther back for the origin of univerſities; their firſt eſtabliſhment was in this century. At their opening, nothing was taught but divinity, philoſophy and the claſſics: phyſic and law were afterwards added. Among ſeveral univerſities founded at the ſame time, Paris became the moſt celebrated; during this century, none were conſidered as truly learned but ſuch as had ſtudied with that body.

THREE

THREE men appear to have been the firſt authors of that reputation, William Champeaux, Peter Abelard, and Peter Lombard. William Champeaux, ſo called from the place of his birth, ſettled at St. Victor, of which he was the founder; he there eſtabliſhed a ſchool, taught philoſophy and divinity, and immenſe numbers crouded to hear him. Peter Abelard, the pupil of William, devoted himſelf to the ſame ſtudies and ſurpaſſed his maſter. He no ſooner began his lectures, than all the other profeſſors were deſerted; his knowlege, his manner of reaſoning and eloquence excited admiration. This was the Abelard who met with the ſource of his misfortunes in his glory and happineſs. The favours of the tender Eloiſe drew upon him the moſt mortifying and cruel ſufferings; and his reputation excited envy in the breaſts of many who perſecuted him with implacable malice to the tomb.

PETER LOMBARD, is looked upon as the father ſcholaſtic divinity. His book of ſentences was revered as the code of that faculty. All the doctors who ſucceeded him, made a merit of adopting his principles, and honoured him with their comments. Lombard received a moſt flattering teſtimony of the eſteem which he had inſpired. Philip of France, ſon to Lewis *the Fat*, and brother to Lewis *the Younger*, was nominated to the vacant biſhopric of Paris; the prince refuſed the appointment in favour of Peter Lombard, whom he thought more worthy of that dignity. It is difficult to determine to whom this tranſaction did moſt honour, to the prince or the divine.

Thomas Aquinas.

PETER GOMESTOR, Richard of Ireland, and Gilbert de la Porree, maintained the ſuperiority of the ſchools of Paris. Albert le Grand and St. Thomas Aquinas, completed their celebrity. If we endeavour to judge of thoſe famous writers by their works, we are tempted to place them far below their reputation: we there find inaccurate erudition, falſe criticiſm, puerile queſtions, with errors even, and a conſtant barbarity of ſtyle and diction. But we muſt conſider the times when they wrote; their errors ſhould be imputed to the ignorance which then prevailed, and they claim reſpect for the many excellent things we meet with in their writings. Again, we muſt examine them not as philoſophers, for they knew nothing of philoſophy, though they profeſſed it, but as divines; and in this point of view the ſummary of St. Thomas will always be valuable.

AN eſtabliſhment, in fine, founded under the auſpices of St. Lewis, determined the glory of the univerſity of Paris. Robert Sorbon, born of obſcure parents, ſtruggled with the difficulties of indigence, became famous, obtained favours, and merited the friendſhip of the pious monarch. Having thus raiſed himſelf, he recollected the former obſtacles he had to ſurmount, that poverty too frequently proved the grave of merit, and was a continual check on the improvement of genius and talents. The generous prieſt, engroſſed by thoſe ideas, conceived the deſign of founding an aſylum, where the indigent, freed from perplexity and want, might devote themſelves entirely to the ſtudy of learning and religion. He did not however

ever exclude the rich, but he inſiſted on their ſubmitting to a perfect equality with the reſt; and, the better to preſerve that independence which he thought neceſſary to elevate the mind, he reſolved that the ſociety he was about to eſtabliſh ſhould form a litterary republic, acknowleging no maſter or abſolute ſuperior.

THE good heart of the monarch, charmed with a plan ſo wiſe and noble, ſeconded and forwarded the deſigns of the founder with all his protection; and Robert, in the ſpace of a few years, had the pleaſure to ſee his ſchool produce numbers of illuſtrious and learned men. This houſe, which had the honour of being the firſt in Europe, where the ſecular clergy reſided and taught in common, poſſeſſed another advantage infinitely greater. Faithful to the maxims of the founder, it maintained a ſuperior reputation, and became the firſt ſchool in the world. People flocked from all parts of the weſt, to conſult its doctors on the moſt important articles of faith; and chriſtianity, for a long time, conſidered Sorbonne as a ſort of permanent council, to whoſe oracles ſhe appealed.

Philoſophy.

TRUE philoſophy ſtill remained buried in obſcurity, equally unknown to the Latins, the Greeks and Arabs. The books of Ariſtotle ill underſtood, badly tranſlated, and explained in a barbarous manner, were the only guides people had in their inveſtigation of the ſecrets of nature; but even this feeble reſource was oppoſed. Divinity frequently attacked philoſophy; and if one council applauded Ariſtotle, another loaded him with the ſevereſt cenſures.

England in the mean time, produced a man that was well qualified to throw lights upon natural philoſophy. Roger Bacon ſtudied at Paris, became a friar, and was at firſt deſigned for divinity; but he had one of thoſe creative minds whom the force of natural bias impelled in ſpite of every obſtacle. He quitted ſtudies that were not deſigned for him, and gave up all his thoughts to that of nature. In thoſe purſuits he diſplayed the ſublimity and powers of his mind, in ſtrugling againſt the ignorance of the times, and in the perception of ſuch important truths through the clouds and darkneſs with which he was ſurrounded. In mechaniſm, optics, aſtronomy and chymiſtry, he made diſcoveries that were ſo many prodigies conſidering all circumſtances: he gave motion to ſtatues, and drew articulate ſounds from an image of braſs. He invented burning glaſſes, and it is plain that he had conceived the telleſcope. He preſented a plan for reforming the Calendar, to Clement IV, his regulations were nearly the ſame with thoſe now received in Europe. He carried his knowlege in chymiſtry ſo far, that it is commonly ſuppoſed he had found out the uſe of gunpowder.

If we conſider that this friar lived in an age when a man who underſtood the ſix firſt propoſitions of Euclid, was looked upon as a perſon of extraordinary knowlege; we muſt allow, that this Engliſhman, was one of the moſt ſurpriſing men that ever exiſted. Such ſuperior knowlege in thoſe times, and ſo foreign to his habit and profeſſion, could not fail to draw on him the perſecution of his

his ſuperiors; they accuſed him of magic, and he was near expiating the crime of his extraordinary genius by perpetual impriſonment.

Aſtronomy. ASTRONOMY had the good fortune to find a king who cultivated this uſeful ſcience with equal application and ſucceſs. Alphonſus X, inſtructed by the Arabs, became the moſt famous aſtronomer of the age; and that prince has left to poſterity ſome valuable monuments in thoſe tables under his name.

Hiſtory. HISTORIANS now began to appear who deſerve to be quoted. Matthew Paris, the famous monk of Weſtminſter, is one of the beſt guides for the hiſtory of England to his time. We muſt however take care not to be miſled by his partiality for his country, as we rarely find him ſtrictly juſt to the rivals of his countrymen.

THE French hiſtorian Rigord, who wrote the life of Philip *the Auguſt*, is, on the contrary, a declared enemy to the Engliſh; he was the cauſe that we were ſo long in the dark with reſpect to the character of Richard I. It is only by comparing ſuch contradictory writers that we can arrive at any degree of probability.

WILLIAM of Tyr, is uſeful with regard to the cruſades; he was a ſpectator of, and even an actor in thoſe ſcenes; and his dignity of archbiſhop did not always prevent him from reſolutely aſſerting truth. Ville-Hardouin, the famous marſhal of Champagne, who was one of the aſſailants at the taking of Conſtantinople, has left a curious narrative of that event. The memoirs of the Sieur de Joinville, are valuable, for the light they throw upon the life of St. Lewis; his intimacy with that monarch

monarch gave him every opportunity of painting his character juſt, and the merit of that nobleman, who was no leſs diſtinguiſhed for his probity than valour, leaves us no room to doubt his impartiality. We cannot be too cautious in reading the hiſtory of the people of Alby, by the monk of Vaux-Cernai; one may readily conceive the partiality of ſuch a writer on that ſubject. The annals of Otho, the celebrated biſhop of Freyninghen, are to be eſteemed for the ſeries of the German emperors. The archbiſhop of Toledo, Roderic Ximenes, may afford information, with regard to the hiſtory of Spain, provided we are are not led away by the pious credulity of that prelate.

Eloquence. If we were to judge of eloquence by the effects, we ſhould imagine that no perſon ever arrived to greater perfection in the art than St. Bernard. Neither Demoſtenes or Cicero had ſuch influence over a ſmall number of hearers, as St. Bernard had over all Europe. His writings are however far from being models; they have fire, ſentiment, and even beauties, far ſuperior to thoſe of contemporary authors; but the falſe taſte of the times continually recurs, and makes the reader regret that this great man had not lived in a more enlightened age.

Poetry. Poetry reared her head in the ſouthern provinces of France. The corruption of the Latin had produced a dialect, now called that of Provence, and which was long known by the name of Roman or Romance. This was the firſt cultivated among all the modern ideoms, and was devoted

voted to poetry. As a barbarous pronunciation had deſtroyed every idea of meaſure in the formation of the new language, it was plain that there was no poſſibility of giving it the advantages of the Latin tongue, which, by a happy mixture of long and ſhort, was ſo well adapted to paint objects. It was neceſſary therefore to ſeek another ſort of harmony, and rhymes were introduced. This invention was pleaſing to Europe; the verſes of Provence became famous, and poets, diſtinguiſhed by the names of Troubadours and Jongleurs, were the delight of the weſt. Toulouſe was the principal ſeat of this poetry; the people of Languedoc cultivated it ſtill more than thoſe of Provence, and their ſovereigns zealouſly cheriſhed it.

Italy and France were eager to imitate the Troubadours, and to procure the like advantages for their languages. The vulgar tongues began to acquire improvement, verſes were compoſed in Sicily that are ſtill read, Lorris wrote the romance of the roſe in French, and the beauties of this production time has not yet entirely blaſted; in ſhort, this cradle of poetry was adorned with flowers, from which more improved ages have not diſdained to borrow embelliſhments.

The feeble light of ſcience which then began to dawn, was powerfully cheriſhed by the efforts of Frederic II. That prince, who was no leſs an intelligent judge than a liberal protector of the arts, devoted thoſe moments to their improvement that were not interrupted by papal enmity. He granted extraordinary privileges to the ſchools of Salernum, and placed profeſſors there for every branch;

branch; he gave very particular orders for tranſlating the works of the Greeks and Arabs. It was in fact, from thoſe two nations alone that knowlege could be expected, the Arabs were the only people in poſſeſſion of the ſciences, as the Greeks were of learning and the fine arts.

Arabs. By the misfortunes of the Arabs ſcience inſenſibly declined among them; they ſtill however produced ſome celebrated men. Abenzoard made Seville illuſtrious by his knowlege and diſcoveries in pharmacy. Abulcacis revived the ſtudy of chirurgery, that had been neglected by his countrymen. Averroes gave new luſtre to the ſchool of Cordova: he faithfully tranſlated Ariſtotle, and made known that writer, who till then lay diſfigured by his countrymen; he carried the ſtudy of mathematics farther than any of his predeceſſors; and his phyſical works gained him ſuch reputation that he was conſidered as the oracle of that ſcience, for ſome centuries. Maimonides the Jew, a diſciple of Averroes, became the admiration of Egypt. Aben-ezra, who was likewiſe educated in the ſchools of Spain, acquired eſteem as a poet, an hiſtorian, and aſtronomer.

Among the Arabic writers, we ſhould reckon Abul-faragi and Elmacin, though they were chriſtians, as they had been educated under them, and wrote in their language. To the former we are indebted for an univerſal hiſtory, which is particularly uſeful for the information it affords relative to the Saracens and Tartars. Elmacin, whom religion did not prevent from becoming ſecretary to the califfs, is the beſt guide for the hiſtory of thoſe pontiffs.

THE fine arts were not abſolutely unknown to this people. Architecture in particular, continued to flouriſh there: it was not however that ſublime art which ſeeks for beauty in the proportions of nature alone; but if the Arabs were deficient in taſte, they made ſome amends by their bold deſigns. In this age, and by this very people, were built the temples of Andalouſia, Grenada and Valencia, in which are diſplayed ſuch boldneſs and immenſe labour, as aſtoniſh the artiſts of the preſent times. The cultivation of the arts which always produces that of manners, introduced politeneſs in the kingdoms of the muſſulmen. All writers mention the magnificence of their court, and the Mooriſh galantry is ſtill famous in Spain.

THE Greeks, notwithſtanding the dreadful confuſion that ſeemed to threaten the entire ruin of learning, had ſtill men who cultivated it with ſucceſs. Such were the two Tzetzes, grammarians and learned men, whoſe writings are ſtill held in eſteem; Nicetas Achemenites, who has left us a curious hiſtory of his century; Zonaras, diſtinguiſhed for his annals, who, after having been a courtier, became a hermit, and in this ſolitude painted the tumultuous ſcenes in which he had performed ſo conſiderable a part; Ann Commenes, in fine, whoſe name, that would otherwiſe have periſhed in oblivion, had ſhe been no more than a princeſs, is immortalized by her taſte for learning, and the proficiency ſhe made by her glorious reſolution and application. Greeks.

END OF THE FIFTH EPOCHA.

SIXTH EPOCHA.

RODOLPH OF HAPSBURGH.

Revival of the Fine Arts in Italy.

From the Year 1273 to 1492 of Chriſt.

THE popes were now become more powerful than ever; they had exterminated the family of Suabia, and the blood of young Conradin lately ſhed on the ſcaffold, had ſecured their dominion over crowned heads: they had acquired new reſources, revolutions favourable to their intereſt and greatneſs, had thrown down the barriers that reſtrained their authority, the Roman people deprived of the rights of election, with thoſe ineſtimable privileges, had loſt the little remains of power which they enjoyed. The kings of Sicily long the terror of the pontiffs, were now devoted to their intereſt, and the empire produced no princes but ſuch as were either venal dependants of Rome, or incapable of reſiſting her power.

THE power of the emperors was annihilated, they had loſt Italy, and Germany was now no more than a body of ſovereigns and independent cities, willing indeed to admit a head, but diſdaining to acknowlege a maſter. Rodolph, in poſſeſſion of a ſmall territory, and happy to enjoy the honours allowed his rank, had no other reſources

ſources to ſupport the dignity of his character, but in a prudence that could yield to circumſtances, and a capacity that enabled him to take advantage of every opportunity.

ITALY torn to pieces by the factions of the Guelphs and Gibelins, ſaw her northern provinces conteſted by a ſwarm of petty tyrants, who in their continual wars with each other, ravaged and laid waſte her moſt fertile plains: Venice, Genoa, Piſa and Florence, though at variance among themſelves, ſtill reaped advantage from the confuſion of the neighbouring ſtates; commerce flouriſhed more than ever in their ports, and daily added new ſtrength to their increaſing power.

CHARLES of Anjou, now quiet poſſeſſor of Naples and Sicily, was become formidable to his neighbours by talents and valour that acquired him the title of *Great*; but this prince, who marked his way to the throne, by the effuſion of blood, knew no other way to ſecure it, but by making himſelf dreaded; his ſubjects, whoſe affection he deſpiſed, ſighed for an opportunity of ſhaking off a yoke that was become deteſtable.

FRANCE and England were now the prevailing powers, France enjoyed internal tranquility, which the wiſdom of St. Lewis had procured her by laws and policy till then unknown: while her external wounds ſtill bled from the blows ſhe had received from the blind devotion of the ſovereign. In the mean time, Philip III, ſaw his dominions enlarged, the number of his provinces increaſed, the power of his vaſſals weakened, the vigour and ſpirits of the people revived, and a well diſci-

plined

plined body of troops ready to execute his orders with alacrity; and this prince, ſirnamed the *Bold*, wanted only greatneſs of ſoul to ſtrip England of the French poſſeſſions ſhe ſtill held.

England had juſt now laid the foundation of that glorious and aſtoniſhing conſtitution that was to coſt ſo much blood before it completed her happineſs. She had loſt rich and fertile provinces on the continent, but ſtill poſſeſſed Guyenne; her power gained daily ſtrength in Ireland, and from the abilities of Edward III, who lately aſcended the throne, ſhe conceived the moſt flattering expectations.

Spain was ſtill divided by two different modes of worſhip; the Mahometans retreated to the ſouthern provinces, where they ſupported themſelves only by precarious ſuccours from Africk, and by the diſſenſions among the chriſtians. The latter were maſters of four kingdoms. Navarre the weakeſt had made an alliance with France, whoſe protection ſhe found neceſſary: the brave Alphonſus III, was daily extending the limits of Portugal: Caſtile comprehended a third part of Spain, and would have been the moſt formidable power to the Moors, under a prince of equal capacity, but ſuperior activity to Alphonſus: Arragon was augmented by the kingdom of Valencia, and the iſlands Baleares. James I, who was the cauſe of thoſe ſucceſſes, in a tumultuous old age concluded a long and glorious reign: Ruſſia bowed under the yoke of the Tartars: Hungary ſtill ſmoaked from the flames which they had kindled: Bohe-

mia

mia was a powerful kingdom, who in her connections with Germany will ſhortly appear an object of attention: Poland was on the point of emerging from her obſcurity: Denmark was again involved in confuſion: Sweden continued to make new acquiſitions, notwithſtanding the diſordered ſtate of her government: the Hanſtowns were already a match for the united forces of all thoſe kingdoms, and the fleets of Hamburgh and Lubeck gave laws to the northern ſeas.

A NEW power was grown formidable on the borders of the Baltic. The knights of the Teutonic order, who had been called in to the aſſiſtance of Poland againſt the Pruſſians, made rapid conqueſts over that idolatrous nation; and thoſe extraordinary miſſioners while they were raiſing altars, found means to form an independent ſettlement for themſelves.

MICHAEL Paleologue, who aſcended the throne of Greece by criminal ſteps, ſecured it by immortal talents; his policy freed him from the Turks and Tartars, by kindling a war between thoſe nations, and he ſtopped the vengeance of the Latins, who were highly exaſperated at his depriving them of the empire; he ſoothed the reſentment of the popes, with the flattering proſpect of a union which they ſo earneſtly wiſhed for: he reſtrained the impetuoſity of his moſt formidable neighbour Charles of Anjou, ſometimes by exciting his new ſubjects to rebellion, at other times, by his intrigues, raiſing enemies againſt him in the remoteſt parts of the Weſt.

THE califfs were no more: the Tartars had extinguiſhed that power, and divided Aſia between them: the deſcendants of Gengis had ſpread their dominions from the Chineſe ſeas to the borders of Tanais: the Turks, who had fled to mount Taurus, or the deſarts of Syria, were waiting for ſome favourable opportunity to make their appearance again on the theatre of the world.

NONE of the Latin church were now to be found on the continent of Aſia, except in the city of Acre, where a few adventurers, ſupported by the military orders ſtill maintained themſelves: in the iſland of Cyprus were princes of the ſame worſhip: and Candia, with a part of the Morea, obeyed the Venetians.

EGYPT in ſlaviſh ſubjection to the Mammelucs, exhibited a ſtriking picture of that celebrated nation under the yoke of a licentious ſoldiery, who were compoſed of ſtrangers carried in their infancy from places ſix hundred leagues beyond the Nile. The empire of the Marabouts continued to riſe; the head of this great body was one of the moſt powerful princes of his age; he was ſovereign of Morocco, Fez and Algiers, and frequently carried terror into the very heart of Spain.

A MORE regular ſyſtem of laws was now revived in the Weſt, a taſte for uſeful ſtudies began to appear, ſome ſciences were reſtored, and a feeble dawn portended the return of learning.

GREGORY X, who purſued the deſigns of his predeceſſors with ardour, endeavoured to drive the Gibelins out of Italy, and to bring over the Greeks to his ſee. Circumſtances were favour-

able

able to his views: Michael Paleologue menaced at the ſame time by the muſſulmen and king of Naples, had occaſion for aſſiſtance againſt thoſe powers, and he could find none more effectual than the pope, who was all powerful in Europe. The union was effected in the council of Lyons where Gregory preſided, but continued no longer than while the emperor of Greece ſaw any danger to apprehend: Innocent X, Adrian V, and John XXI, devoted their ſhort reigns to preſerve a reconciliation ſo very advantageous to their power and influence.

Nicholas III, of the illuſtrious family of Urſini, finding himſelf duped by the Greeks, thundered out his anathemas in public againſt their emperor, and at the ſame time carried on a negotiation with him in private, in order to gratify his revenge on Charles of Anjou: the pontiff, whoſe alliance Charles had rejected with diſdain, offered Sicily to Peter of Arragon, who being allied to the houſe of Suabia, had an inconteſtable claim to that iſland. They both gained over to their intereſts, Michael Paleologue, whoſe empire was threatened by the king of Naples; they were aſſiſted in their deſigns by John Procida, a Neopolitan nobleman, who, on account of ſome atrocious inſults, was become the implacable enemy of his prince.

Procida, to elude the reſearches of the court of Naples, put on the habit of a monk, and in this diſguiſe travelled over all Sicily; he purchaſed ſome with the pontiffs money, others he encouraged by ſpecious promiſes, in fine, he animated the whole nation againſt the French by the

lively colours in which he painted the bitter outrages they had ſuffered from thoſe inſolent conquerors. A general conſpiracy was thus formed by the art and intrigues of this man, and the moſt profound ſecrecy concealed the barbarous plot from thouſands who were intereſted in the horrid event.

On Eaſter-day, at the firſt toll of the bells for evening prayers, the ſignal of ſlaughter was given; the whole iſland roſe to the bloody work; the French were maſſacred without diſtinction of rank, age or ſex, the prieſts butchered their female penitents on thoſe very altars to which they flew for ſhelter, and the populace ſtabbed the innocent babes in the boſoms of their diſtracted mothers. The fleet of Peter III, arriving at the ſame time completed the revolution, and in one day, Sicily was brought under the yoke of Arragon. The vain efforts of Charles to recover the crown, ſerved only to weaken the power of that which was left him; his ſon Charles *the Lame*, being defeated in a naval engagement, fell into the hands of a generous enemy, who, on the point of revenging on him the blood of Conradin, liſtened to the voice of pity, and contented himſelf with detaining him priſoner.

Martin IV, by birth a Frenchman, and therefore inclined to favour a prince deſcended from his former maſters, levelled his anathemas in vain at the head of Peter, he deſpiſed them in the midſt of a people, whom he knew how to keep in due ſubjection. Honorius IV, embraced the intereſts of the ſon of Charles with equal zeal, but

was

was not more ſucceſsful in his attempts to bring back the Sicilians. Nicholas IV, wiſely reſolved to extinguiſh the conteſt, and ſucceeded in reconciling the houſes of Anjou and Arragon: the former gave up all Sicily, and the latter renounced his pretenſions to Naples.

An extraordinary ſcene was now exhibited; after a conclave of two years agitated by factions and intrigues, the cardinals at length united to raiſe to the papal throne, then ſo ſplendid, Peter Demouron, an obſcure hermit, whom piety had conducted to the deſart: this virtuous old man made his public entry into Rome on an aſs that had ſerved him in his retreat, and which he could not be prevailed on to leave behind. Two kings on foot held the bridle, the court of Rome attended him in all her pomp, the people, with boughs in their hands, ran in crouds to meet him, and rejoiced to find in this ſcene, an image of their Saviour entering into Jeruſalem.

Peter was ſcarce ſeated in the papal chair, with the name of Celeſtine V, when he grew ſick of the pomp round him, and ſighed for the deſart. Cardinal Cajatan, in whom he placed a confidence, ſuggeſted ſome ſcruples with reſpect to his exalted ſtation, and cheriſhed the deſires he betrayed to renounce it. The cunning impoſtor artfully employed every ſtratagem of diſſimulation and hypocriſy, in order to determine the old man's reſolutions; he at length prevailed on him to make a ſolemn abdication, and found means to aſcend the throne himſelf. This was the Cajatan ſo well known by the name of Boniface VIII, who

began his pontificate with the impriſonment of his virtuous benefactor, and was ſuſpected of having haſtened his death. Who inſtituted the jubilee thinking it uſeful to his deſigns, and which the church afterwards adopted as favourable to the advancement of piety; he endeavoured to ſtretch the prerogatives of his ſee, treated princes with ſuch inſolence and pride, but whom Philip oppoſed with ſo much reſolution and ſpirit: he was impriſoned by Nogaret and Columa, and afterwards ſet at liberty by the people who pitied his ſufferings, and at length died with grief at ſeeing his pride ſo far humbled.

Benedict XI, whoſe virtues raiſed him to the pontifical throne, deſerved veneration for his humility. He diſowned his mother decorated with jewels, and embraced her with filial affection in the garment of poverty ſuitable to her condition. He was ſucceeded by Clement V, a Frenchman, whom Philip *the Fair* placed at the head of the church. He fixed his reſidence at Avignon. Under this pontiff the order of knights Templars was extinguiſhed in the flames which conſumed their commanders. They were ſo unfortunate as to be charged with the moſt atrocious crimes, when their greateſt guilt was but the poſſeſſion of immenſe riches, which fell a prey to their rapacious tyrants. The avaricious John XXII, diſtracted the church by his opinions concerning the happineſs of the elect, and diſturbed the empire by his implacable hatred to Lewis of Bavaria.

Under this pope the great body of the Cordeliers quarrelled about the form of their hood, and this

this trifling object became an affair of importance in Europe. Popes and kings were intereſted on the occaſion, and hundreds of friars burnt at the ſtake for their obſtinacy in the diſpute.

BENEDICT XII, who was educated in a cloiſter, ſhewed virtue on the throne of the church, but no talents. Clement VI, who is known for having reduced the term of the jubilee to fifty years, is recorded in the annals of literature as the generous protector of Petrarch. The ſciences met with a friend in Innocent VI, and found liberality in Urban V. Thoſe popes were all Frenchmen, and reſided at Avignon, whence they governed the chriſtian world. Gregory XI, of the ſame nation, yielding to the intreaties of devout enthuſiaſts, who told him of viſions they had, returned to Rome, repented of what he had done, and died while he was preparing to reviſit the borders of the Rhone.

THE people of Rome apprehenſive that his ſucceſſor might execute that deſign, menaced the conclave, and obliged the cardinals to elect Urban VI. The deteſtable cruelties of this pontiff, furniſhed occaſion to annul a choice that had been dictated by violence.

A SECOND election appointed Robert of Geneva, a prince no leſs reſpectable for his birth, than his exalted merit. This gave riſe to the tedious and perplexing ſchiſm of the Weſt, which frequently diſtracted the peace of chriſtianity. Urban eſtabliſhed himſelf in Rome; Robert aſſumed the name of Clement, and fixed his reſidence at Avignon. The two popes mutually excommuni-

cated each other, and Europe was divided into two parties. Germany, England, and moſt of the northern powers adhered to Urban: France, Spain, and Naples acknowleged Clement. Urban had for his ſucceſſors Boniface IX, who in his ardent thirſt after riches has left the world a monument of this greedy paſſion, in the firſt fruits which he inſtituted: Innocent VII, who, after being elected on condition that he ſhould abdicate whenever the church required it, made a jeſt of his oaths, and died with the tiara on his head: and laſtly, Gregory XII, who evaded the ſame promiſe in concert with the rival whom he excommunicated.

After Clement VII, the ſee of Avignon was poſſeſſed by Benedict VIII, an artful Spaniard, and an ambitious old man, whom all Europe together could not perſuade to renounce the throne, which he had aſcended only with the promiſe of quitting it. The cardinals of both ſees wearied at length with the perfidious conduct of the popes, aſſembled together at Piſa, depoſed Gregory and Benedict, and elected Alexander V.

Thus three ſovereign pontiffs in the Weſt were hurling excommunications on each other, and curſes on the heads of their reciprocal ſubjects. All three publicly proteſted a ready inclination to ſacrifice their dignity whenever their rivals ſhould reſign theirs. In private they mutually determined never to relinguiſh it. The eyes of Europe were at length opened, and ſaw into this deceitful colluſion. Sigiſmond obliged John XXIII, who ſucceeded Alexander, to ſummons a general council in order to reſtore peace to the church.

Con-

CONSTANTIA, a city of Suabia, was the place fixed upon for holding this council, the moſt celebrated we have had in modern times. The pope preſided in the aſſembly, and the emperor, who aſſiſted at it, took upon him to execute its decrees. Gregory XII, and Benedict VIII, were again depoſed as they had already been at Piſa, and John XXIII, was called upon to abdicate his dignity. This pontiff endeavoured to make his eſcape, he was however taken and tried before the council with great ſolemnity. He was accuſed of the greateſt enormities; murders by poiſon and aſſaſſinations, and crimes at which nature itſelf recoils, were not the moſt ſhocking of which he was found guilty. After a regular trial he was depoſed by the fathers, and ſentenced to perpetual impriſonment, on account of his wicked offences.

ANOTHER affair, no leſs important, engaged the attention of the council. A few years before, Wickliff, a native of England, had ventured to enquire into the eccleſiaſtical authority which held the world in ſubjection. That bold divine had examined and attacked its very foundation, and numbers of diſcontented people had eagerly adopted thoſe new opinions. The power of the clergy had cruſhed this ſect in England, but having reached Bohemia, it found a powerful protector in a clergyman, equally revered for his morals and learning. This was the celebrated John Huys, whoſe merit had placed him at the head of the univerſity of Prague, and, who by ſupporting the new ſyſtem with all his credit, made it triumph in his country. This divine had with him Jerome

of

of Prague, whoſe eloquence was well calculated to give great conſequence to the riſing ſect. They had both offered to appear at the council to give an account of their new faith, and to explain the motives that induced them to adopt it; the emperor and council had granted them a paſport and protection. But they had ſcarce arrived when the fathers declared they were not bound to perform a promiſe made to heretics: on this principle they were loaded with chains and threatened with tortures. They in vain invoked the ſacred oaths and proteſtations which had been made to them, the only alternative left to thoſe unfortunate friends, was either to acknowlege themſelves cheats and impoſtors, by renouncing publicly the ſentiments of their hearts, or to periſh in the flames. The conſtancy and courage of Jerome was ſhaken, and he ſubſcribed to the opinions of the fathers. The intrepid John Huys preferred the flames, and the perjured Sigiſmond ordered him to be dragged to the ſtake. Jerome quickly repented of his cowardice. The blood of his friend was continually before his eyes and revived his courage. He now avowed his ſentiments with greater freedom than ever. Being taken and dragged to the council he appeared once more at that dreadful tribunal, his whole diſcourſe was nothing but ſevere reproaches to the fathers for their errors and vices, their pride and avarice. He painted in the moſt ſtriking colours the perfidious baſeneſs of having violated a promiſe made in the name of prieſthood and the empire; he lamented in the moſt feeling terms his own weakneſs for not having mixed his aſhes with

thoſe

thoſe of his friend; he exclaimed that he burned with impatience to expiate that crime in the midſt of torments which he even ſolicited. Being condemned by the whole ſynod, he proceeded to the ſtake with joy and ſerenity, and preſerving his fortitude in the flames, died without a ſigh or a groan.

The council then proceeded to matters more worthy of their attention. By the advice of Doctor Gerſon many regulations were made in order to limit the arbitrary power of the popes. They conſidered how they might reſtrain the licentious manners of the clergy and improve their knowlege. The ſeſſions were cloſed with obliging the cardinals of the ſeveral ſees to elect Otho Columna, who under the name of Martin V, was acknowleged by all chriſtendom.

In the mean time the obſtinate Benedict had retreated to a caſtle in Spain, that was built upon a rock near the ſea, whence under the ſhadow of papacy, he thundered forth his excommunications againſt the world. Martin at his return to Italy, endeavoured to reſtore tranquility, and to extinguiſh the flames of diſcord which ſchiſm had kindled in the church. Eugene IV, upon his acceſſion to the throne, found a general council aſſembled at Bale; and apprehenſive that this aſſembly might lay new reſtraints on his authority, attempted to diſſolve it: he quarrelled with the fathers, and concluded with excommunicating them. The fathers retorted the excommunication, and carrying their reſentment ſtill farther depoſed him, and by their own ſimple authority, elected in his

room

room the famous Amedeus VIII. This prince after governing the dutchy of Savoy with glory, had lately retired to Ripaille from the tumultuous ſcenes of ambition, in order to enjoy the refined and delicate pleaſures of privacy. The ſplendor of the triple crown however, overturned the reſolutions of the philoſopher; the princely hermit accepted the nomination and aſſumed the name of Felix V. The politic Eugene apprehenſive of the reſpect paid to councils, reſolved to oppoſe that of Bale by another, which after aſſembling at Ferrara, he removed to Florence, where by his artful management he prevailed on the emperor to aſſiſt, in order to treat of a union between the two chriſtian churches. The moſt learned men of the empire with the patriarch at their head, followed their maſter to the council.

At this auguſt meeting the Greeks, who ſaw their empire ready to bend under the yoke of the Ottomans, conſented with reluctance to a reconciliation. Eugene was ſenſible of their inſincerity, but he was pleaſed with a meaſure ſo uſeful to his deſigns. The ſplendor of this union not only confounded the aſſembly of Bale and occaſioned its diſſolution, but likewiſe their pope himſelf, who grew tired of appearing in a character which no perſon was willing to allow him. The ſignal protection given to letters, and the generous retreat afforded to men of learning, whom the misfortunes of Greece had driven from Conſtantinople, raiſed the pontificate of Eugene to the ſummit of glory.

NICHOLAS V, the friend of every virtue, and the patron of arts will be for ever dear to the memory of thoſe who can form a juſt idea of the merit of human learning. The ſciences which he laboured to reſtore, are under everlaſting obligations to him, and the magnificent library of the Vatican, which he founded, ſtill remains a precious monument of his affection to them. Caliſtus III, ſhewed the world in a ſhort pontificate, that he was not unworthy to ſucceed his great predeceſſor. Æneas Silvius, the learned ſecretary of the council of Bale, whoſe pen had been the terror and ſcourge of pontiffs, being raiſed to their throne by the name of Pius II, renounced his principles and condemned his former writings. Learning, which had been ſo powerfully protected in preceding reigns, met with a baſe opponent in Paul II, the Venetian, but found a moſt noble protector in Sixtus IV. He was a great prince as well as pope; by his liberality Rome was beautified and adorned; he was the reſtorer of antiquities, the ſupport of every ſcience, and a friend to all uſeful knowlege. Innocent VIII, devoted all his attention in order to unite the chriſtians againſt the Turks, but failed in that ſplended enterpriſe, and received from the hands of Aubuſſion, the unfortunate Zizime ſon to the great Mahomet, who eſcaped from his inhuman brothers, to fall into more barbarous hands. Nicholas V. encourager of learning.

THE county of Harpſbourgh was a territory of ſome few leagues only; it was commanded by a caſtle, whence it derived the name and was ſituate in Switzerland, between Bale and Zurich. This Emperors.

was

was the whole dominions of Rodolph I, the head of that powerful family, which in two centuries after threatened to attack all Europe. The new emperor was ſeated on a throne with nothing but an empty title to ſupport the dignity; he had neither authority, troops, or money; and was in ſubjection to the clergy, ſurrounded by vaſſals more powerful than himſelf, and in the midſt of an enthuſiaſtic people who were ripe for ſedition and anarchy.

Rodolph of Hapſbourg.

THE prudent Rodolph was ſenſible that this was no fit time to inforce his rights by uſeleſs manifeſtos, that would be made the ſport of rebellion. At firſt he flattered the court of Rome by reſpectful ſubmiſſions, but forbore viſiting that city for the ſake of a coronation; he knew too well, how dearly that ceremony muſt be purchaſed from the popes. He then endeavoured to conciliate the affections of his people, and by that means happily appeaſed the ſpirit of faction. In fine, he ſtudied how to increaſe his dominions, ſo as to make them reſpectable; with this view, he artfully blended the idea of glory and the rights of the empire with his own intereſt, and in the name of all Germany demanded homage from Bohemia, as a feudal crown belonging to his ſcepter. Ottocar who had ſeen Rodolph at the head of the officers of his family, refuſed to ſubmit with indignation. This the emperor had foreſeen, and it furniſhed him with an opportunity of uniting all the forces of the Germanic body againſt the king, who, being overcome by the ſuperior abilities of Rodolph, was forced to bend the knee

and

and give up Auſtria to the conqueror. By this ſucceſs he acquired the eſteem of the Germans, and was authoriſed to demand back the dutchy of Suabia, which had been lately taken from his predeceſſors, and prudence uniting with force, he likewiſe obtained that fertile province. By thoſe methods did this able prince leave to his ſon Albert, powerful dominions, treaſures, and friends, and to his whole family a plan for attaining power and greatneſs which we ſhall ſee them invariably purſue in the ſequel.

THE factions revived at his death. Two emperors were elected at the ſame time; Adolph of Naſſau had the advantage at firſt over his competitor Albert; but the imprudent conduct of that emperor ſoon made his cloſeſt adherents join the friends of the houſe of Auſtria, and the bloody battle of Worms, in which Adolph fell, left his rival in quiet poſſeſſion of the empire.

ALBERT the worthy ſon of Rodolph, became more powerful than his father, demanded a reſtitution of thoſe rights which had been invaded in the times of confuſion; he attacked the rebels, defeated and deſtroyed them in twelve ſucceſſive battles, enlarged the territories belonging to his family, and, after acquiring the ſirname of *Great*, was at length aſſaſſinated by his nephew whoſe inheritance he had retained. Germany began to be alarmed at the riſing greatneſs of this family, and the policy of the electors nominated Henry, duke of Luxembourgh to the throne. Henry neglecting Germany, for the ſake of recovering Italy, went to Rome, in order to be crowned by the deputies Albert.

puties of the court of Avignon; and full of the project of re-eſtabliſhing the imperial authority in that country, while he marched to attack the king of Naples, in order to ſtrip him of a kingdom, unjuſtly taken from the family of the Frederics, he died by poiſon, which the impious hand of a friar adminiſtered in the moſt ſacred myſtery of religion.

The election of a ſucceſſor was delayed fourteen months in the midſt of troubles and confuſion. The friends of Auſtria favoured Frederic III, ſon to Albert, while the enemies of that family warmly ſupported Lewis of Bavaria. Five electors gave their votes to Lewis, the reſt declared for Frederic, who in an unſucceſsful battle was made a captive by his rival.—Lewis, who was indebted to the popes for his ſcepter, quarrelled with them about his rights and privileges. Being depoſed and proſcribed by their edicts, he marched to Rome, made himſelf maſter of that city, abjured the pontiffs of Avignon, and placed the papal crown on the head of a cordelier devoted to his intereſts. In the mean time he received advice that the eccleſiaſtics of Germany, armed with the thundering cenſures of Avignon, were blowing up the flames of diſcord; he haſtened to extinguiſh them, and courageouſly oppoſed the enthuſiaſtic fury of the rebels. The flames continually broke out anew, and the clergy who kindled them in every part of the empire, perſuaded the princes at length to depoſe Lewis. Charles of Luxembourg, grandſon of Henry VII, who was already king of Bohemia, was raiſed to the throne;

at

at his acceſſion he promiſed the moſt ſervile obedience to the pope. This was Charles IV, who inſtituted the famous golden bull, by which he regulated the ceremony of electing the emperor, and this bull ſtill remains the baſis of the Germanic conſtitution. He was accuſed of having ruined his family, by the immenſe ſums he laviſhed on the court of Avignon in order to obtain the empire, and taxed with the ruin of the empire for the ſecurity of his family, becauſe, to enlarge his dominions, he ſold the moſt valuable privileges of the crown. He was an oſtentatious prince, an unfortunate commander, with talents that did not riſe beyond mediocrity. To him, however, Germany has been indebted for the eſtabliſhment of common law. Venceſlas his ſon and the ſucceſſor to both his crowns, diſgraced the very name of ſovereign by the moſt ſavage cruelty, the moſt profligate debaucheries and a paſſion for wine, that betrayed him into the moſt ſhameful indecencies. He was a ſcandal to his name and family, a ſcourge to his ſubjects, and an object of univerſal contempt. The Germans conſidering the oaths of allegiance made to a prince ſo unworthy of ruling as null and void, forced the ſcepter from his hand, and beſtowed it on Robert of Bavaria, whoſe abilities effaced the remembrance of his predeceſſor's folly.

The imperial dignity reverted to the houſe of Luxembourg, and the electors conferred it on Sigiſmond the brother of Venceſlas. This prince, the hero of the council of Conſtantia, who has been ſo much extolled in the annals of the church,

was a weak, ſuperſtitious and cruel monarch. He left Mary, an only daughter by a conſort who diſhonoured him. Mary married Albert of Auſtria, and ſecured the power of that family; who by this means readily obtained the empire, which they conſtantly held ever after, and by the ſame connection they got poſſeſſion of Hungary and Bohemia.

Hungary, Bohemia, Houſe of Auſtria.

LET us turn our eyes back a moment on thoſe two kingdoms, whoſe hiſtory ſhall in future be ſo cloſely connected with the houſe of Auſtria. Hungary opens with ſcenes of misfortunes. Ladiſlas IV, the unworthy deſcendant of the Andrews and Stephens, was ſunk in the moſt ſtupid effeminacy, and engroſſed by ſome women of Tartary: he placed an entire confidence in barbarians of the ſame nation, and after ſeeing his kingdom laid waſte by their rage and exceſſes, at length periſhed by their hands.

THE diſputes that aroſe on account of the ſucceſſion, increaſed the troubles of the ſtate. Andrew III, firnamed *the Venetian*, claimed the throne as being deſcended from the male line of the former ſovereigns. Charles Martel, ſon of Charles II, king of Naples, urged his ſuperior pretenſions, as being the nephew and neareſt relation to the laſt monarch. A multitude of friends on each ſide, ſpecious arguments, and a viciſſitude of ſucceſſes and misfortunes left the cauſe undecided between the rivals, whom death carried off the ſame year. The nation was then more divided than ever. One party called in Venceſlas from Bohemia, whoſe weakneſs ſoon obliged him to relinquiſh

quiſh his pretenſions. Others were for conferring the crown on Otho of Bavaria, who, being taken priſoner by his rivals, regained his liberty only by renouncing his claims. The protection of the pope, the juſtice of the cauſe, and the wiſhes of the more ſenſible part of the people, determined the matter at length in favour of the houſe of Anjou, and the ſon of Charles Martel was crowned with the united conſent of the whole nation.

HUNGARY recovered under Charobert, a prince eſtimable on account of his talents, and no leſs remarkable for his two ſons, Lewis and Andrew. Andrew was the weakeſt of men and the moſt unfortunate of princes: Lewis the hero of his time, and the happieſt monarch of his age. While Andrew, the intended conſort of the heireſs of Naples, went to Italy in ſearch of a ſcepter and misfortunes, Lewis ſucceeded to the crown of Hungary, and raiſed that kingdom to a ſplendor it never enjoyed before.

HE was ſcarce ſeated on the throne, when he flew to the aſſiſtance of his uncle the king of Poland, and compelled John of Bohemia to ſue for peace. Having triumphed over the Bohemians, he turned his arms againſt the Tartars, who made continual inroads on Hungary, and by the moſt glorious victories, deterred thoſe barbarians from ever more attempting to inſult his frontiers. The barons of Boſnia, after he had married the heireſs of that province, diſputed his authority; he obliged them to beg for mercy, and ſtrengthened by the troops of this little territory, then reſolved to force Dalmatia out of the hands of the Venetians,

tians, which had thrown off the authority of his predeceſſors.

He had ſcarce engaged in this undertaking, when news was brought him, that his brother had been ſtrangled by a conſort, leſs wicked however than weak, and that the kingdom of Naples was become a prey to the rapacious paricides. He immediately marched for Italy, and carrying before him a repreſentation of the bloody tragedy which he was about to avenge, made a rapid conqueſt of Naples; he puniſhed one part of the murderers, obliged the reſt to fly with the queen, and no leſs juſt than brave, faithfully preſerved the crown which he had conquered, to the ſon of his unfortunate brother.

Being forced to return a ſecond time to Italy, which his generals had loſt in his abſence, victory again attended him there; he recovered Naples and reſtored it to the queen paricide, at the entreaty of the pope, but on ſuch conditions as to ſecure the puniſhment of the murderers. He then reſumed his deſigns againſt the Venetians, and by a plan of operations conducted with great wiſdom, and executed with equal courage, compelled thoſe haughty republicans to reſtore Dalmatia, which they had poſſeſſed for three centuries. The Ruſſians implored his aſſiſtance and found him a generous protector. The people of Lithuania having inſulted his authority, were forced to ſubmit to whatever he dictated. The Bulgarians, who ventured to attack him, concluded the war by ſubmitting to a tribute. The people of Poland charmed to ſee ſo glorious a prince

prince, in the nephew of their laſt ſovereign, conferred their ſcepter on him. Lewis, in the poſſeſſion of ſo many kingdoms, had the ſatisfaction to hear all Hungary bleſs his reign, and beſtow on him the title of *Great*, a title which he ſecured by the wiſdom of his adminiſtration, after he had before deſerved it by the ſplendor of his actions.

His two daughters divided his crowns between them. Edwiga, the younger, carried her rights into Poland to her conſort; Mary remained under the guardianſhip of her mother Elizabeth in Hungary, where ſhe experienced every kind of affliction.

History is now going to preſent us with ſucceſſive ſcenes of the moſt criminal horrors. Charles of Duras ſtill reeking with the blood of the queen of Naples, his relation and benefactreſs, haſtened into Hungary to plunder the two queens. Elizabeth drew the tyrant into a ſnare and had him butchered in her preſence. A ſubject declared himſelf the avenger of Charles, and ordered the queen mother to be ſewed up in a ſack and thrown into the river. Sigiſmond of Luxembourg, conſort to Mary, amuſed the criminal with the hopes of pardon, and afterwards making a jeſt of his oath, put him to death with the moſt cruel torments. Under the pretence of avenging the ſufferings of Elizabeth, the ſcaffold was deluged with blood, and this cruelty, which made the ſovereign odious, gave birth to a new revolution.

The Turks under the command of Bajazet, who on account of the rapidity of his conqueſts, was called *the Thunderbolt*, endeavoured to pene- Bajazet.

trate into the heart of Europe, by forcing their way up the Danube. The Hungarians turned their eyes to this young hero, and ſolicited his yoke, in order to be delivered from the chains of Sigiſmond. In vain Sigiſmond formed a league againſt the Sultan, numerous armies in vain marched to his aſſiſtance from the extremities of Europe, and inſpired him with the boldeſt confidence; he was defeated in the plains of Nicopolis, and forced to fly with a ſmall remnant of his army, part of which were deſtroyed by the ſword, the reſt were made priſoners; he wandered a whole year from place to place, leaving wretched Hungary a prey to the ravages of the barbarians, ſtripped at length of all his territories, he ſeemed undone for ever; when by a ſudden turn of fortune, he became more powerful than before. The misfortunes of the Turks having obliged them to relinquiſh their conqueſts, he recovered Hungary. A few years after he was elected emperor, and by the death of his brother Venceſlas, obtained the ſcepter of Bohemia.

Bohemia firſt ſhewed us Ottocar, a prince illuſtrious on account of his victories, and his refuſal of the imperial dignity, which was offered to him by the electors. He was afterwards reduced to the moſt humiliating ſubmiſſion, ſtripped of Auſtria and the countries annexed to it, and murdered by the hands of traitors in the very heat of a battle, where he was diſplaying all the qualities of a hero. During the minority of Venceſlas III, the ſtate felt all the rigour of a foreign yoke. It regained part of its former ſplendor when

when that prince aſſumed the reins of government. Tranquility was reſtored under this worthy ſovereign. Agriculture was encouraged. The ſilver mines, diſcovered by his induſtry, became a new ſource of proſperity. He accepted, with reluctance, the crown which the voice of Poland added to his own. When ſolicited to command the empire, he refuſed. The anſwer he made to the people of Hungary who preſſed him to aſcend their throne is remarkable, and ſhould be an everlaſting leſſon to all ſucceeding monarchs; *By multiplying the number of my people, I would,* ſaid he, *be fearful of leſſening the care and attention I have for their happineſs.* To complete his benevolent intentions, he reſolved to leave Bohemia a written code of laws, that the rights of every citizen might be aſcertained, and to erect a college in order to enlighten and improve the capital. But all the reſpect which virtue inſpires, was unable to conquer the prejudices of a nation, who delighted in ignorance and the confuſion of all regularity and order.

This glorious reign was followed by that of another Venceſlas, who diſhonoured himſelf by every vice. He was aſſaſſinated in his own palace, and was the laſt of the ancient race of kings.

The Bohemians were divided about the choice of a ſucceſſor. Rodolph of Auſtria was acknowleged by part of the nation only, and reigned but one year. His death revived the diſputes concerning the election. Henry duke of Carinthia, was at firſt generally received, but, becoming odious, he was depoſed with ſtill greater unanimity.

The ſuffrages uniting in favour of the family of Luxembourg, John obtained the crown, which he tranſmitted to his poſterity. This prince has been recorded in the annals of Bohemia, for having made wiſe regulations, and he is famous in the hiſtory of France, for the zeal and friendſhip with which he haſtened to the aſſiſtance of Philip of Valois. The generous monarch, who was blind and bent under the weight of years, being reſolved to ſhare in the battle of Crecy, had ordered his horſe to be faſtened to thoſe of ſome of his moſt gallant knights, and unwilling to outlive the misfortunes of his friends, drove into the thickeſt of the enemy's ſquadrons, where he fell covered with wounds.

CHARLES his ſon, whom Germany raiſed to the empire, rendered the moſt eſſential ſervice to Bohemia, by reſuming the projects of Venceſlas III. He eſtabliſhed a legiſlature, by a code of written laws, and at the ſame time founded the univerſity of Prague, after the model of that of Paris. Confuſion enſued under the unworthy Venceſlas IV, who was depoſed in Germany, impriſoned twice in Bohemia, and preſerved his throne merely through the contempt which the Huſſites entertained for him. His brother Sigiſmond, who had lately burnt the chief of the ſectaries in Conſtantia, and who was for carrying the ſame ſpirit into Bohemia, found the rebels with a hero at their head.

ZISCA, with troops under his command, whom he had trained and inured to all the fatigues of war, revenged the blood of John Hus, in that of his

his enemies. He ravaged Bohemia, ſeized on the capital, ſtruck terror into the catholics, defeated and diſperſed the imperial armies, and obliged Sigiſmond to fly from his dominions. This was the Ziſca, who, at his death, ordered his ſkin to be made into a drum-head in hopes the ſound of it would terrify the enemy, whoſe ſoldiers became ſo many heroes, and would have been invincible but for the perfidy of the emperor, who, after enſnaring them with offers of peace, baſely committed them to the flames.

ALBERT of Auſtria, by marrying the heireſs of Sigiſmond, ſucceeded to the empire, and the two kingdoms of Bohemia and Hungary: but he did not long enjoy thoſe dignities. At his death the three crowns were divided. Bohemia acknowleged Ladiſlas his poſthumous ſon. Frederic of Auſtria his kinſman, obtained the empire, and Hungary was given to Ladiſlas Jagellon then king of Poland.

GERMANY enjoyed ſome tranquility under Frederic *the Meek*, ſo called from his patience of injury. All was now confuſion in Bohemia, and the queen mother, trembling for the fate of her infant ſon, carried him to the court of the emperor. The Bohemians, after ſoliciting the return of their prince in vain, conſtituted George Pogebrach, governor-general with ſupreme authority. Capacity, valour and ambition, had raiſed this gentleman to the higheſt honours. Order was re-eſtabliſhed under the new maſter, and Bohemia enjoyed a profound peace during the nine years of his adminiſtration. As ſoon as Ladiſlas arrived at the age of maturity,

maturity, the regent was the firſt to move for the return of the young monarch.

This prince had acquired a new crown. We have remarked that the Hungarians had elected another Ladiſlas of the blood of the Jagellons. This Ladiſlas ſpurred on by courage and zeal had attacked the Turks with ſucceſs. The haughty Amurat II. humbled by repeated loſſes, was reduced to the neceſſity of ſuing for peace, which was granted only on the moſt mortifying conditions. The pope condemned the treaty, and ſeeing a favourable opportunity for attacking the ſultan, diſpatched the cardinal Julian to urge the king to break the peace that had been ſworn to in a ſolemn manner.

The horrid maxim then adopted, that people were not bound by any faith or promiſe given to infidels, prevailed over the dictates of honour in the mind of the weak Jagellon. The bloody conflict of Varnes, where Amurat after invoking the Almighty avenger of perjury, had in a manner exterminated the chriſtian legions, was followed by the ruin of Hungary. The imprudent monarch, and the cardinal, who was the cauſe of his deſtruction, both periſhed in the battle. The famous Huniade, the hero of his time, after collecting the ſcattered remains of the army, was obliged to exert the moſt aſtoniſhing efforts, in order to ſtop the ravages of the victorious ſultan. Hungary then turned her eyes on Ladiſlas of Auſtria, they ſolicited Frederic to give the young prince to their wiſhes. But the emperor ſeeing the kingdom a prey to faction, was fearful of expoſing

poſing his charge to ſuch apparent dangers, and refuſed him to the deputies.

Hungary, after the example of Bohemia, declared Huniade governor-general, and carrying her reſentment on account of the refuſal of Frederic ſtill farther, ravaged the territories of Auſtria with fire and ſword. The emperor however complied at laſt, and gave the Hungarians the king they had ſo repeatedly deſired.

The young and inexperienced Ladiſlas found it difficult at firſt to maintain himſelf on a throne ſo unſteady. The death of the famous Huniade became a ſource of freſh troubles. His two ſons ſupported by their father's name, were not eaſily perſuaded to ſubmit to their ſovereign; the elder brother even carried his inſolence ſo far as to have the favourite of the king aſſaſſinated. Ladiſlas prudently diſſembled his reſentment, until he had an opportunity of puniſhing the criminals. The murderer who had been lulled into a falſe ſecurity was ſuddenly arreſted, and paid for his temerity with the loſs of his head. Mathias his brother was kept cloſely confined. Thus every thing was reſtored to tranquility under the new king, and both kingdoms were flattered with the hopes of a peaceful and glorious reign.

Bohemia, through the voice of the regent, ſolicited the honour of placing the crown on the head of her ſovereign, and the preſence of the monarch, who gratified the wiſhes of his ſubjects, ſeemed to have completed the felicity of the capital. But while the ſtreets of Prague ſtill reſounded with joy and feſtivity, a violent poiſon

ſuddenly

ſuddenly put an end to the life on which all thoſe expectations were founded. Pogebrach, whom the general voice of Europe accuſed of the murder, immediately aſſembled the ſtates of the kingdom, and had art enough to obtain the crown. Hungary drew Mathias Huniade out of priſon, and placed him on the throne. Whatever were the ſteps by which George roſe to fortune, he ſhewed himſelf worthy however of the rank he acquired. Sileſia, Moravia and Luſatia, refuſed to acknowlege him, but he obliged them to ſubmit to the laws. By his prudence he ſtifled the troubles which religion occaſioned. The Bohemians had been accuſtomed to receive the ſacrament under both ſpecies. The pope, to whom this ceremony was diſpleaſing, urged George to diſcontinue the cup. The politic uſurper ſaw the danger of offending the pontiff, to whom the whole body of the clergy was ſubject, and no leſs dreading to provoke his people, who were obſtinately attached to this cuſtom, managed matters ſo evenly between them, as to cheriſh the hopes of both parties. The moment he found the aſſiſtance of Rome unneceſſary, he declared for his ſubjects, and by that means gained their hearts.

In the mean time Mathias Huniade governed Hungary with the abilities and valour of his father. The Turks were driven from the frontiers, the houſe of Auſtria in vain demanded her rights; Frederic was obliged to reſtore the crown of St. Stephen, which the mother of Ladiſlas had committed to his care. Auſtria, Syria and Carinthia, became provinces to Hungary, and even George himſelf

himſelf trembled in his capital. This was one of the moſt illuſtrious reigns which the annals of that kingdom have furniſhed, and Mathias deſerves to be ranked among its greateſt princes.

After the death of George, Bohemia conferred the crown on Ladiſlas king of Poland, and at the deceaſe of Mathias, Hungary alſo declared in favour of the ſame prince. Thus the neceſſity of having a powerful monarch to oppoſe the Turks again united thoſe three kingdoms. In the mean while Frederic *the Meek* enjoyed a long reign, during which he remained equally inſenſible to the injuries of fortune, the inſolence of his vaſſals, or the incroachments of the pontiffs. His ſubjects who loved him while they deſpiſed him, took occaſion from his conduct to ſay, that his ſoul was dead though his body ſeemed alive. But while this humane prince in the pleaſures of ſtudy and ſweets of friendſhip, found conſolation for the diſappointments of fortune, his ſon Maximilian attacked Ladiſlas with ſucceſs, and ſtripped him of thoſe provinces which the formidable Mathias had taken from his father, at the ſame time he ſecured the power and greatneſs of his family by marrying the richeſt heireſs in the Weſt.

John *the Good* under whom Burgundy was united to France by the extinction of its firſt dukes, beſtowed this province on Philip *the Bold*, his fourth ſon. This appendage had been augmented by the acquiſition of Flanders, which he obtained with the daughter of the laſt earl. This prince, who was one of the moſt reſpectable of the age he lived Burgundy.

lived in, had by his wiſdom annexed Nivernois and Artois to thoſe rich poſſeſſions.

JOHN *without Fear*, who ſucceeded him, was a tyrant, admired for his talents, but deteſted on account of his vices; he made advantage of the troubles which he excited. The violent death of this prince (for he was baſely aſſaſſinated) furniſhed his ſucceſſor with new opportunities of riſing to greatneſs.

PHILIP *the Good*, ſon to that wicked man, after long purſuing the murderers of his father with great ſeverity, did not diſcontinue his vengeance until he had extorted the moſt important advantages from France. On the other hand, he obliged the counteſs of Holland to ſecure the reverſion of her dominions to him, and obtained that valuable ſucceſſion.

THE power of the dukes of Burgundy thus increaſed by a continued ſeries of prudence and ſucceſs, was become one of the moſt formidable in the Weſt, and the court of Dijon was famous throughout all Europe for its ſplendor and politeneſs.

CHARLES *the Raſh*, had all the courage and ambition, without the wiſdom of his anceſtors. He was killed in attempting to invade Loraine. By this misfortune ſo many ſtates fell to Mary an only daughter, who was ſtill an infant. This princeſs gave thoſe extenſive dominions with her hand to Maximilian. Thus the houſe of Auſtria, which but two centuries before poſſeſſed only the ſimple territory of Hapſbourg, now governed Auſtria with its dependencies; the dutchy of Burgundy,

and

and the ſeventeen provinces of Flanders, laid claim to the thrones of Hungary and Bohemia, and held the ſceptre of the empire.

France. England.

FRANCE now exhibited the moſt intereſting ſcenes. Under Philip *the Bold*, we met with nothing but the unfortunate war which that prince had undertaken, in order to avenge the blood of the French, ſhed at the Sicilian veſpers. But the reign of Philip IV, called *the Fair*, was remarkable. The king of England was cited to appear before the tribunal of peers, and for his diſobedience was deprived of the province of Guienne. The people of Flanders who refuſed to acknowlege the ſovereignty of France, were defeated at Furnes, and though they met with more ſucceſs at Courtray, were totally ſubdued at Mons-en-puelle. The arrogant pretenſions of the popes found a prince to oppoſe them, and the thunders of the Vatican at firſt deſpiſed, were afterwards repelled in a more forcible manner. The laws at the ſame time continued to reſume their vigour. Tribunals were erected in every part of the kingdom for the protection and ſecurity of weakneſs. The parliament, which till then had no eſtabliſhed ſeat for the adminiſtration of juſtice, was now fixed at Paris, where it aſſumed a more auguſt form.

THE dawn of literature revived by Gilbert of Colonne, preceptor to the monarch, was cheriſhed and ſtrengthened by the liberality of the pupil, who was a wiſe, active and courageous prince, and the true reſtorer of the monarchy. Happy would it have been, if the ſordid avarice and unneceſſary

neceſſary cruelty, which he exerciſed in the otherwiſe juſt extinction of the knights Templars, had not darkened the luſtre of his reign.

The puniſhment of ſome financiers, and particularly of Eguerrand de Marigny, who was a victim of hatred, rather than juſtice, is all that is worth notice in the obſcure and ſhort reign of Lewis X, firnamed *Le Hutin*. This prince who was king of Navarre, in right of his mother Jane, tranſmitted his two crowns to his poſthumous ſon John, whoſe death which happened eight days after, gave riſe to an important queſtion. Jane ſiſter to the deceaſed infant demanded both kingdoms.

Philip V, called *the Long*, and brother to Hutin, did not attempt to conteſt the right of his niece to Navarre, but inſiſted that the *Salic Law*, which clearly excluded females from the throne, gave him an incontrovertible claim to France, and the general aſſembly of the nation determined the matter in his favour. Charles *the Fair*, who reigned by virtue of the ſame law, lived in the like obſcurity, and dying without iſſue, the debates with regard to the ſucceſſion were revived between the princes of the blood and the ſovereign of England.

The power of England had conſiderably increaſed under Edward I, the glorious deliverer of his father. The valour of this hero had humbled the haughty ſpirit of the Welch, and annexed that important province to his country. His victorious troops having afterwards ſubdued Scotland, that entire kingdom was made ſubject to his authority. Under his ſon Edward II, however Scotland

land ſhook off the yoke, and England became a theatre of the moſt unaccountable ſcenes. The indolent monarch, drowned in infamous pleaſures, diſdained the embraces of a moſt amiable conſort, and gave up his friendſhip to unworthy favourites, who made the wretched ſubjects groan under the weight of oppreſſion.

The queen, in her inhuman revenge more criminal than Edward, conſpired and armed his ſubjects againſt him, attacked, defeated and dethroned him, and, after ſeating herſelf in his place with her gallant, to complete the horrors of her atrocious guilt, ſhe put the king to death with torments no leſs ſingular than barbarous.

Edward III, ſon of that unhappy monarch and the wicked Iſabella, revenged the murder of his father in the blood of his mother's gallant, and confined her to a priſon, from whence he never releaſed her. England recovered its ſplendor under this monarch, and Scotland was again made ſubject to the yoke. 'Twas between this prince and Philip de Valois, that the conteſt aroſe about the ſucceſſion to the crown of France. Edward, as ſon of Iſabella, ſiſter to the three laſt kings, contended that his mother, being the lawful heireſs of her brothers, had a right to ſucceed them, and as he was her repreſentative, the kingdom was his natural patrimony.

Philip de Valois, ſon of the paternal uncle of thoſe very kings, reſted his claim on the *Salic Law*, and inſiſted, as that law annulled every female pretenſion to the kingdom, his quality of firſt prince of the blood ſhould give him a prefer-

ence over Edward; alleging, as the title of Isabella was invalid, that of her ſon proceeding from it muſt be liable to the ſame objection. The aſſembly of the ſtate decided the matter in favour of the prince of France, and even his rival acknowleged Philip VI.

The commencement of this reign was marked with ſignal ſucceſſes. The monarch, who protected count Lewis, attacked the Flemiſh troops in perſon, and obliged them to ſue for pardon to their ſovereign, after defeating them at Caſſel. A ſingular monument of this battle is preſerved in the cathedral of Paris. But Robert earl of Artois, having been unſucceſsful in a law-ſuit with the dutcheſs of Burgundy, at the tribunal of Philip, preſſed the Engliſh monarch to join with him in his reſentment againſt the French. Artivelle, a brewer of Flanders, whoſe credit was unbounded in his country, repreſented to Edward that his countrymen were ready to ſecond his deſigns. Edward encouraged by ſuch powerful aſſiſtance reſumed the title and arms of king of France, and put to ſea in order to inforce his pretenſions.

After triumphing over a fleet that attempted to diſpute his paſſage, he landed without oppoſition, over-ran and ravaged Picardy, penetrated into the Iſle of France, and levied contributions in the very ſuburbs of the capital. The people of France flocked to the ſtandard of their ſovereign; Philip headed the troops in perſon, and with an army of one hundred thouſand men followed the Engliſh prince, who was making a retreat with forty thouſand; he came up with him

him at Crecy, a little town of Ponthieu, which the tranſactions of that day have made famous to all poſterity. The activity, experience and abilities of Edward made up for inequality of numbers. The French army was totally ruined and fled with their ſovereign; thirty thouſand of the vanquiſhed lay dead on the field, and near as many more were taken priſoners. The conqueror, who ſcarce loſt two thouſand, after this glorious ſucceſs immediately inveſted Calais. That city can never forget the generoſity of ſix of her inhabitants, upon hearing that Edward exaſperated by the long reſiſtance made againſt his arms, was determined to ſhew no mercy to their country, unleſs the heads of the city ſhould be given up to vengeance; they voluntarily offered themſelves, and ſolicited the honour of becoming victims for the preſervation of their fellow citizens.

A PEACE, glorious for England, put an end to this war, and the indefatigable Edward haſtened to reduce the Scotch again, who had revolted during his abſence. In the mean time, France felt miſeries of another kind, taxes were multiplied; that upon the water and ſun was the invention of Philip. The rights of the crown and ſtate which Cugniere reſolutely defended againſt the incroachments and uſurpations of the clergy, were betrayed by the puſillanimity or ſuperſtition of the ſovereign. The acquiſition of the rich province of Dauphiny, which Humbert gave up to France, when he laid aſide the royal mantle for the habit of a friar, ſcarce compenſated for ſo many misfortunes.

JOHN, ſtill more weak than his father, increaſed the diſtreſſes of his country. An imprudent exertion of his authority againſt the count of Eu and Charles d'Evreux, king of Navarre, two of the firſt rank and conſequence in the ſtate, alienated the hearts of the nobles, and the continual inſurrections occaſioned by thoſe ſeverities completed the confuſion and miſery of France.

ENGLAND, in the mean time, continued to flouriſh and increaſe under the great Edward. The prince of Wales, his worthy ſon, and the rival of his glory, purſued his triumphs, and marched to the aſſiſtance of the malecontents. John advanced againſt him at the head of eighty thouſand men: he met the prince at Poitiers with no more than eight thouſand troops. Here was determined the famous battle in which the heir of England, in ſuperior genius and heroic valour found reſources to compenſate for ſuperiority of numbers; and ſo far animated his little body of forces, that with them he entirely routed the formidable army of the enemy, deſtroyed the flower of the French nobility, and made their ſovereign priſoner.

ENGLAND now appeared in the meridian of her glory. Her troops were conſidered as the firſt in the univerſe; the preſumptive heir of the throne, juſtly reſpected as the hero of the age, and her monarch held two kings in captivity at his court, to whom he dictated laws. All France was convulſed with diſorder. The dauphin endeavoured to hold the reins of government. They were torn out of his hands by rebels. The king of Navarre

varre having eſcaped from priſon, revenged with fire and ſword the indignities which he had ſuffered. The governors made themſelves maſters in the places committed to their care. The nobles oppreſſed and enſlaved their dependants. The latter, made deſperate by the weight of oppreſſion, engaged in that dreadful confederacy recorded by the name of *La Jaquerie*, and the populace who flocked in crowds to ſwell their numbers, committed the moſt unheard of ravages, by way of revenge for the injuries which the nobility had made them ſuffer.

JOHN at length was releaſed from his fetters by the peace of Britanny, which in reſtoring him to liberty, deprived him of a third part of his dominions. But the weak monarch under the vain pretext of a vow which was uſed only to diſguiſe his paſſion, returned to London, where he met his fate. The candour of this monarch has been much extolled, and flattery adorned him with the title of *the Good*; but the veracity of an hiſtorian ſhould repreſent him as one of the moſt imprudent princes that ever exiſted. The two kingdoms continued a war, in which England ſupported the honour of her arms, and France repaired part of her loſſes.

CHARLES V, as remarkable for his wiſdom and prudence, as his father had been for the want of both, employed every means which his capacity furniſhed, in order to raiſe his fallen country. He formed a ſtrict connection with his brother Philip, whom their father had created duke of Burgundy, and whoſe friendſhip was eſſential to

him on account of thoſe rich poſſeſſions. He vigorouſly attacked the king of Navarre, and after a fortunate battle compelled him to forſake the party of Edward. He ſupported the troubles in Britanny, which was divided between two claimants; and, by ſending ſuccours to the duke whom England refuſed to acknowlege, he obliged his enemy to ſeparate his forces. He contrived to ſend the formidable prince of Wales into Spain, by exciting a rebellion there againſt the monarch whom England protected, and he made advantage of the abſence of that great commander. At the ſame time he encouraged Scotland openly, and by private emiſſaries kindled a rebellion in the Engliſh provinces. Satisfied with being the ſoul of all thoſe different ſchemes, he committed the execution of them to the celebrated Dugueſclin. Fortune at length flew to the ſtandard of this wiſe prince.

Edward, who had now loſt his ſon, experienced misfortunes in his turn. But after the death of this hero, when the ſceptre of his ſucceſſor became the ſport of ſedition, Charles exerted all his powers; he took advantage of every diſpute between his rivals, and recovered the greater part of thoſe provinces, which had been ſo long diſmembered from the French monarchy. 'Twas in the midſt of ſo many cares that this great man, formed the moſt excellent regulations, reſtored ſcience to his dominions, and endeavoured to revive the fine arts, leaving to his ſon a kingdom that required only the continuation of his meaſures, to render it one of the moſt flouriſhing ſtates of Europe.

Charles

CHARLES VI, gave the happieſt preſages at firſt of ſucceſs; he attacked in perſon the people of Ghent, who had rebelled againſt their ſovereign, and by the bloody battle of Roſebeck, obliged them to ſue for pardon at the feet of their count. He compelled the duke of Guelders to acknowlege himſelf his vaſſal; he forced the Engliſh to ſolicit a truce whereof he dictated the conditions; he cruſhed ſedition that diſturbed the capital, and by the clemency ſhewn after a juſt ſeverity, he was honoured by his ſubjects with the title of *Well-beloved*. A hot ſun however in a moment ſpoiled that head on which the public welfare depended. An accident that happened amidſt the pleaſures of a ball completing the diſorder, Charles grew delirious, and he was no longer able to manage the reins of government.

THE duke of Orleans, brother to the king, and his uncle John duke of Burgundy, contended for the regency. The capital, the provinces, the cities and villages, were divided by thoſe princes, and each party committed every ſpecies of crimes. The duke of Burgundy had cauſed the duke of Orleans to be aſſaſſinated, and far from attempting to conceal the crime, hired a divine to defend it publicly. The people of Orleans headed by the conſtable d'Armagnac, revenged the death of their prince in the blood of the inhabitants of Burgundy. The people of Burgundy, in turn, butchered thoſe of Orleans. The duke of Berry, another uncle of the king, who might have ſuſtained the balance betweeen the two parties, be-

came the ſport of both. The dauphin Charles, a mere infant, was incapable of affording any relief.

ISABELLA of Bavaria, who was born for the ſcourge of France, over which ſhe reigned, kindled herſelf the flames that devoured the country. The Engliſh in the mean while, witneſſes to the tottering ſituation of the wretched kingdom, advanced to accelerate and ſhare in its ruin.

ENGLAND had lately experienced a new revolution; the great Edward was ſucceeded by Richard II, grandſon of Edward III, and ſon of the famous prince of Wales; he was a moſt amiable monarch, and the mediocrity of talents which he poſſeſſed, would have been ſufficient in other circumſtances, but was inadequate to ſupport the great names of his father and grand-father, to reign peaceably over a people, who have but little reſpect for their princes unleſs they raiſe admiration. The ill ſucceſs of the armies in that reign, had allienated the hearts of the Engliſh; ſome faults that had been committed in the adminiſtration, and a few acts of ſeverity againſt the princes of the royal family, having increaſed the murmurs, an inſurrection, the general conſequence with that ſpirited nation, quickly broke out. The duke of Lancaſter, firſt couſin to Richard, put himſelf at the head of the rebels. The unfortunate monarch having been defeated, impriſoned and depoſed in parliament, ſubſcribed with his own hand to his ſentence, in hopes of preſerving his life, which the uneaſy ſuſpicions of the new king nevertheleſs deprived him off.

THE

THE fortunate Lancaſter by the name of Henry IV, gained admiration on the throne which he had conquered. England recovered, and Scotland was the firſt object on which ſhe made trial of her ſtrenth. But his ſon Henry V, carried his deſigns ſtill farther. The condition of France inſpired him with the idea of conquering it, or recovering the poſſeſſions which his predeceſſors enjoyed in that country. With this view he ſent to demand the ſceptre, which he alleged had been uſurped to the prejudice of the great Edward, or the extenſive provinces at leaſt, that were the inheritance of the Plantagenets. At the ſame time he advanced at the head of a few but choſen troops, and ravaged the provinces contiguous to the Engliſh channel.

COMMON danger ſeemed to have united the French. The people of Burgundy and Orleans were collected together, as if they had entirely forgot their long hatred and animoſity. Numerous armies, commanded by the princes of the blood, and ſtrengthened by all the nobles, flocked round their ſtandards. Thus the French, under the direction of commanders ill united, and intoxicated with vain preſumption, without order or diſcipline, having no other advantage but the ſlender merit of inconſiderate valour and ſuperiority of numbers, ventured to attack their enemies leſs numerous, but all men of determined courage and in perfect harmony, under a general who knew how to gain a march, ſeize advantageous poſts, properly reſtrain or ſtimulate the ardour of his men as occaſion required, who united, in fine, cou-

rage

rage with capacity. Fortune ſoon appeared on the ſide of merit; the plains of Agincourt no leſs fatal than thoſe of Crecy, were ſtrewed with the bodies of twenty thouſand French. The duke of Orleans, and the flower of the nobility, fell into the hands of the victors. Henry advanced haſtily into Normandy, and by taking the capital, after a moſt glorious defence, entirely ſubdued that rich province.

The confuſion of France was increaſed by this new diſaſter. The heads of the nation made no attempts to defend their country: they ſeemed to think of nothing but their mutual deſtruction. The dauphin and his adherents attacked the Burgundians, and drove them out of Paris. The latter having found admittance again by treachery, deluged the ſtreets with the blood of their rivals. John at the head of his party, with dagger and poiſon, continued to perſecute thoſe who dared to oppoſe his crimes. The people who adored, and the queen who protected this barbarous man, became the inſtruments of his fury; while the Engliſh making advantage of thoſe diſorders, ſpread terror to the very gates of the capital. The inevitable deſtruction of the ſtate, which theſe diſſenſions menaced, furniſhed the dauphin with a pretext for propoſing a reconciliation to the commander of the Burgundians, who began to feel ſome remorſe, at the dangerous ſituation of his country. Thus decoyed to the bridge of Montreau, the unfortunate duke, was butchered at the feet of the dauphin, by a friend of that prince.

Philip,

PHILIP, heir to the tyrant, meditated the moſt dreadful vengeance for the blood of his father. Iſabella who regretted her lover, united with him to deſtroy her own ſon; and acting in concert together, compelled the weak Charles VI, to nominate Henry V, his ſucceſſor, to whom he gave his daughter in marriage. France was now divided into two parties. The one acknowleged the Engliſh prince, who had no juſt title but what victory gave him; the other joined the dauphin who appealed to his ſword againſt the decrees dictated by his barbarous mother. In the midſt of this confuſion death carried off the monarchs of both nations: Charles, after a reign of half a century, left his country in a contemptible and wretched ſituation; Henry died in the flower of his age, tranſmitting to his ſucceſſor one of the moſt flouriſhing kingdoms in Europe, with the addition of a monarchy much more extenſive, acquired by his valour. He was called the hero of England, and truly deſerved that honour: he was a rapid conqueror, and a moſt beneficent monarch, the idol of his own ſubjects, and an object of veneration even to his enemies.

Two princes at the ſame time aſſumed the title of king of France. Charles VII, ſupported his claim by the right of nature and the laws of the country: Henry VI, inſiſting on the will of the late king, realized his chimerical title by his ſword. His arms continued ſucceſsful by the prudence of Bedford, the worthy brother of Henry V, who was appointed regent of France, and the valour of Talbot, the hero of the Engliſh forces.

forces. The battles of Crevan in Burgundy, and Verneuil, raiſed the fortune of Britain to the higheſt pitch. Theſe fortunate inſulars made preparations for the ſiege of Orleans, perſuaded that after the ſurrender of that important bulwark of the ſtate, they ſhould be in a condition to ſubject the whole kingdom, and force Charles, whom they ſtiled a king of villages, to fly for ſhelter to the mountains.

To complete the ſucceſs and triumphs of thoſe ſtrangers, the rival of their maſter, carried down the intoxicating ſtreams of pleaſure, ſaw with an eye of indifference, his provinces falling under the Britiſh ſceptre, and his crown tottering on his head. 'Twas in this critical ſituation, that a kind of prodigy appeared in favour of France, to reſcue her from deſtruction. The fair Agnes, miſtreſs of her ſovereign, with a moſt tender attachment to his perſon, had a more delicate ſenſe of the fame and glory of her lover, bluſhing for his ſhameful effeminacy, ſhe had the courage to paint his conduct in the moſt diſgraceful light. She rouſed him by her reproaches, from the arms of indolence and pleaſures, and perſuaded him to encounter the dangers of war. 'Twas the ſame Agnes introduced the ſervant maid, who gave out ſhe was inſpired by Heaven, to attack the Engliſh, and by this happy expedient revived the courage of the French, who were aſhamed to be out-done in zeal and courage, by a girl ſo young and of ſuch mean condition. This enthuſiaſtic heroine, at the head of the French battalions, defeated the Engliſh at Patay. She ſaved Orleans,

when

when the loſs of that city appeared inevitable; conducted Charles through the midſt of his foes, and ſaw him crowned in the ſame place.

Affairs now wore a total different face. The death of Joan d'Arcq, who was taken by the Engliſh at Compiegne and burned at Rouen, ſerved only to accelerate their deſtruction, by the horror which this ſhameful barbarity inſpired. Henry VI, was in vain ſent for to Paris, and crowned with the utmoſt pomp and magnificence; he loſt provinces on every ſide. Charles animated by love, attacked the Engliſh with vigour. Foix, Armagnac, Montmorenci, La Trimoulle, and above all, the immortal Dunois led the French, and revived all their ardour and courage. Paris was reſtored to her legitimate ſovereign, and the battle of Formigny, gained by the king in perſon, recovered all the fertile provinces, of which that city was the capital. He marched rapidly to the ſouthern part of his dominions, where his ſucceſſes, which at firſt received ſome check from the abilities of Talbot, became firm and unſhaken by the death of that illuſtrious captain, who, at the age of fourſcore years, fell glorioufly in the field. The diſturbances in England completed the revolution, and all France ſubmitted to the fortunate Charles VII.

While this prince was reſtoring to France her ancient ſplendor, the weak Henry VI, who had loſt a foreign crown, found his own made the ſport of inſolence, and ready to drop from his head. The family of York tracing back their claim to the daughter of the duke of Clarence,

ſecond

ſecond ſon to Edward III, inſiſted upon the ſceptre, as having been uſurped by Henry VII, who was the third ſon of that hero. The fame and glory of the two firſt uſurpers had kept the houſe of York ſilent; but the ſucceſſor of that family, now ſeeing, in the room of thoſe great princes, none but a weak religioniſt, openly demanded his rights, in ſupport of which, he ſet all England in a flame. The famous Warwick, the moſt accompliſhed man of the kingdom ſided with York, and his party took for device a *white roſe*. Henry was ſupported by his conſort, Margaret of Anjou, the heroine of thoſe days; this party had for their emblem the *red roſe*.

FORTUNE alternately ſhifted from one ſide to the other. Henry being taken priſoner by the duke of York and near to be dethroned, was reſcued by his victorious queen, who condemned the rebellious duke to the block. The ſon of the latter under the direction of Warwick, triumphed in his turn, and his party proclaimed him king by the name of Edward IV. By his ingratitude to Warwick, he fell from the throne, and it was reſtored to the family of Lancaſter, through the influence of that nobleman, thence called the maker and unmaker of kings. A new revolution deprived Henry of the ſcepter, and threw him into priſon, where he fell a ſacrifice to ambition. Margaret whoſe courage encreaſed with misfortunes, in vain exerted every effort of genius, all the activity of a commander and valour of a hero. 'Twas a moſt affecting ſight, to behold a queen entirely devoted to the happineſs of her conſort and ſon, at the head

head of the councils and armies, directing the one, and leading the others, tracing the plan of a battle, deciding a victory, or ſecuring a retreat. No leſs to be admired in adverſity than proſperity; ſometimes ſhe was obliged to travel through foreſts alone and on foot, with her ſon in her arms, and eſcaped from the rage of a murderer, only by making the ruffian her confidant, with an air of dignity that diſarmed him. At another time ſhe croſſed the ſeas, ſought for ſuccours in France, in Burgundy and Scotland, often repulſed and ſometimes betrayed; then appearing in England again, reviving the friends of the family, aſſembled and diſciplined them, one day victorious, another vanquiſhed, but ever inexhauſtible, in her reſources, ſhe ſtill roſe ſuperior to misfortune.

FORTUNE at length, however, betrayed her courage. In a fatal engagement, while with her ſon by her ſide, ſhe gallantly fought, and made every effort to rally her men, ſhe was in a manner alone in the field. In this ſituation Margaret was ſurrounded, and fell into the hands of the implacable victor. The inhuman duke of Glouceſter, one of the brothers of Edward, ſheathing his dagger in the boſom of the young prince, under the eyes of his diſtracted mother, dragged her to the Tower of London, where ſhe remained four years, continually tormented with the bloody images of her ſon and huſband, ſacrificed to the ambition of the houſe of York. She was at length releaſed through the mediation of France, and concluded a glorious life in her native country Such was the end of this illuſtrious queen, whoſe genius and

virtues

virtues made her an honour to her ſex, as her misfortunes were ſo many reproaches to the injuſtice of fortune. The houſe of York now became quiet poſſeſſor of the throne, by the extinction of the houſe of Lancaſter, but quickly deſtroyed itſelf. Edward put his brother Clarence to death, at the inſtigation of the duke of Glouceſter, and left the regency with the guardianſhip of his two ſons, to that inhuman tyrant. The ambitious guardian already ſtained with the blood of two kings, ſoon got rid of his wards, and reigned under the name of Richard III. A ſingle branch of the family of Lancaſter that had eſcaped from the rage of their enemies, diſturbed the tyrant.

CATHARINE of France, the daughter, wife, and mother of kings, left the widow of a hero, had been privately married to Tudor, an inhabitant of Wales, and a man of no great family or conſeqeunce. The children proceeding from this match, were well received at court by their brother Henry VI, who married them to the princeſſes of his own family. This family having been involved in the misfortunes of the ſovereign, periſhed by the hands of the York party. One alone was ſaved from the maſſacre, and found refuge at the court of Britanny; where he ſtill remained when Richard aſcended the throne. This was Henry, Earl of Richmond, a prince formidable on account of his talents, and very capable of enforcing the rights he derived from his mother, againſt a monarch that was deteſted by the nation. Richard ſent to demand him of the duke of Britanny, that he might ſacrifice him:

him; all he could obtain was a promiſe from the prince was to keep a watchful eye over his rival. But Henry found means to elude the vigilance of thoſe who were ſet over him, arrived in England, revived the party of Lancaſter, and marched towards London, in order to attack Richard. A deciſive battle was fought in the plains of Boſworth, where the villain Richard performed prodigies of valour, fell like a hero in the midſt of his people, whoſe flight he endeavoured to prevent. Henry VII, who raiſed the family of Tudor to the throne, married the heireſs of the illuſtrious houſe of York, and by this alliance, uniting together the claims of both *roſes*, put an end to the long and bloody contentions, which thoſe factions had occaſioned. This prince, after ſacrificing a few victims to his own ſecurity, ſeeing nothing farther to fear, laid aſide all appearance of ſeverity, became an object of the love and veneration of his ſubjects, and, by the wiſdom of his government, obtained from his country the glorious ſirname of Solomon.

The proſperity of France continued. Charles VII, after reſtoring her ancient limits, endeavoured to extinguiſh her domeſtic quarrels. He abridged the term of the king's minority, confirmed the pragmatic ſanction, founded public libraries, encouraged arts and ſciences; his reign would have been happy but for a rebellious ſon, whoſe intrigues heaped afflictions on the latter days of a life ſo glorious. Charles was a prince of no extraordinary talents, but happy to find an incentive to glory in a paſſion which generally checks ſuch deſires, his reign was a ſeries of prodigies,

and placed him in the number of great monarchs. He was ſucceeded by Lewis XI, who formed a regular plan to raiſe the authority of the crown, and depreſs that of the nobles. He created diviſions among them on proper occaſions, gained over ſome by deceitful careſſes, and deſtroyed others privately; he had ſpies in the provinces, and ſtill covered with the cloak of religion, laid the foundation of arbitrary power by hypocriſy aud perfidy. The nobles at length, ſeeing into the conduct of the monarch, united together under the colour of ſerving the public. The duke of Burgundy joined them, and liberty was at the point of reviving, till the crafty monarch offering them an advantageous peace, prevailed on them to diſperſe by ſplendid promiſes; he ſeduced ſome, overpowered the reſt, and thus became as abſolute as ever. At the ſame time, he aſſiſted the rebels againſt the duke of Burgundy, whom he wiſhed to deſtroy, from motives of policy as well as perſonal hatred. He ſet all the neighbouring powers againſt him, and took advantage of thoſe imprudent ſchemes, for which the duke was juſtly ſtiled the *raſh*: by the death of that prince, who was killed in a battle againſt the Swiſs, his dominions fell to his daughter the ſole heireſs. Lewis quickly appeared in Burgundy, ſeized on that dutchy, and annexed it to his crown. Charles du Maine ſhortly after left him by will, the counties of Provence, Anjou, and Maine. He acquired likewiſe Rouſſillon and Cerdaigne.

Thus France increaſed by five large provinces, gathered ſtrength with the depreſſion of the great, the

the freedom of the people, and the authority procured to the throne, by the policy of the ſovereign. If we conſider Lewis XI, as a private man, he was a tyrant, a bad father, an ungrateful ſon, an unfeeling huſband, a barbarous brother, and a perfidious friend: to theſe vices he added all the weakneſſes of ſuperſtition. If we examine him as a king, we cannot refuſe him great talents. He was a profound maſter in the art of diſſimulation, and in his ſecrets impenetrable; he obſerved the greateſt regularity and conſiſtency in his projects, and ſhewed prodigious ſkill in the execution. He augmented the forces of the ſtate, he made admirable and uſeful regulations; he rendered important ſervice to the nation, by breaking the chains of the people, and freeing them from the tyranny of the nobles; but he gave a mortal ſtab to the monarchy, by introducing a contempt for the laws, nor did he appear to poſſeſs that extent of genius which diſplays the great politician; he committed the greateſt faults, even in the article of government. In ſhort, he had all the ſoul of Tiberius without his capacity. France was again involved in confuſion. Charles VIII, at the age of 13, was incapable of governing by himſelf, and ſo left his mother and couſin to conteſt the adminiſtration.

The duke of Britanny, in order to profit by the diviſion, ſupported the pretenſions of the firſt prince of the blood; the nobility endeavoured to ſhake off the new yoke, which they bore with indignant reluctance; the great were in arms, and demanded of the young monarch, a reſtoration of

their rights and privileges which his father had trampled upon. By the intrepid conduct of the queen regent, the courage of La Trimouille, and the battle of St. Aubin, the royal authority became triumphant. The princeſs Ann, daughter and heireſs to the duke of Britanny, was married ſoon after to the monarch, and by this alliance, that rich dutchy was annexed to the crown of France, after having been diſmembered from it for ſo many centuries.

Scotland was now emerging from its obſcurity. That country had hitherto exhibited affairs of little importance. Such were the ravages of the Picts, a barbarous people from Scythia, who had often ravaged the northern parts of England; ſuch likewiſe were the incurſions of the Scots from Ireland, who ſpread terror through the poſſeſſions of their neighbours. Thoſe two people uniting, founded a throne, which their courage ſupported againſt all the efforts of England; but taking no part in the affairs of the reſt of Europe, was little noticed in hiſtory.

The death of Alexander III, the laſt of the race of the ancient ſovereigns, opened a new ſcene, in which France and England became intereſted. John Bailleul a native of France, and Robert Bruce of Engliſh deſcent, both related to the kings of Scotland, laid claim to the throne. Doubts ariſing with regard to the rights of the claimants, the matter was referred to the deciſion of the Engliſh monarch. Edward I, inſiſting on a baſe ſubmiſſion as the price of ſovereignty, Bruce nobly rejected his offers. Bailleul leſs delicate

licate, accepted the ſceptre on the terms of diſhonour, and promiſed to acknowlege himſelf the vaſſal of his protector. A Britiſh parliament, where the monarch of Scotland appeared in the humiliating poſture he had promiſed, making the affair known, the whole nation was enraged at the treaty, and obliged the king to abjure his ignominious oaths. A bloody war, in which the valour of the inſulted nation was overcome by the abilities of Edward, ſubverted the throne of Scotland, and that kingdom becoming a province to England, felt all the ſeverity of a hoſtile power. While the nobles vainly murmured at a yoke, which they dared not to ſhake off; a man of obſcure birth, invited the Scotch to liberty. Patriotic virtue was rouzed at his voice, and ſeconded his valour. Wallace drove the Engliſh out of the greateſt part of their conqueſts; but the formidable Edward returning from France, brought back victory in his train, and defeated the troops of the young hero, who ſhewed no leſs conſtancy in miſfortune than he had diſplayed courage in proſperity. By the death of Wallace, who terminated the life of a deliverer by the hands of an executioner, Scotland again fell under the yoke; and hoſtages being taken from the moſt illuſtrious families, and conducted under a ſtrong guard to London, ſeemed to have rivetted the chains of the nation.

ANOTHER hero however aroſe to avenge her wrongs. Robert Bruce, the ſon of that generous man who diſdained to wear the crown on diſgraceful conditions, having broken his fetters, flew

with haſte back to his country, and invited the people to combat under his ſtandard. Neither the treachery of fortune who betrayed his valour in two battles, the blood of his relations and friends ſhed by the victor, the moſt flattering offers, nor the torments with which he was threatened could ſhake or corrupt his virtuous ſoul. Forſaken by the Scotch, who fled with terror, he took ſhelter in foreſts and inacceſſible mountains, where concealed under the meaneſt diſguiſe, he was forced to live on roots and herbs, but ſtill cheriſhed the hope of vengeance, and the deſire of reſcuing his country from the ſhackles of ſlavery.

When the ſecurity of England gave him a glimmering ray of hope, he appeared quickly at the houſe of a friend of known fidelity; and, followed by the vaſſals of that nobleman, ſeized upon a ſtrong fortreſs. At the rumour of this firſt exploit, the generous nobles of the North, who with the garb of their anceſtors, had preſerved even to our days, a horror for ſlavery, deſcended from their mountains, flocked round his ſtandard, and revived the hopes of freedom. The death of Edward I, by which his ſceptre deſcended to an unworthy heir, being favourable to the cauſe of the gallant Bruce; Scotland at length ſaw the happy day appear when ſhe was to recover her rights, and the battle of Brown, where ſixty thouſand Engliſh fled before a handful of Scotch, ſeemed to ſecure the glory of the nation.

The throne was re-eſtabliſhed, Robert crowned, and the avenger of his country made his people happy, by a reign, the wiſdom of which will be remembered

remembered for ever. The proſperity of Scotland vaniſhed at the death of the hero, who was the ſoul of it. David Bruce, a beneficent prince, but weak monarch, was by no means able to contend with Edward III, the conqueror of France. The ſovereign of Scotland being vanquiſhed in a pitched battle, and carried priſoner to London, recovered his liberty but by a degrading ſubmiſſion. His ſubjects fired with indignation, rejected the diſgraceful treaty, and renewed the war, and the death of David having cancelled his promiſes, they freed themſelves from every ſhadow of ſervitude. Scotland found generous defenders of freedom in the princes of the new family, to whom ſhe committed the ſceptre.

Robert marrying the heir of David Bruce, the line of Stuart aſcends.

STUART, who married the heireſs of Bruce, reigned with glory under the title of Robert III, and began that race of kings ſo famous for the antiquity of their origin, the elevated rank they attained, and the misfortunes into which they afterwards ſunk.

Denmark, Sweden and Norway.

A DISMEMBERED ſtate, a divided nation, kings without power, licentious ſubjects without any controul, who elected and depoſed their maſters; nobles who made a jeſt of all authority, and biſhops who uſurped it: ſuch was the image of Denmark until the reign of Waldemar III, conqueror of the people of Holſtein, who had oppreſſed the Danes. Waldemar had talents, and aſſiſting them by every crime that he thought uſeful, gradually quieted the troubles of the ſtate, and taking advantage of the diviſions among his neighbours, recovered Schonen, and obtained the

important Iſland of Gothland; and by the marriage of his daughter Margaret with Haquin king of Norway, paved the way for the elevation of that princeſs.

SWEDEN now preſented the reign of Magnus I, who by a ſeverity, no leſs uſeful than artfully prepared, extinguiſhed the flames of ſedition, in the blood of a powerful family. She exhibited alſo the brilliant regency of Canutſon, and Carelia under that prince annexed to the kingdom; next the diſorders produced by the vices of Briger, that ungrateful wretch, who ordered the ſage Canutſon to be put to death by the hands of an executioner. Being preſſed by the arms of his brothers, who at the head of the nobles demanded a free execution of the laws, of which the tyrant had made a jeſt, he decoyed them into his palace, under pretence of a reconciliation, and threw them into a dungeon, loaded with chains; and the inhuman tyrant, being forced to quit the city, threw the keys of the priſon into the river, by which means thoſe unfortunate princes periſhed with hunger.

SWEDEN, with rage and indignation, ſacrificed the heir of the throne on a ſcaffold, and placed the crown on the head of Magnus II, the ſon of one of the unfortunate victims of Briger. The hopes conceived from the new ſovereign, quickly vaniſhed, and the kingdom was again involved in troubles. Norway, where Magnus and his ſon preſerved their authority, became a ſeparate ſtate from Sweden. The latter called in Albert of Mecklenbourg, and beſtowed on him the ſceptre, of which ſhe had deprived the two tyrants.

By the death of Haquin, the ancient race of kings became extinct, the crown of Norway devolved to his widow Margaret, to whom the people cheerfully ſubmitted, on account of her talents. Waldemar dying ſoon after, the Danes placed his daughter on the throne. Thus Norway and Denmark, united under the immortal Margaret, became a reſpectable monarchy. The abilities of the queen augmented its power. Order was re-eſtabliſhed on the ruins of faction, the clergy were confined to the limits which the law preſcribed. The nobles no longer fought but for the intereſts of the throne. The people ſubmitted to the yoke, and the Hauſe Towns were taught to bend to the Daniſh flag; the nation became the empire of the North, and was made reſpectable to the reſt of Europe.

Sweden in the mean while was more diſtreſſed than ever. Albert conſidered that kingdom as a prey which he was in a hurry to devour. Taxes were multiplied, the privileges of the people violated, and all dignities and honours conferred upon none but Germans. Sweden beheld her neighbours happy under the wiſe government of their queen, and making a compariſon between their felicity and her own oppreſſed ſituation, the yoke became inſupportable to her. She forced Albert to croſs the ſea, and offered the crown to Margaret. The heroine of the North, now miſtreſs of all the people, her abilities brought about the famous treaty of Calmar, by which the three nations ſolemnly agreed, that the three crowns ſhould ever remain united on one head. In the midſt of this

this ſplendor, Margaret, after a long ſway, cloſed one of the moſt glorious reigns that hiſtory affords. The age in which ſhe lived honoured her with the title of the *Semiramis of the North*, and in fact, ſhe poſſeſſed all the talents of that Aſſyrian queen; perhaps ſhe might have had likewiſe her foibles, but never was guilty of her exceſſes. She might be reproached with perfidy, for having violated thoſe privileges ſhe had ſworn to preſerve. We ſhould deteſt the anſwer ſhe made to the Swedes when they appealed to her oaths, and the writings that contained them; thoſe writings were in their poſſeſſion. *Go, ſaid ſhe*, with a malicious ſneer, *you may keep your papers as long as I have the keys of your doors and the locks of your caſtles and citadels.* The treaty formed to ſecure the harmony of both nations, became the ſource of bloody quarrels that ſoon divided them.

ERIC, to whom his aunt had left three crowns, quickly loſt that of Sweden, by violating the privileges of the people. The people abjured the treaty of Calmar, conferred the honour of commanding them on Charles Canutſon; and with the dignity of grand-marſhal, beſtowed on him the ſovereign authority. Eric, who in vain attempted to recover that ſceptre, loſt alſo thoſe of Denmark and Norway. The three nations were again united under Chriſtopher of Bavaria, a moſt amiable prince, whoſe virtues ſupplied the want of other talents, and gained him the hearts of his people. His death became the ſignal of another ſeparation, and produced a new war. The intrigues of the grand-marſhal procured him the crown

crown of Sweden, which he wore under the title of Charles III, while the Danes placed the family of Oldenbourg on their throne. Chriſtian, the firſt of that illuſtrious houſe, which has produced ſo many great princes, took up arms, and inſiſted on the union ſworn to at Calmar. Sweden conſidered the treaty invalid, as the conditions had been violated by their rivals, and ſupported the election ſhe had made. This kindled a bloody war between the two kingdoms. Fortune fluctuated a long while. The intrepid Charles twice driven out, and as often reſtored, after the moſt terrible misfortunes, had the happineſs at length to finiſh his days in the midſt of his ſubjects.

CHRISTIAN in vain excited the biſhops who were devoted to his intereſt. The people determined to acknowlege no king, formed a kind of republic, of which they made Stephen Stura the chief, with the title of adminiſtrator or regent. Stephen, forced the Danes to retreat to their own dominions, kept the factious within the bounds of their duty, watched the motions of the clergy, and governed the helm of affairs, in the midſt of ſtorms and troubles, with no leſs wiſdom than vigour. This worthy magiſtrate was, however, depoſed by the intrigues of the biſhops, and obliged to yield the reins of government to John of Denmark, who was more ſucceſsful than his father, and reduced the three kingdoms under his authority.

POLAND, after a ſtate of humiliation for three centuries, recovered the auguſt title of which Gregory VII, had deprived her. Premiſlas being elected by the unanimous voice of the nation, not Poland.

content

content with the title of duke, aſſumed that of king, and ſhewed he deſerved that honour. The crime of thoſe ruffians who aſſaſſinated him, did not prevent his ſucceſſor from following his noble example. Here we may ſee how far the caprice of the multitude may be carried in the choice of a ſovereign.

THE virtuous Ladiſlas was depoſed by the intrigues of the clergy, whoſe ambition he endeavoured to reſtrain, and compelled to yield his crown to Venceſlas, the ſcandal of Bohemia, and the outcaſt of the empire. Ladiſlas, however, being afterwards reſtored by the unanimous voice of his country, ſecured his frontiers by the defeat of the Tartars, but was obliged to turn his arms againſt a new ſpecies of enemy.

The Teutonic order called in to the aſſiſtance of Poland.

THE Teutonic order, called in by the Poles to aſſiſt and ſupport the miſſioners ſent into Pruſſia, had conquered all the country ſituate between the Viſtula and the Memel. This acquiſition made the knights a formidable power, and Marienbourg which they built, becoming the reſidence of their grand-maſter, was conſidered as one of the moſt reſpectable cities in the north. Nobles devoted to arms by duty and inclination, and uniting the ambition of monks, with the courage of ſoldiers, were far from being ſatisfied with thoſe poſſeſſions. The order attentive to the ſituation of their neighbours, took advantage of their neceſſities and miſfortunes, and either by timely aſſiſtance, or declaring war at a favourable criſis, continually extended the limits of their territories. Ladiſlas, ſenſible how important it was to ſtop the progreſs of

of thoſe dangerous gueſts, and ſeeing them making preparations to ſeize on Dantzick, reſolved to repel them by force, and perſuaded Poland to ſecond his reſolutions. Such was the origin of that long and bloody contention between a warlike nation commanded by gallant princes, and a body of nobility accuſtomed to war and conqueſt. The victory was a long time doubtful. It was however decided under Caſimir IV. He triumphed over the knights in ſeveral battles and granted them peace, ſtripped them of part of their uſurpations, and laid them under certain reſtrictions to prevent their future encroachments. Not long after, he obliged the duke of Maovia to acknowlege himſelf his vaſſal. He diſpoſſeſſed the Tartars of the Palatinate, and ſurrounded it with forts, to ſecure its tranquility. He procured his ſubjects the greateſt bleſſing that it is in the power of a prince to confer on mankind, by making uſe of the love with which he inſpired them, in order to ſubject them to the ſalutary yoke of the laws. He acquired and merited the ſirname of *Great*, and the tears of a grateful people bedewed the tomb of their ſovereign, who was the laſt of the ancient race of the Piaſtes.

Lewis *the Great*, notwithſtanding the ſplendor of his talents perſuaded the Poles to place him at their head, did not contribute to the happineſs of the nation which he ſacrificed to the Hungarians, who in a manner adored him. A remarkable union happened after this prince. Jagellon, ſovereign of the dutchy of Lithuania, having abjured idolatry, and married the daughter of Lewis, aſcended the throne by the name of Ladiſlas IV.

POLAND being thus freed from ſo powerful an adverſary, and ſtrengthened by the addition of ſo extenſive a province, recovered the aſcendant ſhe had loſt under Boleſlas II, and became one of the moſt conſiderable ſtates in that country. In the men while, the war againſt the Teutonic order was renewed with more animoſity than ever. 'Twas after the moſt aſtoniſhing efforts of courage, that Ladiſlas and his valiant nobles at length ſucceeded and repulſed the knights.

THE nation fancied ſhe ſaw the ſpirit of Jagellon revive in Ladiſlas V, beſtowed the ſceptre on him, which death had taken from his father, and Hungary ſoon after placed him on her throne. Thoſe happy preſages were, however, all diſperſed in the plains of Varnes. The young monarch there expatiated the crime of having violated the treaty ſworn to in the moſt ſolemn manner, and the Turkiſh ſcymetar made a moſt terrible ſlaughter of the nobles of both kingdoms. This bloody defeat did not deprive the poſterity of Jagellon of the crown.

CASIMIR V, on whom the Poles conferred it, reſtored the ſpirits of the people that were depreſſed by the late dreadful blow they had received, and in a few years he ſeized an opportunity of extending the frontiers. The government of the Teutonic order becoming inſupportable to the Pruſſians, and forcing the people to ſeek a happier ſituation under the yoke of Poland, the war againſt the knights was revived, and continued with a long viciſſitude of ſucceſſes and misfortunes. Repeated victories at length determined the ſuperi-

ority

ority of Poland, and occaſioned the famous treaty of Thorn, by which the Teutonic order was obliged to cede one half of Pruſſia, and acknowlege themſelves vaſſals for the other.

WALACHIA ſoon after did homage in a manner ſtill more flattering for Caſimir, becauſe it was voluntary, and the ſole effect of the veneration he inſpired. In the midſt of this proſperity he concluded his reign, every moment of which had been conſecrated to the honour of his crown and the happineſs of his people. His memory will be for ever dear to the nobility, becauſe he firſt occaſioned the deputies of that body to give their votes at the diets. Till that time the palatines alone were allowed to ſpeak in thoſe aſſemblies. Happy had it been if a privilege intended for the happineſs of the country, had never been employed to diſturb its tranquility.

AN important revolution now laid the foundation of a great empire. Ruſſia, that for two centuries had bowed the neck under the moſt abject and oppreſſive yoke, broke forth from obſcurity and ſlavery. John Bazilowitz fired with indignation at the inſolent pride of the Tartars, rouſed his countrymen to the call of liberty, drove the barbarians from the ancient ſtrong holds, ſtripped them of others lately built, made himſelf maſter of the famous city of Novogorod, where he found immenſe riches that had been plundered from one half the world, by the deſcendants of Gengis. He then marched towards the Eaſt, conquering every ſtep he moved; ſeized on Moſkow, and

fixed

fixed his reſidence in that city, which he made the capital of the empire.

FREED from every yoke, and conſidered as one of the moſt powerful princes in thoſe regions, he diſdained the title of duke, worn by his anceſtors, and aſſumed that of czar, which has remained with his ſucceſſors ever ſince. 'Tis at this period the hiſtory of Ruſſia really commences, and Bazilowitz I, ſhould be looked upon as the founder of that empire, now become one of the moſt extentenſive and moſt flouriſhing in the world.

Spain. A MOST diſguſting ſcene was now exhibited in Caſtile. Alphonſus, a prince reſpectable for his talents and virtues, having loſt his eldeſt ſon, had the mortification to ſee the ſecond, who was in a manner the idol of the people, rob the natural heirs of all hopes of the crown, and after forcing him to leave his dominions, reduced him to the degrading neceſſity of ſeeking refuge at the palace of a Mooriſh prince, with whom he had been perpetually at war. The generous Saracen immediately took up arms in favour of his enemy, and ſeeing him aſtoniſhed at his greatneſs of ſoul, ſpoke to him in theſe words. *Alphonſus, do not imagine I am become thy friend. Our paſt diſſenſions have placed inſurmountable obſtacles between us. But thou art unfortunate, and it is my duty to aſſiſt the. The inſult offered to royalty and even to nature, by thy unworthy ſon, muſt be revenged. When I have replaced thee on the throne, I ſhall reſume my enmity.* Thoſe heroic deſigns were not, however, put in execution. Fortune that crowned the daring attempts of Sancho, left Alphonſus nothing more than a retreat in Seville, where

where he died of a broken heart. He was a learned aſtronomer, a judicious hiſtorian, a wiſe legiſlator, and one of the moſt reſpectable as well as the moſt unfortunate of princes. His greateſt deſire was to inſpire his ſubjects with a taſte for the ſciences and teach them to live under wiſe laws, a glorious ambition, but not being united with talents to gain the heart, became the foundation of thoſe troubles which diſturbed his reign. The ungrateful Caſtilians made thoſe very bleſſings he endeavoured to confer on them, a matter of guilt; and that happineſs his regulations procured for poſterity, was purchaſed at the expence of his own. In the mean while, different ſtorms were ready to burſt on the head of the new ſovereign.

The princes of La-Cerda, who had a natural right to the throne, and were united to the king of France by the cloſeſt ties of blood, found means to intereſt him in their fate, and likewiſe the prince of Arragon, who was ever ready to take advantage of the troubles in Caſtile, as well as the king of Portugal, who only ſought an opportunity of making new conqueſts. On the other hand, the brother of Sancho joined the Moors, and led them into Andaloufia, while the pope under the vain pretext of too near an affinity, endeavoured to ſeparate him from a conſort, whom he in a manner adored. The intrepid Sancho ſurrounded by ſo many enemies, created diviſions among ſome, treated with others; made an alliance with one, attacked another; braved the menaces of the pontiff, and drove out Miramolin. The nation exerted their utmoſt efforts, and made

the moſt aſtoniſhing ſacrifices in defence of the prince whom they had elected.

GUSMAN, who commanded in the city of Tarif, unmoved at the ſight of his only ſon, brought to the foot of the walls between two ſoldiers with their ſwords ſuſpended over his head, threatening inſtant death, unleſs the father would ſurrender the place. *Strike on*, exclaimed Guſman, *if I had a hundred ſons I would give them for my prince.*

THE minority of Ferdinand gave new hopes to the princes La-Cerda: they imagined that it would be no difficult taſk to wreſt the ſceptre out of the hand of a child, who had no protector but his mother. This was Mary de Molina, that beloved wife, whoſe rights Sancho had defended againſt the pontiff. With the charms of her own ſex, ſhe poſſeſſed all the elevation of ſoul of her conſort. The conſpiracy of the neighbouring powers againſt her, the ignominious treaty dictated by the triumphant Moors, and ſubſcribed to by the council of regency, with the diſſenſions among the nobles, and their inſolent attempts againſt the throne, were all ineffectual. The queen had the art to appeaſe the ſtorms which ſhook the interior parts of the kingdom; and by ſeaſonable clemency, tempered with prudent ſeverity, having cruſhed the head of rebellion, ſhe led the army in perſon againſt the people of Arragon and the Arabs, and by the moſt ſignal ſucceſſes, taught thoſe nations to reſpect her frontiers. The weakneſs and ingratitude of Ferdinand having removed Mary from the adminiſtration, the troubles and dangers revived. They grew violent during the minority of

Alphonſus

Alphonſus XI. Caſtile was a ſcene of lawleſs confuſion from one extremity to the other. The government was torn to pieces by the ſtruggles of the great, for power and authority; governors tyrannized over cities, and cities maſſacred the governors.

The authority of the laws became the ſport of licentious rage, and the nobility breathed nothing but the ſpirit of faction. The criminal horrors which accompanied thoſe exceſſes, drove the people in crowds from a country that afforded no other proſpect but that of miſery and diſtreſs. Alphonſus had ſcarce reached fifteen, when he formed the deſign of exterminating thoſe robbers who oppreſſed the nation. He began with a prince of his own family, who was the ſoul of every plot and ſeditious undertaking. He had him aſſaſſinated at table. Upon hearing that the people murmured at the deed, he flew to the market-place, boldly avowed himſelf the author of the murder, and threatened to puniſh, in the ſame manner, whoever ſhould dare to imitate the crimes of the late guilty victim.

He then made a tour through the moſt ſeditious cities: ſcaffolds were erected, which flowed with the blood of the rebels, and ſtruck a ſalutary terror. By this means he obliged the nobles to ſurrender their caſtles and ſtrong holds, to relinquiſh the deſtructive privileges they had of taking up arms againſt each other, and to reſtore all the rights of ſovereignty to the crown. Having, by a ſeverity which gave him the title of *Avenger*, thus baniſhed rebellion and licentiouſneſs, he re-

vived the deſign of his great grand-father, and endeavoured to poliſh his court by entertainments, where he diſplayed great taſte and magnificence. While this prince, voluptuous with delicacy, and ſevere with juſtice, was giving a new face to his dominions, an unexpected ſtorm threatened to deſtroy them. News was brought that the king of Morocco, in order to avenge the death of his ſon, who was ſlain in battle by the chriſtians, was advancing with two hundred thouſand Africans; that having defeated the fleet of Caſtile, he had entered Andalouſia, and that the cities threw open their gates to receive him.

The active Alphonſus flew with ſpeed to the aſſiſtance of his country. At the head of a ſmall body of forces, levied in a hurry, he attacked the numerous and choſen troops of Africa, under the command of the moſt powerful prince of the Muſulmen. The battle, one of the moſt memorable recorded in modern hiſtory, was fought in the plains of Tarif. 'Twas there both nations diſplayed that courage which has made them ſo famous; a courage that had been exerciſed and inflamed by ſix centuries of continual war and enmity. Alphonſus ſeeing the Caſtilians ready to ſink under the ſuperiority of numbers, was on the point of throwing himſelf into the midſt of the enemy's battalions, but the archbiſhop of Toledo, who fought by his ſide, reſtrained his ardour. His troops returned to the charge, made freſh efforts, and decided the victory. The king of Morocco was driven out of Andalouſia, and obliged to croſs over in a fiſhing boat, thoſe very

very ſeas which he had lately paſſed with three hundred ſhips of war, while his camp, where luxury and profuſion reigned, afforded an immenſe booty to the victorious army. The generous Alphonſus refuſed any part of the ſpoils. This was ſucceeded by the ſiege of Algeſira, ſo famous in the Spaniſh annals for the many particular engagements before the walls of the city, between the chriſtian knights and the braveſt of the Moors, whom the love of glory carried there from all parts of the world.

WHILE Caſtile extended her limits, and grew reſpectable in Europe, Arragon was governed by kings that placed her in a condition no leſs flouriſhing. France did not forgive Peter the IIId, for the torrents of blood which he ſhed to cement the conqueſt of Sicily; but Spain admired in that prince a wiſdom and valour that acquired him the ſirname of *Great*.

THE reign of Alphonſus was remarkable for the bulwarks raiſed againſt deſpotiſm; for the meaſures taken to ſecure the lives and honour of innocent citizens; and for the authority given to the grand judge, a magiſtrate that was formidable even to the throne. Under the reign of James the IId, were continued the quarrels of the princes of his family and the Dukes of Anjou, who laid claim to Sicily. The love this monarch always preſerved for equity, has made his memory dear and reſpectable. Hiſtory has not forgot that in an affair of importance, which he might have determined in favour of himſelf, by an exertion of authority, he choſe rather to ſubmit to the

deciſion of the laws. The donation the popes made to Alphonſus IV, of Sardinia, which they wanted to tear from the Genoeſe, occaſioned a moſt bloody and ruinous war; it produced, however, the happieſt conſequences; for the Spaniards, by having to contend with the moſt experienced ſailors of the age, were obliged to form a marine, which afterwards became one of the ſources of their greatneſs.

THE crown of Navarre paſſed from the family of Champagne to that of France. Jane, heireſs of the late Thibault, gave that kingdom to Philip the *Fair*, it was held by three of his ſucceſſors. Philip de Valois having acknowleged the lawful title of another Jane, the daughter of Lewis le Hutin, reſtored the crown to that princeſs, who marrying Philip of Evreux, transferred it to that branch of the family of France. In the reign of Philip, who was much beloved on account of the mildneſs of his government, the people were not ſenſible of the weakneſs of their maſter. They felt all the weight of oppreſſion under Charles the *Bad*, who was one of the moſt deteſtable tyrants of the age. About the ſame time Peter I, aſcended the throne of Caſtile. Peter the *Ceremonious*, a few years before, ſucceeded his father Alphonſus in Arragon: ſo that Spain ſaw on her thrones three princes who ſeemed to diſpute the honour of ſuperior cruelty. The chronicles of France have recorded the crimes of Charles the *Bad*, his perfidy, his aſſaſſinations, his murders by poiſon, the ſhocks given to the ſtate by his intrigues, and the capital deluged with blood by

by his barbarous exceſſes. The *Ceremonious*, who ſhewed more art in his deſigns, eluded the rights and privileges of Arragon, loaded his ſubjects with taxes, executed on a ſcaffold the virtuous Cabrera, who was the hero and deliverer of his country; he plundered his relations, murdered his brothers, and was looked upon with horror by by his ſubjects, whoſe rights he trampled upon. Peter of Caſtile, however, exceeded the enormities of thoſe princes. The death of the beauteous Eleonora, miſtreſs to his father, ſignalized his firſt acceſſion to the throne. A miniſter, for having merited the eſteem of the people, was butchered as he entered the palace; a prince of the family of La-Cerda was executed for no other crime but his having a right to the throne which he did not claim. The queen dowager of Arragon, aunt to the king, was ſtrangled; a prince of the ſame family fell by the dagger. A king of Granada, followed by the nobles of his court, entered Burgos on the faith and promiſe of entire ſecurity and ſafety of a paſs. Peter, after loading him with indignity, took a barbarous pleaſure in putting him to death with his own hands, and obliged his nobles to butcher, under his eye, the Moors who accompanied their maſter.

FATE deſtined one of the moſt amiable women in Europe to be the wife of this monſter. All the hiſtorians of thoſe times extol the beauty, the charms, and delicacy of the unfortunate Blanche of Bourbon. So many accompliſhments, however, made no impreſſion on the heart of the mercileſs Peter. Inſtigated by Mary de Padelle, the fit miſtreſs

for ſuch a gallant, he inſulted the queen at the firſt interview; afterwards confined her in a cloſe priſon, whence he ordered her to be carried to a caſtle, in order to be put to death. Having eſcaped from her barbarous guards, in the midſt of the city of Toledo, the unfortunate Blanche threw herſelf into a church, where embracing the altar with a flood of tears, ſhe implored the protection of heaven. Her youth, her beauty and misfortunes pleading for her in the hearts of a people, to whom the tyrant was already odious: the whole city took up arms, and ſwore to defend their queen, and avenge her wrongs. All Caſtile joined Toledo, and a large body of the nobility flocked into that city. They were headed by Henry, count of Tranſtamare, and Frederic, grand-maſter of the order of St. James, both natural brothers to the king, and both inflamed with the deſire of avenging their mother's death. Henry had already diſtinguiſhed himſelf by his heroic valour and engaging manners, that made him the delight of the nation. Frederic, the moſt accompliſhed gentleman in Spain, paſſionately loved Blanche, and to whoſe merits and affection, the tender heart of Blanche could not be inſenſible. Univerſal deteſtation purſued the monarch; he was impriſoned in his turn, and the counſel of the nation having aſſembled to determine his fate, he was on the point of giving a terrible example to the world.

It is mortifying to humanity to ſee extraordinary talents ſometimes united with the moſt deteſtable vices. Peter, with wonderful addreſs and

policy,

policy, with the moſt flattering careſſes and ſpecious promiſes, found means to work upon the people, and extricate himſelf from this perilous ſituation. The hopes of ſeeing him change, and the reſpect which the majeſty of a throne inſpires, uniting in his favour, his liberty and crown were reſtored; after they had, as they imagined, limited his power and authority: but the crafty ſovereign ſoon made a jeſt of the reſtraint they had attempted to lay on his cruelties; and the war, which was renewed by the male-contents, ſerved only to diſplay thoſe talents which ſubdued Caſtile. The rebels were overthrown on every ſide, and the unhappy Blanche, loaded with chains, was one of the firſt victims that fell a ſacrifice. Frederic ſoon followed her: Trauſtamare, who fled from death, was proclaimed an outlaw. All the friends of the children of Eleonora, fell by the dagger, or periſhed by poiſon. The queen mother, who had intereſted herſelf for Blanche, languiſhed in a ſevere captivity, whence ſhe was removed by her barbarous brother, to be ſtained with the blood of her favourites, who were butchered in her preſence. Almoſt all the nobility, who had followed the misfortunes of the two queens, expired in torments; and, as if the rage of the tyrant was not to be ſatiated with particular victims, he diſpatched the ſoldiery to deluge whole cities with blood.

Spain, in the midſt of her diſtreſſes, found ſome degree of conſolation to ſee the tyrants who oppreſſed her, take up arms, and inflamed with mutual fury, threaten death and ruin to each other.

other. Peter of Arragon diſplayed all the cunning and barbarity of Tiberius; Peter of Caſtile exerted the moſt heroic valour, while he practiſed all the cruelties of Nero. The indefatigable Caſtilian, whom victory continually attended, already exulted in the proſpect of ſhedding the blood of his rival; and tyranny ſupported by ſuch various talents, ſeemed to be ſecurely eſtabliſhed for ever. But the fortune of Caſtile had preſerved one to avenge her ſufferings. Henry of Tranſtamare, the only one who had eſcaped the maſſacre of his family, animated with a juſt deſire of vengeance, had been to implore the aſſiſtance of the tyrant of Arragon, and by joining in his crimes, had intereſted him in his misfortunes. The loſſes and defeats, however, of that prince, deſtroying all further hopes in that quarter, Henry turned his views towards France.

A SWARM of idle adventurers, grown uſeleſs by the peace, had ſpread themſelves through that kingdom, where they lived by rapine and plunder. At the head of this collection of robbers, he was joined by many French gentlemen, who burned with impatience to avenge the death of the unfortunate princeſs of Bourbon. They were commanded by Dugueſclin. Suſpicion, the ſcourge of tyrants, tormented Peter; and making him conſider every ſubject he had round him as an enemy, diſguiſed, he fled to Portugal, whence being baniſhed like a vagabond, he repaired to the court of Bourdeaux, to implore the aſſiſtance of the illuſtrious ſon of the great Edward. Pity and compaſſion, ſo natural, where a powerful prince is

reduced

reduced to lift the ſuppliant hand, pleading in the breaſt of the prince of Wales, the hero of Poitiers became the protector of a tyrant. Victory ſo long accuſtomed to follow the ſtandard of the Engliſh prince, changed the fate of Caſtile in a ſingle campaign. Henry thought himſelf fortunate to eſcape by flight. The valour of the French nobility ſerved only to deprive them of life or liberty; and the famous Dugueſclin himſelf, became a captive to the victor. Tranſtamare was undone if Peter had not been ungrateful. The generous Edward had obliged his ally to ſwear he would for the future ſpare the blood of his ſubjects, and give up ſome cities to England; a ſlender reward for ſo important a ſervice.

But the prince had not returned to Bourdeaux, when the impious tyrant, making a jeſt of his oaths, filled the priſons, erected ſcaffolds, kindled fires, and refuſed to deliver up the places he had promiſed. Henry, ſeeing his rival thus alienate the friendſhip of his protector, reſumed his deſigns, and ſtill accompanied by Dugueſclin, whom the prince of Wales had ſet at liberty, entered Caſtile again, and invited the enemies of Peter to his ſtandard. A battle, in which the king diſplayed the moſt exalted valour, terminated to the advantage of Tranſtamare, and Peter being beſieged in a caſtle, had nothing to expect but torments from an implacable enemy. In this extremity he applied to Dugueſclin, and by magnificent promiſes, prevailed on the French commander to receive him into his tent, where he might go and collect the few friends attached to his fortunes.

Seeing

Seeing himſelf betrayed and delivered up to his rival, all his fire and ſpirit revived at the treachery. Far from deſcending to prayers or intreaties, he called Henry a baſe uſurper, a deſpicable baſtard, whoſe ambition dethroned his lawful ſovereign, and though ſtabbed with a dagger and weltering in his blood, he attacked Tranſtamare, and would have quickly diſpatched him, had not Dugueſclin aſſiſted Henry, and furniſhed him with the means of ſacrificing his rival. Such was the end of the moſt barbarous of mankind, a fate he juſtly merited; but it were to be wiſhed he had fallen by another. We are concerned to ſee the hero of France act ſo conſpicuous a part in this bloody ſcene.

HENRY was immediately crowned; but ſenſible of the weakneſs of his title, he found it neceſſary to wink at the growth of licentiouſneſs. Two formidable powers conſpired to attack him; each had claims that were indiſputable.

FERDINAND, king of Portugal, deſcended by his mother from the blood of the kings of Caſtile, demanded a ſceptre, which, he ſaid, was diſgraced by the hand of an illegitimate prince. The duke of Lancaſter, ſon-in-law to Peter *the Cruel*, and Mary de Padille, urged his claim from a ſecret marriage that had been contracted between both. The dread of falling under a foreign yoke, the courage and abilities of Henry, the love of the people for their ſovereign, and the aſſiſtance of France, triumphed over the forces of England and Portugal; and this prince, who was at length in a condition to carry terror into the territories of his rivals, tranſmitted the crown quietly to his ſon.

HENRY

HENRY had capacity, virtue and courage; his memory is ſtill dear to Caſtile, whom he made to forget the defect in his birth; but humanity never will place in the liſt of great kings, the inſtrument of the cruelties of Peter *the Ceremonious*, and the baſe aſſaſſin of his own brother.

JOHN I, obliged to defend his ſceptre againſt enemies who had endeavoured to wreſt it out of the hands of his father, purſued the ſame plan, attached himſelf cloſely to France, and conciliated the heads of the nation by grants and privileges; this prince, who had but few talents for war, preſerved himſelf by ſacrificing his authority. The minority of Henry III, completely deſtroyed the vigour of the ſceptre. Twenty tyrants, who exerciſed the regency, rent the kingdom by their diviſions, and afterwards conſpired together to enſlave it. Enthuſiaſm, no longer reſtrained by the laws, raged with boundleſs fury.

THE blood of the Jews flowed through the ſtreets of Seville, under the hands of a populace, at the inſtigation of a miniſter of the goſpel. Caſtile followed the example, and thouſands of thoſe unfortunate people were butchered by the knife, or devoured by the flames.

SPAIN, in the midſt of diſorder and confuſion, entertained hopes that the hour of her proſperity was approaching, when Henry, having diſmiſſed the regents, began to hold the reins of government himſelf. This beneficent prince, however, juſt ſhewed himſelf to the world, and diſappeared; the fall of a tile deprived his ſubjects of a monarch

whom

whom they adored. The people having every thing to dread from the troubles which generally attend a minority, offered the crown to the brother of Henry; the juſt uncle, by refuſing to rob his nephew ſhewed he was worthy of the throne, and during a regency, managed with no leſs wiſdom than ſteadineſs, he perſiſted in cloſing the wounds of his country. They were opened again in the reign of John II, or rather under Alvares-de-Lima; that inſolent favourite, amaſſed immenſe treaſures, uſurped the principal honours, oppreſſed the people, inſulted the heads of the nation, perſecuted the royal family, and became formidable even to his maſter; but, being ſuddenly thrown from the moſt elevated pitch of honour, ended his life on a ſcaffold, after having made ſplendid talents ſubſervient to enormous crimes. This troubleſome reign was ſucceeded by another ſtill more tempeſtuous.

A KING without either virtue or capacity, a queen without modeſty or decency, favourites without honour or talents, a perfidious miniſter, a corrupt court, rebellious grandees, a factious nobility, an oppreſſed and ſeditious people, and the whole ſtate convulſed and fallen into contempt, were all but a ſlight ſketch of the reign of Henry III.

THE birth of an infanta, augmented the confuſion. The people, from the contempt in which they held their ſovereign, readily adopted the moſt odious ſuſpicions with impunity, and accuſed him of having himſelf procured a gallant for the queen. Alphonſus his brother, and his ſiſter Iſabella, encouraged

couraged this report in the capital, ſpread it in the provinces, and after ſeveral quarrels and battles, ſucceeded in impreſſing it with the marks of authenticity. The moſt indecent ſcenes were exhibited before the populace. A ſtatue of the king having a groteſque reſemblance of his perſon, was publicly expoſed; a mock law-ſuit was commenced, witneſſes appeared againſt the figure, and the moſt diſgraceful actions were attributed to it; after being condemned in a judiciary form, and ſtripped of the regal habit, with which it had been adorned, it was degraded with the moſt inſulting ceremonies. The great officers of the crown aſſiſted at this audacious farce, the chief prelates of the kingdom were the actors, and the infant preſided on the ſcene.

The weak Henry, unable to oppoſe inſolence with ſpirit, or perfidy with wiſdom, fell into the hands of the rebels, received as a favour the ſhame of preſerving the name of king, on the humiliating terms of inſerting in the public edicts the crime of his conſort, and the infamy of his royal bed. The death of Alphonſus ſeemed to have freed the monarch from his moſt dangerous enemy, but in fact produced one much more formidable. Iſabella, who ſucceeded to the rights of the infant, was a woman of ſuperior endowments, one of thoſe ſtrong minds who with the moſt ardent ambition, had the ſublime art of diſguiſing that paſſion.

Henry, impatient to reſtore to his daughter thoſe rights of which he had been forced to deprive her, found the greateſt part of his ſubjects ready

ready to oppoſe him, but could not diſcover the hand that put them in motion; his efforts to reſume his authority, ſerved only to plunge Caſtile into the moſt dreadful anarchy. The unfortunate monarch appointed Jane his ſucceſſor to the throne in vain. In vain, at that tremendous moment, when all the little intereſts of the world are awed into ſilence, when prejudice reſumes the ſtrongeſt aſcendant over weak ſouls, the wretched father called heaven and earth to witneſs that Jane derived her life from him: his eyes were ſcarce cloſed when the rival of his daughter ſeized on the ſceptre, and had her title confirmed.

Almost all Caſtile proclaimed Iſabella, who joined to the power of that kingdom, the forces likewiſe of Arragon, obtained by her conſort Ferdinand. A gleam of hope, appeared, however, in favour of Jane. The king of Portugal ſolicited her hand, and offered her all the forces of his country. France propoſed to ſend an army to ſupport her. Villena, one of the moſt powerful noblemen, invoked the laws of the ſtate, and the archbiſhop of Toledo appealed to thoſe of religion in her favour. The young, the beauteous and unfortunate Jane, revered for her virtues and talents, intereſted people beſides by that ſpirit and fortitude ſo becoming to noble minds in adverſity.

She did not heſitate to aſſume the name of queen, and in the manifeſtoes which ſhe publiſhed through all Europe, reproached her enemies as paricides, whoſe wicked machinations had accelerated the death of her unfortunate father. But

what

what could Alphonſus V, who poſſeſſed nothing but courage; Lewis XI, who conſulted merely his own intereſt, a miniſter who had capacity only to betray, or a prelate contemptible for his debauchery, againſt the capacity of Ferdinand, or the art and foreſight of Iſabella? The battle of Toro entirely blaſted the hopes of Jane, and ſhe had the mortification ſoon after to ſee her protectors bartering away her liberty and pretenſions. Diſguſted with a world, where ſhe found none but falſe friends and barbarous relations, weary with being the ſport of perfidious and baſe men, who protected and deſerted her alternately, ſhe diſdained the humiliating honours offered by the compaſſion of her rivals, and buried in a cloiſter her youth, beauty, and pretenſions to one of the moſt brilliant thrones in the univerſe.

FERDINAND, by the death of his father, ſucceeded to the kingdom of Arragon with numerous dependencies annexed to it. His conſort Iſabella poſſeſſed Sicily, which their predeceſſors had taken from the French; Sardinia, whence their anceſtors had driven the people of Piſa; Corſica, of which the Genoeſe had been ſtripped, and two-thirds of that fertile country now called Spain.

FERDINAND and Iſabella, thus become ſovereigns of the moſt powerful monarchy that had appeared ſince the extinction of the family of Suabia; perceived, however, that they were but maſters in part. The ſtorms which ſhook the throne in preceding reigns, ſtill growled, and the ſame cauſes ſubſiſting, threatened to raiſe their fury again. They had great deſigns in view, but were

ſenſible that nothing could be executed unleſs the ſtate enjoyed tranquility. This was the firſt object that engaged the attention of Ferdinand. He re-eſtabliſhed the tribunals of juſtice, and reſtored vigour to the laws. He gained the affections of the people, by affording them protection againſt the nobles, and deprived the latter of the power of oppreſſing them. The heads of the nation, either ſeduced by his promiſes, or terrified by his reſolution, gave up thoſe caſtles which made them ſo formidable. The clergy were reſtrained from being ſo prodigal of their excommunications, and the pope was made to renounce his claim to the arbitrary diſpoſal of church dignities. The grand-maſter-ſhips of the military orders, which, with immenſe riches, conferred an unbounded authority over numberleſs vaſſals, were all united in the perſon of the monarch. In fine, the blood of a prince of the royal family publicly ſhed upon a ſcaffold, terrified rebellion and ſedition into eternal obedience. 'Twas now the royal pair prepared to extirpate the power of the Moors, which their anceſtors had ſo often attempted in vain.

Of many kingdoms founded by the Saracens, Granada alone remained ſubject to their authority. This country lay under the fineſt climate, and poſſeſſed the moſt fertile ſoil in Europe. An induſtrious and laborious people cultivated thoſe happy plains. The city of Granada itſelf, contained three hundred thouſand inhabitants. A ſoldiery inured to war by frequent ſervice, reſided within her walls; ſhe every day ſent forth great numbers of the braveſt officers in Europe to challenge the

chriſtian

chriſtian knights; ramparts and fortifications, conſtructed with no leſs art than ſolidity, defended the city on all ſides; the moſt ſuperb temples adorned the great ſquares; architecture diſplayed in the public buildings, boldneſs of deſign, and delicacy of proportion. The ſciences flouriſhed in their ſchools; politeneſs reigned at court; and the king, who then actually commanded this famous nation, was the ſame, who, when the ambaſſadors of Caſtile demanded the tribute granted by his predeceſſor, anſwered them in theſe words. *Go tell your king that we coin no more money in Granada: we make nothing but ſpears and lances.*

FERDINAND was ſenſible of the great difficulty of the undertaking, but every obſtacle ſerved only to make him concert his plan more effectually. In particular hiſtories may be ſeen with what prudence he prepared the intended expedition; how carefully he enquired into the ſituation of the court of the Mooriſh prince; with what art he took advantage of the rupture that happened between the princes of Granada; how he ſupported the nephew whom he deſpiſed, againſt the uncle, whoſe courage he thought formidable; by what ſubtle manœuvres he ſucceeded in getting the kingdom divided between the two rivals; with how great zeal, in appearance, he aſſiſted the one he called his ally and friend, in order to enable him to deſtroy the other, whom he declared an enemy; with what ſagacity and wiſdom he made advantage of the diviſions he had fomented, that he might obtain poſſeſſion of places, whoſe ſituation obſtructed the approaches to Granada.

As ſoon as the quarrels between the two princes had greatly exhauſted the ſtrength of both, he appeared at the head of a flouriſhing army, exerted all his ſkill in the military art, and by the taking of Granada, put an end to the reign of a people no leſs diſtinguiſhed in the hiſtory of arts, than in that of empires.

We muſt not omit to mention the illuſtrious Iſabella, who was ſo well formed to ſecond the genius of her conſort. This queen frequently marched at the head of the troops, and in the trenches ſhared their fatigues and dangers. When her huſband, tired with the length of the ſiege, was tempted to renounce his deſigns, ſhe revived his courage, and exerted the powers of beauty, in in order to perſuade him to purſue the paths of glory.

Navarre, freed from her tyrant, by a death which he merited, recovered a little under Charles his ſon, ſirnamed *the Noble*, on account of his greatneſs of ſoul. Blanche, the daughter of Charles, had been firſt married to Henry of Caſtile, but being ſoon releaſed from her unworthy huſband, ſhe recovered her rights; and by a more happy marriage, transferred them to John of Arragon, brother and ſucceſſor of the great Alphonſus.

In Arragon, the horrid reign of Peter IV, was followed by that of John I, a lover of pleaſure, and all the polite arts. Under Martin, who had more reſolution than his predeceſſor, the union with Sicily gave a new degree of power to the crown. But at his death the ſtate ſunk into confuſion. Ferdinand of Caſtile, who had ſo generouſly

ouſly refuſed the throne of his nephew, claimed that of Arragon, as being by his mother, the neareſt relation to the laſt ſovereigns. The princes of the royal family oppoſed him on a ſolemn law made by one of the queens, which excluded females from the ſovereignty. After a war of ſome years, a council eſtabliſhed by the authority of the nation, determined the matter in favour of the Caſtilian; and this prince, who had been as regent, the happineſs of Caſtile, now became the felicity of Arragon as a king.

THE ſplendor of this reign was effaced by the glorious actions of Alphonſus V, whoſe illuſtrious conqueſts, many victories, and numberleſs virtues, acquired him the title of *the Magnanimous*.

THE union of Navarre under John II, the brother of his predeceſſor, became a ſource of quarrels. John becoming a widower by the death of the princeſs of Navarre, and having married one of the infantas of Portugal, endeavoured to retain the kingdom claimed by the offspring of the firſt marriage. The family of the Beaumont's intereſted themſelves for the young prince, and the houſe of Grammont took part with the king; many battles were fought by both factions, which ruined the country.

THE death of the prince and his ſiſter, of which all Europe accuſed their mother-in-law, occaſioned a rebellion in Catalonia, and the latter days of John were filled with troubles. He had, however, the happineſs to ſurvive them, and to owe the return of tranquility to his ſon Ferdinand, the

happy conſort of Iſabella, who was then actually the glory of Caſtile. Navarre fell to the ſhare of his daughter Eleonora, who in marrying Gaſton de Foix, carried it to the illuſtrious family of that prince.

Portugal. PORTUGAL, already triumphant by the valour of Alphonſus III, was made happy by the wiſdom of Denis. The memory of this prince will be ever dear to mankind, on account of his love to his people; hence he was called the Titus of the age he lived in. Alphonſus IV, who diſturbed the latter days of his father, was diſtinguiſhed for his victories, and odious on account of his cruelty to Ines. Poſterity has ſhed tears on the aſhes of that amiable princeſs, whom love united to the heir of the throne; ſhe was ſacrificed by a monarch who made the power of her beauty a crime.

THE deſire of avenging his beloved ſpouſe made don Pedro a rebellious ſon; but he attoned for the evils which his ſedition occaſioned, when he aſcended the throne. 'Twas his virtue alone, that acquired him the odious appellation of *Cruel*, his ſeverity never went farther than to terrify the guilty.

THE virtuous Ferdinand in claiming the ſceptre of Spain, with no leſs juſtice than ill ſucceſs, againſt the fortunate Henry de Tranſtamare, exhauſted Portugal by the efforts he made, and left one daughter after him; his death opened a field for new debates. The king of Caſtile, who married the heireſs of the crown urged a claim, which the order of ſucceſſion ſeemed to make indiſputable; but Portugal conſidering the welfare of the nation

nation as the firſt and moſt ſacred of all laws, ſet aſide the Caſtilian, and exalted the natural ſon of one of the ſovereigns to the throne.

JOHN I, who began a new baſtard race deſcended from the firſt, juſtified the ſuffrages of the people in the plains of Albureja, where he cut to pieces the Spaniſh forces, aſſembled to ſtrip him of the diadem. Having defeated his rivals, and obliged them to reſpect the choice of his country, he marched againſt the Moors, triumphed over them in Europe, purſued them into Africa, and took from them the important city of Ceuta. Whilſt the monarch was thus reaping laurels and glory, the ſubjects animated by Henry, the worthy ſon of that hero, overcame thoſe prejudices which oppoſed the progreſs of navigation, ſought new paſſages on the waves of the ocean, traverſed ſeas before reckoned inacceſſible, doubled capes, that were looked upon as the utmoſt limits of the earth, diſcovered fertile iſlands, nations altogether new, and powerful people that had been unknown to all antiquity.

PORTUGAL maintained her proſperity during the ſhort reign of the virtuous Edward. It increaſed under Alphonſus V, who thrice croſſed over into Afric, diſpoſſeſſed the Moors of places no leſs advantageous to commerce than the monarchy, and ſeconded with all his power, the deſigns of his immortal uncle. In the mean while, the Portugueſe purſuing their voyages, advanced towards the torrid zone, courſed along the coaſts of Guinea, and returned thence laden with gold and ivory.

If the progreſs of navigation met with ſome interruption towards the cloſe of the reign of Alphonſus V, who with the qualities of a hero, had the turn of mind of a projector, it revived under John II, ſirnamed *the Severe*, on account of his hatred againſt injuſtice, and who by immortal actions merited the title of *Great*. This prince, who reſumed the project of new diſcoveries with incredible ardour, ſeemed to have inſpired all his ſubjects with a paſſion for commerce and navigation. Fleets equipped at the expence of private men, and ſent out from every port, coaſted along that extenſive continent laying weſt of Afric, ſubjected kingdoms and founded flouriſhing colonies. Immenſe riches were the fruits of thoſe expeditions, and the name of Portugal became famous throughout the world.

Naples and Sicily.

Charles of Anjou was now one of the moſt powerful princes in Europe. With the ſovereignty of Naples and Sicily, he poſſeſſed Maine, Anjou, Provence and Avignon. At the ſame time, a marine, formed by his cares, ſeconded the operation of his land forces. But the loſs of Sicily; the captivity of his ſon; the inſurrection of the kingdom of Naples, on a ſudden darkened all his proſperity. He never recovered theſe ſhocks, but continually languiſhed afterwards, until at length, he died of a broken heart. Such was the end of this king, who is enrolled in the number of heroes, on account of his ſhining talents, but whom humanity can never dignify with the character of a great man.

Charles

CHARLES II, his ſon, was unfortunate in war, and admired in peace; he was, in a manner, the idol of his ſubjects. This prince will be ever remembered for his love and attention to learning, nor was he reprehenſible on any account, unleſs for his blind complaiſance to the pope. He acted rather like the miniſter of the pontiff than a great king. In this reign, the family of Anjou acquired a new crown.

CHARLES Martel, the eldeſt ſon of Charles II, took poſſeſſion of the throne of Hungary in right of his mother, the daughter and ſiſter to the late monarchs. His brother Robert, protected by the pope, remained at Naples, and made the people happy. This prince was a father to his ſubjects, the protector of virtue, the delight of men of learning, and had the happineſs to be aſſiſted, in his generous cares and endeavours, by a ſon, whom Italy conſidered as one of her moſt accompliſhed princes. 'Twas the death of this young hero which excited ſo much regret in Naples, and whoſe wiſe adminiſtration was ſo happily expreſſed by that ſublime emblem on his tomb, where a wolf and lamb are repreſented drinking out of the ſame cup.

THE example of her father and grandfather, the affection of the people, rich poſſeſſions, brilliancy of youth, exquiſite beauty, with every charm and accompliſhment, ſeemed to promiſe the happieſt reign to Jane I, but, by pernicious council, and a fatal ſenſibility of heart, ſhe ſunk into an abyſs of miſery.

HAVING

HAVING barbarouſly murdered a conſort that was indeed unworthy of her, ſhe ſaw her territories invaded, her capital taken, and herſelf menaced with the moſt dreadful puniſhment, by an implacable brother-in-law, who with the moſt ardent thirſt for revenge, had all the valour neceſſary to gratify his reſentment. She was obliged to fly into Provence with the accomplices of her guilt, and eſcaped death with difficulty, through the protection of the pope, which ſhe obtained by her charms, her eloquence, and the ſurrender of the county of Avignon. She was replaced on the the throne, ſtill beloved by her ſubjects, and ſtill a victim to the ſame weakneſs. Freſh troubles diſturbed her reign, new enemies attempted to rob her of the ſceptre, which ſhe alternately devoted to pleaſures and the fine arts. Being but ill aſſiſted by Lewis of Anjou, whoſe protection ſhe ſolicited, and betrayed by the friends in whom ſhe placed an imprudent confidence, ſhe fell by the hands of her relation Charles, of Duras, on whom ſhe had heaped numberleſs favours.

LEWIS, who advanced to diſpute the throne which the aſſaſſin had aſcended, was defeated by the abilities of his rival, and periſhed, together with the imprudent nobles who followed his fortunes. Ladiſlas having ſecured himſelf on the throne which his father had uſurped, turned his army againſt Dalmatia, of which he made himſelf maſter, marched into Hungary where he was crowned; thence returning into Italy, he quarrelled with the pope, attacked him, obliged him to fly, laid ſiege to Rome, and took that city, where he com-

committed many cruel actions; poiſon adminiſtered by a miſtreſs, terminated his ſplendid reign, which had exhauſted his people.

After him ſucceeded another Jane, as voluptuous as the firſt, but with leſs capacity, and more inconſtant; who ſometimes favoured the family of Arragon, at other times, declared for the houſe of Anjou, gave rights and privileges to both parties nearly equal, and ſowed the ſeeds of eternal diſcord between them. The people of Anjou triumphed a long time, but at length gave way before the princes of Arragon, who with valour, united wiſdom and policy, in which their adverſaries were ever deficient.

Alphonsus *the Magnanimous*, who was already king of Arragon and Sicily, became quiet poſſeſſor of Naples, and fixed his reſidence in that city. Here that great prince indulging his refined taſte for all human knowlege, invited the learned, revived letters, protected and encouraged the fine arts, laid open his treaſures to them, the fruits of his wiſdom, and made them, as it were, ſhare a throne, that his conqueſts and virtues had made reſpectable throughout all Europe.

Whilst two powerful families were contending in the ſouth of Italy, various petty tyrants deſtroyed the northern parts of that country. The factions of the Guelphs and Gibelins, ſpread diſcord in every city, continual battles were fought, and the moſt horrid vengeance and cruelty exerciſed. From this anarchy and chaos, ſeveral remarkable ſovereignities aroſe. The family of Eſt, became maſters of Modena and Ferrara; the Gonzagues

zagues founded a principality in Mantua; Viconti took poſſeſſion of Milan, to which having added all the cities of Lombardy, formed a conſiderable dutchy, which afterwards Perebards paſſed into the houſe of Sforſa. The houſe of Savoy extended along Mount Ferrat, and began to make a figure among the principal powers.

We muſt look back to very remote ages, if we would enquire into the origin of the princes, who at preſent ſway the ſceptre of Sardinia. That illuſtrious family we find ſovereigns ſo early as the tenth century. In the beginning of the eleventh, Bernard was maſter of Savoy and Marianne. Hurnbert *White Hands* added Valais and Chablais to the poſſeſſions of his anceſtors, which he obtained as a reward for his valour and ſervices to the empire. Otho became maſter of Suza, by marrying the heireſs of that county, to which he ſoon after added Piedmont, and the city of Turin.

Amedeus II, having the command of the paſſes of Italy and Germany, took advantage of the diſtreſſes of Henry IV, who was forced to ſolicit Gregory VII, and he would not ſuffer him to paſs the Alps until he had obtained *Bugey*. Humbert II, one of the wiſeſt princes of the twelfth century, augmented his dominions by the acquiſition of Tarantaiſe. Germany and Aſia admired the valour of Amedeus III, who, after his return from the cruſades, extended the limits of his poſſeſſions to the very gates of Geneva.

Humbert III, whoſe weakneſs interrupted the courſe of his proſperity, made amends for his want of capacity, by virtues which procured him the honour

honour of being enrolled in the calendar of ſaints. Thomas I, who poſſeſſed all the ſoul of his anceſtors, recovered their power, and being dignified with the title of vicar general of the empire, diſplayed a wiſdom in Italy that was very uncommon in thoſe times of extravagance and folly.

THE conſtancy of Amedeus IV, whom ſuperſtition could not ſeparate from the unfortunate hero, Frederick II, did no prejudice to the intereſts of that count of Savoy; he had prudence enough to preſerve tranquility in his dominions, in the midſt of general confuſion. The unhappy war which Boniface carried on againſt the marquis of Mount Ferrat, his captivity and death, while in priſon, ſeemed to threaten the downfall of his auguſt family; it recovered, however, by the courage of Peter, the avenger of his uncle, who carried his arms into the very heart of his enemies country. The city of Berue, charmed with his virtues, honoured him with the ſupreme authority.

PHILIP, who abdicated the archbiſhopric of Lyons, in order to ſucceed his brother, did not deviate from the great qualities of his predeceſſors. But in the beginning of the preſent epocha, Amedeus V, ſurpaſſed all his anceſtors, and eſtabliſhed the power of his family. He defended Rhodes, where he diſplayed immortal valour: he was a friend to emperors; a mediator between kings; the umpire of their diſputes; conſidered as the oracle of nations, and without any great degree of power attracted a reſpect which was denied to the moſt conſiderable monarchs. This great man acquired Breſſe by a happy alliance with a princeſs worthy

worthy of him; and his neighbours eager to teſtify their admiration, augmented his territories by the gift of ſeveral cities.

EDWARD, who ſignalized his courage under the ſtandards of France, did not ſhew himſelf unworthy of his heroic father and predeceſſors. The pacific Aimon, with a moſt mild government, exerciſed virtues which procured him a different ſpecies of glory, far preferable to that of war and conqueſt. The annals of this age exhibit nothing more glorious than the reign of Amedeus VI, ſo famous under the name of *Count Vert*. By his victories, wiſdom, abilities, and by the veneration he inſpired, he enlarged his dominions with the principalities of Coni, Cheraſque, Mondovi, and a part of the territory of Fribourg. The dauphin, who attacked him, having been exhauſted by continual defeats, was obliged to purchaſe a peace which he had ſolicited; and the emperor John Paleologue, being taken by the Bulgarians, found a deliverer in this hero, who flew to his defence.

AMEDEUS VII, in a reign of a few years, acquired the county of Nice, ſo important on account of its maritime ſituation. Under Amedeus VIII, Savoy obtained a new dignity in the title of Dutchy, with which the emperor honoured it. It was this Amedeus who renounced the ſceptre for an obſcure retreat, in order to enjoy pleaſure and tranquility; but afterwards (unfaithful to his philoſophic reſolutions) returned to the ſplendor which he had forſaken, and under the name of Felix V, aſcended the throne of the church. Reſtored to wiſdom, he once more laid aſide the pomp

of

of ſupreme power, and under the purple of a cardinal, reſumed the refined pleaſures of a private gentleman.

THE revolutions in the dutchy of Milan, furniſhed his ſon Lewis with an opportunity of augmenting his dominions. Amedeus IX, heir to Charlotte of Luſignan, was ſtripped of the kingdom of Cyprus: his inconteſtible rights produced nothing but the honour of a title, which added more ſplendor to his family. They acquired a much greater degree of luſtre by the boundleſs charity and benevolence of this prince. He was a father to the orphan, a protector to the weak, and a ſure refuge to all the unfortunate.

THE territories of the pope being deprived of the preſence of the ſovereign, by the removal of the pontifical ſee to Avignon, were in the moſt dreadful confuſion. The more powerful families ſeized upon the caſtles, where they formed ſo many different ſovereignties. Thoſe nobles, who were implacable enemies to each other, carried on continual wars, which exhauſted the people, and deſtroyed the country.

THESE diſorders produced ſwarms of robbers, who iſſued from all the adjacent provinces. Rome, more agitated than the cities which lay round her, reſembled leſs the capital of a ſovereign ſtate than a den of thieves, who knew no other laws but thoſe of violence. The inhabitants divided into twenty different factions, marched under as many leaders, whoſe fury died the ſtreets and ſquares with blood, and completed the deſtruction of thoſe monuments of their anceſtors glory, which had eſcaped

eſcaped the rage of barbarians. The Columnas and Urſini, the moſt powerful, as well as the moſt illuſtrious Roman families, were at the head of thoſe factions, and their hatred inflamed the rage and animoſity of the parties.

WHILE the great were thus deſtroying the very vitals of their ſtate, a man of the loweſt condition, reſolved to cloſe up all her wounds. With a warm and active imagination, heated by the peruſal of ancient authors, an enthuſiaſtic ſpirit, inflamed by the example of the magiſtrates of the commonwealth, and eloquence without taſte or ornament, but vehement and pictureſque, qualified Nicholas Rienzi to govern the multitude. He privately formed a plan to deliver Rome from ſlavery, and reſtore her to happineſs and tranquility.

WITHOUT protection or aſſiſtance, without any previous intrigue or preparation, he appeared in the midſt of the market-place, crying out to the people to follow him to the capitol. Here he gave them a lively picture of the glory of the ancient Romans; this he contraſted with the deſcription of the evils that afflicted the moderns: he recommended, as the only remedy for thoſe afflictions, the re-eſtabliſhment of the tribuneſhip, a magiſtracy which, he aſſured them, had ſo long been the protector of the liberty, the ſoul of the proſperity, and the origin of the ſplendor of their country. The people received the project with ſhouts of applauſe, immediately conferred the dignity of tribune on the orator, and vowed obedience to his commands.

RIENZI

RIENZI being thus inveſted with a magiſtracy, formerly ſo venerable, and maſter of the will of a people blindly devoted to his orders, entirely changed the city, and made regulations that were worthy of the great men whoſe title he had aſſumed. Rome appeared with a new face. The robbers were puniſhed; the nobility made ſubmiſſive to authority; the factions diſperſed; tranquility was reſtored, and the people of Rome imagined the happy times of the Catos were revived.

THE provinces felt the ſalutary adminiſtration of the tribune; all Italy applauded his prudence; kings ſent him ambaſſadors, and the pontiffs extolled him to the ſkies.

WE find ſome men whom nature has endowed with a lively imagination, capable of conceiving the moſt exalted ideas, and of reducing them to practice with ſucceſs, but to whom ſhe denies that ſtrength of reaſon, which alone can ultimately ſecure the execution of great deſigns.

THE tribune ſuddenly elevated to an atmoſphere ſo different from that in which he had before moved, could not look down with compoſure to the immenſe depth of his original obſcurity. In three months his head was turned; the moſt aſtoniſhing wiſdom was followed by the moſt extravagant follies: pomp and ſhew ſucceeded to moderation, intemperance to frugality, the moſt inſolent pride to affability, and the cruelties of a tyrant to the equity of a deliverer. After being expelled with indignation by the very people who adorned him with the purple, and obliged to wander from court to court, he was at length given

to the pope, who kept him in priſon three years. Adverſity, which ſeemed to have reſtored him to virtue, excited compaſſion in his favour. It was imagined, that after being inſtructed in the ſchool of misfortune, he was become ſenſible of the danger of vice, and would conduct himſelf in a manner to deſerve admiration.

THE court of Avignon, influenced by theſe hopes, ſet him at liberty; and, after loading him with favours, ſent him back to Rome with the title of governor. They received him in triumph, and expected happineſs from a man whoſe ſufferings had obliterated his crimes. But Rienzi ſoon revived the memory of them, or rather he effaced it by new exceſſes. After governing for two months like a tyrant, no leſs debauched than cruel, he was torn to pieces by that populace who ſo lately revered him as the idol of their expectations.

THE confuſion was now greater than ever; the people were under no check or reſtraint; the inſolence of the great was redoubled, and the pope was on the point of loſing the rich patrimony of St. Peter for ever. But under Innocent VI, Cardinal Albornos, who with the virtues of an eccleſiaſtic, poſſeſſed the talents of a commander, expelled the tyrants, and reduced the cities under obedience to the pontiffs, who, by their return, completed the ſubmiſſion of the capital.

Genoa. GENOA appeared the firſt maritime power in Europe. That republic poſſeſſed iſlands in the Archipelago. She was miſtreſs of Capha at the extremity of the Black Sea; ſhared the authority in

in the city of Acre, and to the conqueſt of Sardinia ſoon after added the greater part of the iſland of Corſica. Michael Paleologue looked upon this city as one of the props of his empire. It was with the Genoeſe fleets the kings of Arragon made a part of their conqueſts, and the kings of Caſtile diſperſed the Moors. Almoſt all the admirals of the fourteenth century were citizens of Genoa; the eaſtern ſeas were covered with her ſquadrons. Piſa attempted to ſtruggle with the Genoeſe, and terminated her diſtreſſes by treaties no leſs fatal than diſgraceful. They gave laws to a king of Cyprus, who offended them, and obliged him to ſubmit to a tribute.

THEY found the Venetians a more formidable enemy. The quarrels which aroſe between thoſe two republics, coſt them both many bloody conflicts. But victory, after being a long time doubtful, at length terminated in favour of the Genoeſe. Their admiral Doria having diſperſed the fleets of Venice, advanced to the very iſlands that formed the city, and obliged thoſe rivals of his country to beg the moſt ſhameful peace. The conqueror, deaf to their prayers, ſhewed them the flames with which he was ready to conſume their capital.

WHILE the Genoeſe flag triumphed, Genoa herſelf was a prey to ſedition, and exhibited a picture of the moſt unhappy and diſordered government. The nobles were in arms againſt the people, whom they oppreſſed, the people maſſacred the nobles. The powerful families, animated by the moſt inveterate hatred, divided the

nation, and drained its blood in their contentions, while the Guelphs and Gibelins added to the rage of foreign factions, domeſtic feuds and diſſenſions.

THE Genoeſe, without any order or ſettled plan, daily changed the form of adminiſtration, and ſaw no other way to avoid entire ruin but by ſubmitting their necks to the yoke of a maſter. Their inconſtancy was no leſs conſpicuous in their choice of ſovereigns. At one time they elected a doge, on whom they conferred a ſupreme authority: another time, magiſtrates were created, to whom they denied every kind of power. They called in the French, and drove them out: they ſubmitted to the duke of Milan, and murdered his attendants: they returned to the French, quitted them, and after receiving them a third time, put them to the ſword. Sometimes the moſt abject ſlaves; at other times the moſt furious enthuſiaſts in the cauſe of liberty, ignorant of what they were, or would wiſh to be.

THOSE repeated ſhocks and diſorders exhauſted the ſtrength of the ſtate, the greater part of their colonies was loſt, their fleets diſappeared, and towards the cloſe of the fifteenth century, Genoa was a mere languiſhing and conſumptive ſtate, and remarkable only for the diſorders with which ſhe was convulſed.

Venice. THE fortune of Venice was quite different. Her power at firſt declined. Lewis the *Great* ſtripped her of part of Dalmatia; the princes of Italy made war againſt her with various ſucceſs: an important revolution in the government produced the greateſt troubles. The doge, Gradinigo,

nigo, deprived the people of the ſhare they had in the adminiſtration, and by force as well as policy eſtabliſhed a complete ariſtocracy. The frequent conſpiracies, occaſioned by this alteration, augmented the confuſion. The eſtabliſhment of the council of ten, at whoſe dreadful tribunal, even innocence itſelf was made to tremble, and the diſcontent which was almoſt general, expoſed the ſtate to the greateſt dangers.

THE Genoeſe, implacable rivals of the Venetians, taking advantage of their circumſtances, renewed the war, in which they intereſted all the neighbours of Venice. The Venetians, after many defeats, were inſulted in the very gulph, and the total deſtruction of their navy ſeemed to portend the ruin of the republic. Venice beſieged by an inexorable victor, her habitations in flames, and nothing but approaching ruin before her eyes, ſeemed to have loſt all her pride and reſolution, till at length, a generous deſpair, awakened by the inſolence of her enemies, giving a turn to her misfortunes, victory more than ever flouriſhed under the flag of St. Mark. The navy was repaired; the arſenal re-eſtabliſhed; briliant ſucceſſes obliterated the very traces of misfortune, and reſtored a conſtant ſeries of proſperity.

THE Genoeſe driven from their gulph, purſued into their very harbours, were diſabled from ever diſputing an equality. Dalmatia was taken from the Hungarians, and reſtored to the republic. The tyrants of the northern parts of Italy ſerved as ornaments to the triumph, of thoſe happy

republicans, or were ſacrificed to their vengeance. They now ſaw, for the firſt time, their dominions extended on the weſtern ſide. Vicenza, Verona, Padua, and many other cities, which at preſent form ſo conſiderable a part of their poſſeſſions, were either conquered by their arms, or made a voluntary ſubmiſſion to their empire. The iſlands of Corfou and Cephalonia admiring the wiſdom of their government, ſolicited the happineſs of obeying them.

In fine, the iſland of Cyprus, ſo famous ſo rich, and ſo fertile in reſources, was taken from the heireſs of Luſignan, and became a province to the republic. At the ſame time their fleets ſailed to the port of Alexandria, in ſearch of gold, ſilks, and precious ſtones, and the ſpices of India, which the ſultan of Egypt tranſported through the Red-ſea, and of which the Venetians were a long time the ſole factors. Amazing opulence, the fruits of a wiſe adminiſtration and a well regulated commerce, diffuſed proſperity through every member of the ſtate, and gave the greateſt vigour to the whole body. Venice had forty thouſand well diſciplined troops under her command; her arſenal was as well furniſhed as any in the univerſe; her ſenate was the wiſeſt council in Europe; and her numerous fleets in the mediterranean ſeas, united the double empire of commerce and arms.

Florence. Florence, with a power leſs extenſive, exhibited a more briliant appearance. The liberty which ſhe had acquired, having been cheriſhed by aſtoniſhing induſtry, placed her marine in a moſt

moſt flouriſhing condition. A wiſe adminiſtration that checked licentiouſneſs, and removed oppreſſion, had taken from her governors the power of injury, while it left them all the liberty of doing good. Illuſtrious families enriched by traffic, devoted their wealth and power to the proſperity of the ſtate. The Strozzi, the Pazzi, but particularly the Medecis, whoſe name will be ever revered in the hiſtory of the human mind, diſplayed every effort of genius in the ſervice of their country. Coſmo the *Great*, in the condition of a private trader, was the friend of kings, the protector of many ſovereigns, an object of veneration with the greateſt powers of Aſia; conteſted alone with the republic of Venice for the ſuperiority of commerce and riches, and brought immenſe wealth to the banks of the Arno, from every quarter of the world.

His treaſures were *poured* out for the glory of his country, for navigation, the encouragement of induſtry, the reformation of the legiſlature, and the perfection of government. He invited all arts, encouraged every talent, and brought to light all branches of uſeful knowlege. Architecture, painting and ſculpture, aroſe to perfection under his auſpices, and made Florence the moſt beautiful city in Europe, while learning and ſcience, which he cheriſhed and admired, ſpread her ſuperior fame throughout the univerſe.

Envy, enraged at the glory of this great man, procured his baniſhment; but his abſence ſoon made his fellow citizens truly ſenſible of his ineſtimable value. He was recalled by the una-

nimous voice of the people, who committed the reigns of government to his management; and after having devoted his power to increaſe the glory and happineſs of his countrymen, he obtained, from their grateful affection, the title of *Father of his Country*. This was engraved on his tomb, by a public decree.

FLORENCE having given the ſame authority to the ſon which ſhe had conferred on the father, ſaw her ſplendor decline under this prince, who was unable to ſupport the great deſigns of his predeceſſor. Under his grand-children, a conſpiracy was formed to extirminate the whole family of the Medicis, which was on the point of involving the city in confuſion, had not the affection of the Florentines triumphed over the intrigues of the pope, the hatred of the archbiſhop, and the faction of the Pazzi, and ſaved Lawrence, the worthy grandſon of the great Coſmo. In ſpight of all the obſtacles occaſioned by ſeveral inſurrections, he preſerved his authority, and exerted it only in reſtoring the happineſs and ſplendor of his country. He long ſtruggled to maintain it in the midſt of the moſt dreadful ſtorms, and ſeeing it ready to ſink under the weight of ſuperior force, he gave Florence an immortal proof of his love in ſurrendering himſelf up to the king of Naples, who was his particular enemy, as a victim for her preſervation.

THE monarch, ſtruck with ſuch heroic virtue and generoſity, became the friend of Lawrence, and the protector of his country. Lawrence, at his return, was received in triumph, as the ſa-

viour

ſaviour of the ſtate, and envy proſtrate at his feet, held down her guilty head, nor longer dared to utter a complaint. All Italy admired the wiſdom of this prince; ſovereigns referred their diſputes to his deciſion, and Florence, quiet and happy by his benificence, became the centre of commerce, learning, and the fine arts.

Switzerland.

WHILE Genoa loſt her independance with the empire of the ſea; while Venice ſaw her nobility trampling on the rights of the people and exerciſing the moſt abſolute authority; and while the admiration of Florence for the Medicis was forging chains with which that family was one day to enſlave her; a poor and obſcure people found means to acquire and preſerve true liberty. Switzerland is a heap of mountains interſected by pleaſant vallies with lakes that yield abundance of fiſh, and rich paſtures covered with herds and flocks.

THIS country for above twenty ages has been inhabited by a plain, generous, and brave people; enemies to oſtentation, and lovers of labour and ſimplicity, with no inclination to make ſlaves of others or to bow their own necks to the yoke of a maſter.

FROM the reſtoration of the empire in the Weſt, this nation formed part of the Germanic body; not as ſubjects but as allies, who acknowleged the emperor as a protector rather than a ſovereign. The effects of the general confuſion, occaſioned by the misfortunes of the throne of Suabia, were felt by this people. The nobles and ſome prelates, encouraged by the example of the German nobility, had ſeized upon the caſtles,

caſtles, and endeavoured to oppreſs the liberties of the nation. But the generous Swiſs ſhook off the yoke, and dyed it with the blood of their tyrants.

Rodolph of Hapſbourg, whoſe aſſiſtance they had ſolicited, having powerfully ſupported their efforts, they with gratitude declared him the Protector, and in ſome ſort the chief of their country. They even permitted him to ſend reſidents to the different cities to preſide in their aſſemblies and give them advice. The wiſe Rodolph did not abuſe this flattering privilege; but the deſire of extending his power, ſo natural to man, ſeduced his ſon Albert I.

That emperor wiſhing to make ſubjects of the Swiſs, and not being able to perſuade them to a compliance, took advantage of circumſtances in order to enſlave them.

The miniſters of this Prince were not only governors but tyrants, who trampled on the laws of the country and thoſe of nature. A generous people are never far removed from liberty when the yoke of ſlavery grows oppreſſively burthenſome. Their deliverance is at hand the moment contempt is added to oppreſſion.

Grisler, governor of Uri, had ordered a long pole to be fixed in the middle of the market-place, in the principal town of the Canton; on the top of which was placed a cap that he had worn on public days. He commanded all thoſe that paſſed that way, to ſalute the cap on pain of death, in caſe of diſobedience.

WILLIAM TELL, a citizen of great virtue, and full of that noble ſpirit and confidence which it inſpires, diſdained to comply with ſo capricious a command; being taken by the guards of the governor and carried before his tribunal, he was condemned to die and on the point of ſuffering, when Griſler was informed that this citizen was the moſt expert archer in the whole country. Griſler having a curioſity to make trial of his ſkill, ſent for the ſon of Tell, and fixing him in the middle of the market-place, with an apple on his head, ordered the father to ſtrike the fruit down with his arrow. Tell exclaimed againſt the propoſal, and ſolicited the moſt cruel death rather than riſk the horrid attempt. Griſler made anſwer that if he either refuſed to obey or miſſed his aim, he would directly hang him and his ſon. The wretched father, full of deſpair and horror, bent his bow and fortunately hit the apple. He was then conducted to the governor, who praiſed his dexterity and pardoned him: but perceiving that he had an arrow which he endeavoured to conceal under his coat, Griſler aſked the reaſon why he had furniſhed himſelf with a a ſecond arrow. Tyrant! he replied, this ſhould have pierced thy heart if I had killed my ſon with the firſt. Indignation then ſeized the multitude aſſembled on the occaſion, nothing was to be heard but ſhouts and cries on all ſides, that terrified the governor from ſtriking the victim; he kept him confined for the preſent, with a reſolution to ſend him to a caſtle, where he might put him to death without any fear of danger.

Tell

Tell, while he was leading to the place of execution, found means to break his fetters, and pierce the tyrant with the very arrow that had liked to have proved ſo fatal to his child. After this he eſcaped to a neighbouring canton, where he animated the people againſt their oppreſſors by a lively picture of the injuſtice and misfortunes under which they ſuffered.

While the voice of Tell was perſuading the people to vengeance, Verner Stanfacher of the canton of Schwits, Gautier Furts of the canton of Uri, and Arnold de Melchtall of that of Undervald, were concerting meaſures to reſtore liberty.

In the ſeveral cities where they reſided, they brought over ſuch men as ſeemed beſt diſpoſed to ſecond their deſign, and agreed, that on the firſt of January, the conſpirators, under the pretence of paying their reſpects to the governors, ſhould enter the caſtles, put the garriſons to the ſword, and take poſſeſſion of the places. This reſolution was concealed with the moſt profound ſecrecy, and executed with the moſt intrepid valour. The governors were ſacrificed; the Auſtrians driven out, their miniſters baniſhed, and every monument of tyranny deſtroyed.

After this, the three cantons immediately entered into a ſolemn league, by which all the men, women, and children, bound themſelves by oaths to ſhed the laſt drop of their blood, in defence of the invaluable bleſſing which they had now recovered. All the forces of Auſtria were not able to withſtand their courage; and 1300

peaſants

peaſants having routed at Mortgaten 20,000 Auſtrians under the command of Duke Leopold, ſecured the liberties of their country for ever.

THIS aſtoniſhing ſucceſs rouzed the neighbouring cities, and made them eager to join the firſt. In the ſpace of half a century moſt of the cantons were united in the ſame confederacy, and formed under the name of Swiſs, a reſpectable commonwealth, whoſe independance the Germanic body was obliged to acknowlege. This people, till then in obſcurity and little known, gained as it were a new exiſtence with their freedom. The princes of the houſe of Auſtria, who attacked them with all their power, after being conſtantly repulſed and defeated, found themſelves attacked in their turn, and were at length obliged publicly to renounce all claim to any degree of authority over them.

THEY were protectors to the council of Bale, and prevented Lewis XI, from diſturbing that aſſembly. The dukes of Lorrain found in them faithful allies, who defended them againſt a powerful and dangerous enemy. The laſt duke of Burgundy, that warlike and brave commander, who had ſuch extenſive poſſeſſions, and who marched againſt thoſe people with all his forces, was defeated in three pitched battles, in the laſt of which he loſt his life; and with him his name and family were extinguiſhed. Such amazing ſucceſſes rendered Switzerland formidable, and from this time, all ſovereigns have been deſirous of ſoldiers from that country.

SUCH

Such was the riſe of a nation, who for four centuries has preſerved her independance, in the midſt of formidable powers with which ſhe is ſurrounded. She has no gold, no ſtrong holds, no commerce, and little policy; a middling ſhare of induſtry; but ſhe has for her defence rough mountains which cover her on all ſides, her poverty that is no temptation to tyrants, a flouriſhing population which ſhe owes to the ſimplicity and purity of her manners, great harmony and vigilance, bodies inured to labour, hands accuſtomed to arms from their infancy, noble hearts, and the moſt unconquerable averſion to the very name of ſlavery.

Empire of Greece.

The empire of Greece at length was fallen under the repeated blows ſhe had received. The great talents of Michael Paleologue had ſupported it; but during the reign of his ſon Andronicus, who did not poſſeſs equal abilities, the formidable dynaſty of the Turks, which proved ſo fatal to his ſucceſſors, was eſtabliſhed, having been driven from the throne in his latter days by a grandſon of his own name, whom he had crowned, he preſerved his life only by devoting it to the obſcurity of a cloiſter. The young Andronicus, unable to make head againſt the fortune of the Ottomans, left, after a reign of misfortunes, two infant ſons, under the guardianſhip of Cantacuſenes, who endeavoured to rob his wards of their inheritance. The ſtate, after being weakened by the diviſions which the attempts of the regent had occaſioned, and united under John Paleologue, who drove out his guardian, experienced new misfortunes

misfortunes. The Turks put to ſea in Genoeſe ſhips, paſſed the Boſphorus, and having overcome the legions, ravaged the territory round the capital. The ſtorm increaſed under Manuel; Conſtantinople was beſiged by the ſultan, and eſcaped only by a fortunate diverſion which obliged the Turks to return to Aſia.

THE misfortunes of thoſe formidable enemies gave the empire time to breath, and afforded ſome tranquility to John II, but his fierce rival ſoon recovered, and returned to the attack with greater ardour than ever. The unfortunate emperor flattering himſelf that he ſhould procure infallible relief for his ſubjects by an union of both churches, went in perſon to Florence to cement it. Abandoned by the Weſt, he derived nothing from his policy but the hatred of his ſubjects, who preferred the authority of the Turban to that of the Tiara. In fine, Conſtantine VIII, after ſtruggling with his unhappy deſtiny, with all the courage of a great king, being betrayed by his own people, deſerted by Europe, and beſiged by a victorious ſultan, he fell ſword in hand on the walls of his country, which he had defended like a hero. With him periſhed the throne of Greece, the auguſt name of the Cæſars, and the glory of an empire that had ſubſiſted 1500 years.

AT this time, the empire of the Turks commenced in Europe. Let us conſider for a moment the aſtoniſhing family who laid the foundation of it. Ottoman, deſcended from the illuſtrious houſe of the Selgiucides, was born a ſubject, and reduced to the condition of a private ſoldier; he roſe by his

Empire of the Turks.

his valour to the command of the army of the ſultan, and obtained, as a reward for his ſervices, a ſmall city of Bythynia. Orcan, his ſon, to this inheritance added Phrygia, Myſia, Caria, and all the provinces bordering the Helleſpont and Black Sea.

Amurat I, having completed the reduction of Aſia-Minor, croſſed over into Europe, and after conquering the parts which lay contiguous to the Streights, fixed his reſidence at Andrianople. Bazajet I, ſirnamed the thunderbolt, on account of his activity and courage, ſubdued Theſſaly, Macedon, Bulgaria, and Phocis, and was ready to lay ſiege to Conſtantinople, had not a cruſade raiſed againſt him, forced him from his conqueſts, and called him into Hungary, where his abilities threw chains over the flower of the French nobility, and opened an extenſive field to his victories. The ſudden news of an extraordinary revolution now alarmed him.

Tamerlane, from the northern extremity of Aſia, had fallen upon the ſouthern parts, and was actually attacking the dominions of Bajazet. The haughty ſultan flew to repel the Tartar, who was advancing at the head of an immenſe body of forces. In the plains of Angoury, in the midſt of Phrygia, a battle, unfortunate for the Turks, covered the field with fifty thouſand ſlain, and made a captive of the hero.

The Ottoman family ſeemed cruſhed by this bloody defeat. Their vaſt territories became a prey to the victor, and the children of Bajazet, who were no leſs diſunited than unſucceſsful, deſtroyed

ſtroyed each other, in contending for the wretched remains of their inheritance. Iſa, who firſt took poſſeſſion of them, was killed by his brother Soliman. The latter, after raiſing his family a little, and recovering ſome provinces, fell by the dagger of his brother Muſa. Muſa himſelf was ſcarce ſeated on the throne, when he was taken off by Mahomet I, the laſt of the ſons of Bajazet.

The death of Tamerlane gave the new ſultan an opportunity to recover the provinces of Aſia. His ſon Amurat II, finding himſelf in a condition to reſume the projects of his grandfather, paſſed the Helleſpont, and began with ſeizing upon Theſſalonica. His troops ruſhed like a torrent over the empire of Greece, and obliged the emperor of Conſtantinople to aſſiſt them in their conqueſts. The valour of Huniades, for ſome time, put a ſtop to the progreſs of the ſultan; but Ladiſlas having broken the truce which he had ſolemnly ſworn to obſerve, provoked his enemies to turn their arms once more againſt the Weſt.

Amurat cruſhed the chriſtian army in Hungary, and the conſequences of the victory fixed the Ottoman greatneſs. 'Twas this ſultan that inſtituted the famous military body of the Janiſſaries, who trained up from their tendereſt years in the moſt laborious exerciſes of war, under the immediate eyes of the prince, have no knowlege either of their family or country, no other dependance but the ſultan, no object except his throne, no proſpect but his glory. Mahomet II, deſcended from ſo many heroes, eclipſed them all. He began his reign with the taking of Conſtantinople,

and the deſtruction of the empire of which that city was the capital. He attacked the empire of Trebiſond, and aboliſhed it with the ſame celerity. Twelve kingdoms ſubmitted to his yoke; twenty iſlands of the Archipelago were ſubdued by his troops; he beſieged two hundred cities in perſon, and forced them to ſurrender; from the Euphrates to the Adriatic ſea, every thing gave way before the arms of this conqueror. Rhodes owed her preſervation to the prodigies performed by her knights. Italy was ravaged, and Rome trembled for the capital.

This prince, who was one of the moſt enlightened of the age, applied himſelf to the ſciences, cultivated all the fine arts, and endeavoured to prevent learning from deſerting her ancient ſeat at the ſight of the Alcoran. This aſtoniſhing monarch wanted nothing but virtue to make him one of the greateſt men that ever appeared. With conduct, activity and courage, equal to Alexander and Cæſar, he was more impenetrable, and inferior to them in nothing but humanity. Two ſons conteſted the inheritance of the conqueror. Zizim the elder, who was more worthy to ſucceed him, urged in vain the right of ſeniority; the weak Bajazet having gained over the Janiſſaries, was raiſed to the throne, and a deciſive battle proved favourable to this unworthy ſucceſſor of Mahomet. The unfortunate Zizim, reduced to ſolicit an aſylum among the enemies of his name, became a ſupplicant to the chriſtians whom he hated, and to princes, who making a traffic of his perſon, ſold his liberty to his brother.

ALBANIA, ſo well known formerly by the name of Epirus, compoſed of rough and inacceſſible rocks, and a barren ſoil, containing an extent of twenty leagues, in the fourteenth century formed a little kingdom, which the wars of the emperors of Greece and the Bulgarians had produced. Amurat II, having conquered all the northern parts of Greece, eaſily ſubjected this ſtate, on account of its vicinity. John Caſtriot, was not only obliged to do homage to the ſultan, but to give up his four ſons as hoſtages to anſwer for his fidelity. Scanderberg Albania, formerly Epirus

AFTER the death of Caſtriot, the ambition of the Ottoman, unſatisfied with a ſimple tribute, took away every ſhadow of royalty, and apprehenſive that the children of Caſtriot, might hereafter claim the rights of their inheritance, put three of them to death.

JOHN, the youngeſt of the four, was incapable of feeling his misfortune, and giving no fear or miſtruſt to the ſultan, became an object of his compaſſion. Amurat ordered him to be educated in the Mahometan religion, with all the care and attention ſuitable to his rank. The extraordinary talents he ſhewed in his earlieſt years charmed the ſultan. His activity, courage, and prudence, accompanied with prodigious ſtrength of body, made the young Albanian excite the admiration of the whole army. By an extraordinary action, he acquired the moſt eminent dignities in the ſtate, with the ſirname of *Scanderberg*, which ſignifies Lord Alexander; a name which the ſultan gave him to denote that he poſſeſſed all the qualities of the hero of Macedon.

THERE are ſome injuries that no time can efface, and for which no favour can attone. Scanderberg, under the appearance of a blind zeal for the enemy of his family, concealed the moſt lively reſentment. The misfortunes of his father, the precipitate death of his brothers, the uſurpation of his throne, the oppreſſion of his people under the tyranny of baſhaws, were objects ever preſent to his imagination, and animated him with the moſt ardent deſire of revenge; obliged to cover his deſigns with the moſt profound caution, he was continually ſtudying how to execute them with ſucceſs, and watched every opportunity that might promote his purpoſe. Being informed that a miniſter at ſome diſtance from court held the ſeales of the empire in conjunction with himſelf, Scanderberg flew to the place, and with his ſcymetar in his hand, compelled the officer to ſeal an order directed to the governor of the capital of Albany, commanding him to deliver up the citadel. After this he haſtened to Croie, and being ſeconded by ſome friends, with whom he carried on a ſecret correſpondence, he ſeized upon the caſtle, and the gates of the city. He then made himſelf known to the inhabitants, ſhewed them his pretenſions, declaring that he abjured the mahometan worſhip, which he had in abhorrence from the firſt moment he had known what it was: he aſſured them he would be their deliverer, if they had but courage to break their chains. Affection for the family of their ancient ſovereign, hatred againſt their oppreſſors, the reputation of Scanderberg, the fortitude and confidence he ſhewed, all conſpired

ſpired to charm the people. With ſhouts of applauſe and joy they acknowleged him king, and ſwore to defend him with their lives. The blood of the garriſon was ſhed, and became a pledge of eternal hatred againſt the ſultan. The neighbouring cities imitating the capital, in a few days all Albania was reſtored to its legitimate ſovereign. Scanderberg at the ſame time having diſciplined his ſubjects, and trained them for war, formed a little army united by common danger and love for their commander. In the mean while Amurat, foaming with rage, at the head of numerous forces, who had conquered ſo many provinces, advanced with haſty ſtrides to puniſh a prince whom he ſtiled a perfidious and ungrateful traitor. Europe looked upon Scanderberg as loſt, but by prudent manœvres judicious retreats, ſucceſsful ſkirmiſhes, always happily timed, he diſputed his ground, harraſſed the enemy, cut off their proviſions, and weakened them inſenſibly. At length, forced by the great ſuperiority of numbers, to retreat to his capital, he there maintained that famous ſiege, which would have appeared incredible, had not all the annals of the age confirmed its authenticity,

The haughty Amurat, who had triumphed over ſo many kingdoms, was ſtopped for ſeveral years before the little city of Croie. He ſaw his valiant Janiſſaries, the moſt formidable troops in the univerſe, frequently repulſed or defeated by a handful of deſperate men, who ſeemed to have imbibed all the ſpirit of their commander. The pain of this diſappointment deeply afflicted the ſultan,

ſultan, and inſenſibly preyed upon his ſpirits. The vexation and ſhame he felt at not being able to puniſh a prince who had not the twentieth part of his territories, at length broke his heart.

MAHOMET II, quickly reſumed the project of his father, and marched againſt Scanderberg with armies that were the terror of Europe and Aſia. There are few objects ſo ſtriking as this part of the life of that famous conqueror. The ſovereign of no more than twenty leagues, contending againſt a hero who had more than eight hundred under his authority, fought, defeated, and drove him out of Albania; and not content with having made ſo glorious and ſurprizing a defence, he purſued and attacked this powerful enemy wherever he attempted to turn his arms: he was at the ſame time the protector of Greece, Italy, and of Venice; the idol of the chriſtians, and the terror of the muſſulmen. Mahomet becoming maſter of Albania by the death of this aſtoniſhing man, made it a duty to honour his memory, and the Turks to this day viſit his tomb, and pay a ſort of veneration to his aſhes.

Rhodes. THE knights of St. John diſplayed wonders. They defended Acre, the only city the chriſtians then held in Aſia againſt numberleſs beſiegers, and in the courſe of the ſiege performed many actions of valour that would have aſtoniſhed the Cocles. Being at length forced to abandon a place that was nothing but a heap of ruins and aſhes, they put to ſea, and in their unſettled way of life, became more terrible than ever. They purſued the enemies of their worſhip every where,

dyed

dyed the Archipelago with their blood, and ſtruck terror into all the Mahometan iſlands. They at length ſettled at Rhodes, which they took ſword in hand, and made that city one of the moſt powerful bulwarks of the Mediterranean.

THE Ottomans had no enemies they dreaded more, and thoſe imperious deſtroyers of ſo many kingdoms and ſtates fled before a handful of knights, who were maſters of an inconſiderable iſland. Mahomet II, collected all his maritime forces againſt them, and ſent his braveſt officers to beſiege them. The Turks in vain exerted all their efforts of valour and experience. The grand maſter Aubriſon at the head of his knights, blaſted the laurels of the immortal ſultan; and the Ottomans, after a ſiege of ſix months, were obliged to retreat to their ſhips and depart, leaving the ſhores covered with the bodies of half their companions. Mahomet, though he had ſo many victories to conſole him, forgot his former ſucceſſes in the remembrance of this defeat; the thoughts of which ſo far engroſſed his dying moments, that he ordered thoſe words to be engraved on his tomb: *I was reſolved to take Rhodes and conquer Italy.* So ſplendid a triumph ſpread the glory of the order over every quarter of our hemiſphere; and Rhodes, by the valour of her knights, became more illuſtrious in modern hiſtory, than ever ſhe had been in ancient times by her power and wonders.

CONTINUAL revolutions now varied the ſcene on the theatre of Aſia. The grandſons of Ganges who

Aſia.

who, ſpreading their dominion from the eaſtern extremities of the continent to the Boſphorus, at firſt exhibited the greateſt empire, perhaps, that ever appeared in our hemiſphere. The Turks ſoon after retook the weſtern provinces, and drove the Tartars towards the Eaſt. China afterwards ſhook off the yoke of thoſe conquerors, and replaced their family of their ancient maſters on the throne. Tamerlane then came with new tribes, equally numerous, leſs barbarous, and more valiant than the firſt; and having conquered Perſia and the empire of the Mogul, his triumph left not a ſhadow of the conqueſts of Ganges. He ſubdued the great Bajazet, and founded a new empire that extended from the Helleſpont to the Ganges. His poſterity, who divided thoſe numerous ſtates between them, loſt the greateſt part of them in their turn. The Turks grew more terrible than ever, drove the Tartars to the very banks of the Euphrates, and made themſelves maſters of all lower Aſia: in the mean while Uſſum Caſſan ſignalized himſelf by a memorable revolution. This Turcoman having been appointed governor of Armenia by the princes of Tartary, ſhook off the yoke of his maſters, and drove them out of Perſia, of which he took poſſeſſion. He was attacked and defeated by Mahomet II, but ſtill unſhaken, ſtill ſupporting himſelf by inexhauſtible reſources, he founded a throne on which his deſcendants have maintained themſelves to this hour.

Africa. In Africa, the firſt object we meet is Egypt, where the ſoldiery of the Mamelucs, though ſtrangers

gers, and agitated by continual diſſenſions, have, however, preſerved their extraordinary authority. The ſultans elected by thoſe ſoldiers, make a figure among the moſt powerful monarchs upon earth, and are the richeſt princes of the mahometans. Being placed on the iſthmus that is waſhed by the ſeas of Europe, Africa and Aſia, they made their capital a kind of rendezvous, where the productions of three parts of the world were exchanged; and this commerce, the moſt conſiderable in thoſe times, brought immenſe riches to the court of Cairo.

Origin of the piratic ſtates.

ALONG the coaſts, ſeveral petty ſtates began to appear without form or laws, compoſed of idle adventurers, united by injuſtice and violence, rather than citizens collected for the ſake of ſociety. Such are Tripoli and Tunis, already famous for their piratical depredations; ſuch is Algiers, a city, even then conſiderable, whoſe fleets began to diſturb the trade of the Mediterranean. Thoſe hateful dens of robbers, alike reproachable to the muſſulmen who protected them, and to the chriſtians who ſuffered them, continually vary their form of government, ſometimes giving way to all the licentious confuſion of anarchy, at other times ſubmitting to tyrants whom they ſacrifice as ſoon as they are crowned.

The kings of Morocco, who were maſters of the weſtern coaſts, gradually loſt the greateſt part of their force and ſtrength. The repeated defeats of different armies ſent into Spain had conſiderably leſſenend the number of their people; the fate of

Granada ſhut them out of Europe; the ſucceſſes of the Portugueſe deprived them of important places or powerful vaſſals, while frequent revolutions, which dyed the throne with blood, deſtroyed its powers and ſhook it to the very foundation.

END OF THE FIRST VOLUME.

BRITISH MUSEUM 7 DE 85